



GENEALOGY  
973.74  
M38HIS  
PT.1

M. C.

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



Allen County Public Library



3 1833 01757 0851

GENEA  
973.74  
M38HI  
FT.1





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012

<http://archive.org/details/historyoffifthm00bost>





# HISTORY

OF THE

## FIFTH MASSACHUSETTS BATTERY.

V. I

ORGANIZED OCTOBER 3, 1861,

MUSTERED OUT JUNE 12, 1865.



BOSTON:  
LUTHER E. COWLES, PUBLISHER,  
60 FEDERAL STREET.  
1902.











1755-113

F  
349  
413

Massachusetts artillery, *5th battery*, 1861-1865.

History of the Fifth Massachusetts battery. Organized October 3, 1861, mustered out June 12, 1865. Boston, L. E. Cowles, 1902.

xiv, 991 p. col. front., plates, ports., maps. 25<sup>cm</sup>.

SHELF CARD

166229 1. U. S.—Hist.—Civil war—Regimental histories—Mass. art.—5th battery.

Library of Congress

E513.7.5th Copyright

3-17523



## PREFACE.

---

In submitting these pages to the general public, made doubly and more profoundly critical by new opportunities for observation, furnished by the recent war with Spain, we are aware that our most appreciative readers will be found among the daily diminishing ranks of our comrades and their circle of friends whose memories reach back to the period of which it treats, — forty years ago.

It is not without some feeling of complacence that we have reviewed these records of the endurance of hardships, which, in the inexperience of early youth, we accepted as the inevitable, and carelessly turned into jest as the easiest and quickest way of getting over the misfortunes of war, and we have closely followed the trials to which were submitted those innate impulses of courage inspired by patriotism, that found us all ready to mount at the call of "Boots and Saddles," and, harnessing our impatience to the wheels of the grumbling cannon and caissons, to seek the field wherever, whenever and howsoever we were directed.

To our aid in this work we have called the sister of a soldier of the 18th Massachusetts Regiment Infantry, who has brought to her task that which is considered indispensable in the historian of a distant period, "the familiarized knowledge of many years." Her impressions do not all come at second hand. They are the product of memories transplanted from a living past, to assist in the selection of scenes in camp, on the march,



and in the field, and to present them in a form of ready reference for the use of its members and their descendants for all time, to bear witness to the labors, sacrifices and achievements of the 5th Massachusetts Battery, Light Artillery.

NATHAN APPLETON,  
HENRY D. SCOTT,  
JOHN F. MURRAY,  
THOMAS E. CHASE,  
GEORGE L. NEWTON,  
*Committee.*

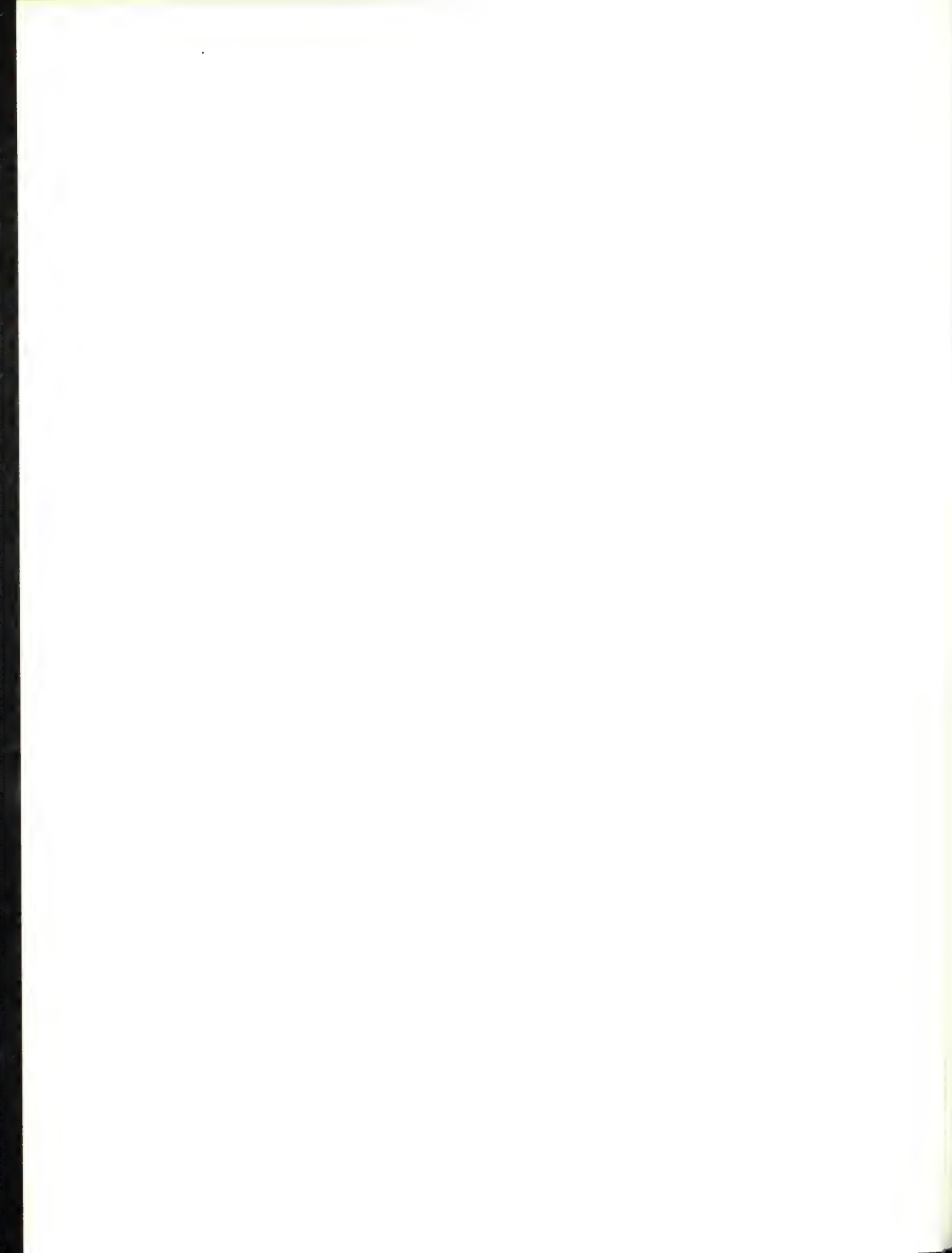
The committee desire to acknowledge the receipt of historical data, loan of books, letters, diaries and other means of information necessary to the compilation, from the following persons :—

*Massachusetts:* Miss Katharine Phillips, Miss Jane Phillips, Mrs. Stephen H. Phillips, Brevet Brigadier-General Augustus P. Martin, Stephen F. Keyes, Judge Advocate, Department of Massachusetts, G. A. R., George H. Freeman, Quartermaster R. A. Peirce, Post G. A. R., Charles F. Shaw, R. C. Ingraham, Charles W. Coggeshall (Coggeshall, Maxfield & Co.), B. F. Brightman (Alaska Oil Co.), Isaac S. Mullen, Ward Room Steward U. S. ships *Portsmouth* and *Chocura*, Milo J. Proctor, 6th Massachusetts Infantry, Charles O. Eaton, Custodian of State Flags, Rev. George Batchelor, Wm. G. Kirschbaum, *New Bedford Standard*.

*Maine:* Brevet Major-General Joshua L. Chamberlain, Brevet Major Henry S. Burrage, Major Holman S. Melcher, 20th Maine Regiment Association, Captain Harvey H. Webber.

*New York:* Brevet Colonel Horatio C. King, Hugh Hastings, State Historian, Frank H. Norton, Edmund





B. Taber, New York *Herald*, R. G. Butler, New York *San*.

*North Dakota*: Colonel C. A. Lounsberry, 20th Michigan Infantry.

*Pennsylvania*: Colonel John P. Nicholson, Gettysburg National Park Commission.

*Rhode Island*: Major Geo. E. Randolph (Denver, Col.), William Ames Card (New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad), Captain Wm. B. Weeden, 4th (Weeden's) Rhode Island Battery, First Lieutenant Gideon Spencer, 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery, Captain Wm. B. Rhodes, Battery E, 1st Rhode Island, John Galvin and J. B. Peck, Battery C, 1st Rhode Island, Frederic M. Sackett, Adjutant General State of Rhode Island.

*Virginia*: Colonel Wm. Thompson, Governor National Soldiers' Home, W. W. Scott, Librarian State Library, Richmond.

*Washington, D. C.*: Captain Charles E. Troutman, Colonel Lee Crandall, William Crozier, Brigadier-General, Chief of Ordnance, U. S. A.

NOTE. — Parentheses are used to explain the text and for cross-references. Parenthetical remarks by the writers quoted are between dashes.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER FIRST.

December 29, 1861—December 22, 1865.

The Battery Flags, 3; The Color Bearers, 4; The Flags Unfurled, 5; The Flags Replaced, 6; The Worn Colors, 11; Corps and Brigade Flags and Badges, 18.

## CHAPTER SECOND.

December 3, 1860—August 23, 1861.

In 'Sixty-One, 23; The Safety of Washington, 24; The Massachusetts Legislature, 24; Massachusetts in the National Congress, 24; The Report of a Committee, 25; General Order No. 4, 26; Interview with U. S. Attorney General Stanton, 30; The Roads to Washington, 36.

## CHAPTER THIRD.

April 2, 1863—June 1, 1865.

The Composition of the Battery, 49; Light Artillery in the Field, 52; Artillery Tactics, 63.

## CHAPTER FOURTH.

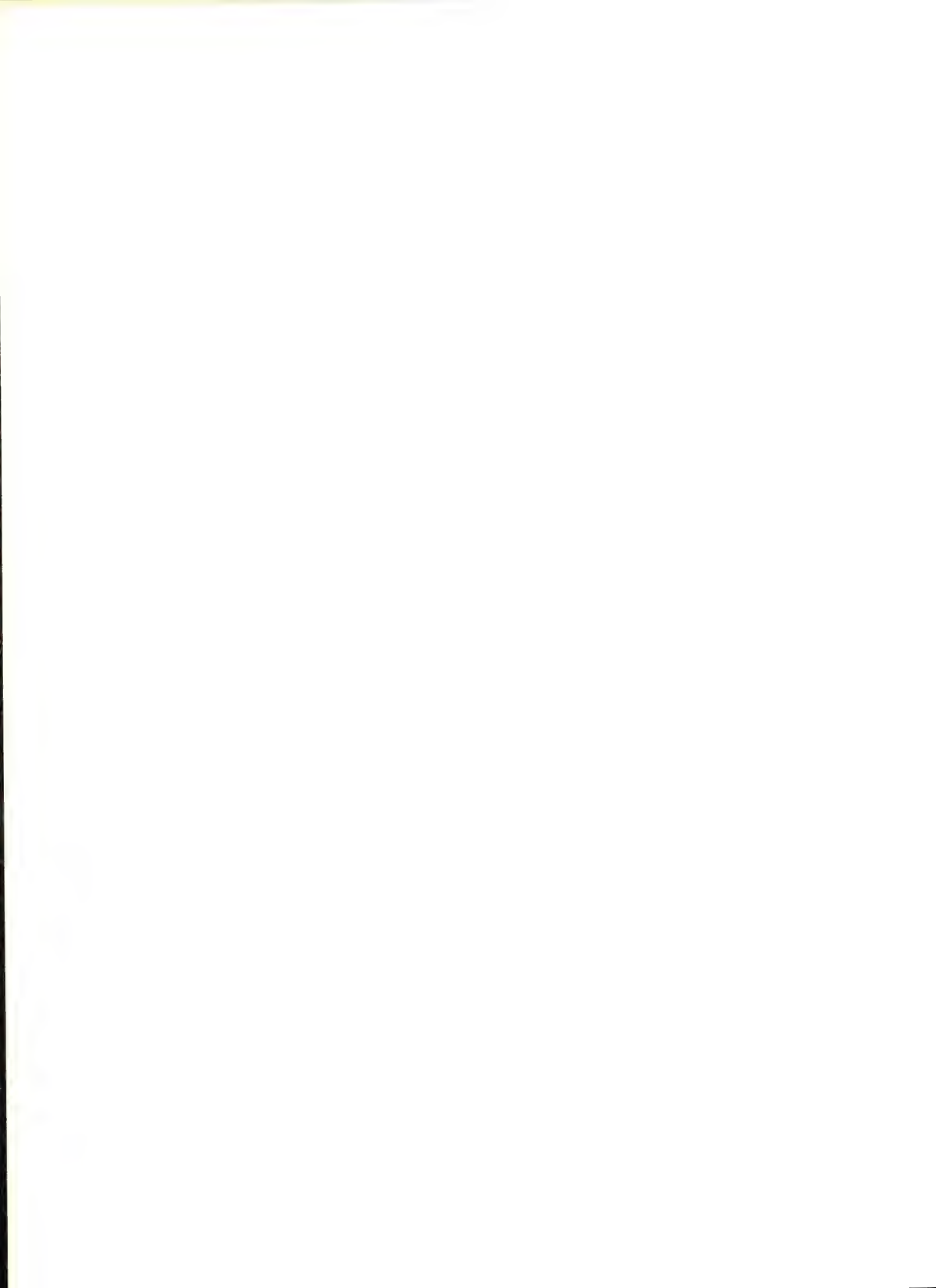
August 20, 1861—December 20, 1861.

Recruiting the Battery, 66; The Defences of Washington, 67; McClellan and the Artillery, 68; City of New Bedford, 69; Boston and Vicinity, 70; Recruiting Office in New Bedford, 71; Recruiting Office in Boston, 72; Enlistment Rolls of Lieut. John B. Hyde, 78; Original Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, 82; Enlistment Rolls of Lieut. George D. Allen, 87; Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, 83; Camp Massasoit, Readville, 90; Departure for the Seat of War, 93.

## CHAPTER FIFTH.

December 25, 1861—March 9, 1862.

Washington, D. C., and Hall's Hill, Va., 95; Camp at Washington, D. C., 98; Camp at Hall's Hill, 131; The Target Shooting, 139.





## CHAPTER SIXTH.

March 10, 1862—April 4, 1862.

The Advance upon Richmond, 156; The President's War Order, 158; McClellan's Address to the Army, 162; The Peninsula, 163; Centreville and Manassas, 165; The Embarkation, 169; The Situation, 192; Banks' Fifth Corps, 195; Howard's Mills, 195; The First Gun Fired, 195.

## CHAPTER SEVENTH.

April 6, 1862—May 8, 1862.

Yorktown, 205; "In Battery," 205; In the Earthworks, 210; The Masked Battery, 213; Guarding the Bridge over Wormley's Creek by Sections, 217; The Trenches, 231; The Camp, 233; Batteries of Siege Guns, 240; The Charge on the Right Fort, 244.

## CHAPTER EIGHTH.

May 9, 1862—May 31, 1862.

The Battle of Hanover Court House, 252; Up York River, 253; West Point to Cumberland Creek, 257; White House Landing, 263; Fifth Provisional Army Corps, 264; In Hanover County, 271.

## CHAPTER NINTH.

May 31, 1862—June 27, 1862.

The Valley of the Chickahominy, 287; Battle of Mechanicsville, 288; The Battery at the Bridge, 289; Leaves of Absence, 295; Review of the Fifth Corps, 296; On Picket at New Bridge, 299; In the Earthworks, 299; The First Death in Camp, 300; On Gaines Hill, 302; The Bridges across the Chickahominy River, 304; Battery No. 4, 310.

## CHAPTER TENTH.

June 26, 1862—June 28, 1862.

The Battle of Gaines Mills, 314; The Situation, 315; In Battery, 319; The March, 319; Casualties, 320; The Retreat of the Forces, 336.

## CHAPTER ELEVENTH.

June 29, 1862—July 1, 1862.

The Battle of Malvern Hill, 361; The March, 361; The Navy Assists, 362; The Gunboats, 363; McClellan and the Artillery, 367; Casualties, 370.

## CHAPTER TWELFTH.

July 2, 1862—August 14, 1862.

The Battery divided, 381; Harrison's Landing, 382; The Inspection, 383; Review by Gen. H. W. Halleck, 383; Special Order No. 200 Dividing the Battery, 387; Officers Resigned, 388; Officers Promoted, 390; The Sick and Wounded, 392; An Artillery Demonstration, 398.



## CHAPTER THIRTEENTH.

August 14, 1862—September 3, 1862.

From Harrison's Landing to Acquia Creek, 413; The Battle of Second Manassas, 413; The Relief of Major General John Pope, 414; The March to Williamsburg, 414; The Sick and Wounded, 415; Acquia Creek, 415; The Fourth R. I. Contingent, 423; Casualties, 423; The Peril of the National Capital, 428.

## CHAPTER FOURTEENTH.

September 3, 1862—October 9, 1862.

The Battery Reunited and Reinstated, 432; The Battery Concentrated, 439; Battle of Antietam, 445; Reported to Gen. Whipple, 445; Re-recruiting the Battery, 447; Emancipation, 448; Full Equipment, 452; Reported to General Morell, 458.

## CHAPTER FIFTEENTH.

October 11, 1862—January 25, 1863.

The Battle of Fredericksburg, 459; Men of Massachusetts and Michigan, 464; Crossing the River, 465; Joined the Division at Harper's Ferry, 477; Snicker's Gap, 479; Camp near Warrenton, Va., 483; Near Falmouth, Va., 489; Hooker in Command of the Fifth Corps, 495; In Battery, 496; Casualties, 497.

## CHAPTER SIXTEENTH.

January 26, 1863—June 13, 1863.

The Battle of Chancellorsville, 544; A Cavalry Review, 563; Grand Review, 569; Invalid Corps, 576; In Line of Battle, 582; Recrossed the River, 583; Report of Captain Phillips, 586; Reduced to Four Guns, 595; Drew another Section, 598.

## CHAPTER SEVENTEENTH.

June 13, 1863—August 8, 1863.

The Battle of Gettysburg, 602; Rebels said to be in Maryland, 603; Veteran Volunteers, 617; Duty and the Death Penalty, 621; Positions of the Battery, 626, 651; "Fix Prolong to Fire Retiring," 630; Tenth New York Battery, 664; Fifth Massachusetts Battery Monument, 673; High Water Mark, 678; Progress South of the Armies, 682.

## CHAPTER EIGHTEENTH.

August 9, 1863—November 23, 1863.

The Battle of Rappahannock Station, 695; Massachusetts State Agency, 697; White Sulphur Springs, 703; Target Practice, 706; The Invalid



Corps, 709; The Fight at Bristoe, 716; Manœuvring for Position, 721; Music in the Army, 728; Attack on the Earthworks, 732; Under Fire, 733.

## CHAPTER NINETEENTH.

November 23, 1863—February 29, 1864.

The Battle of Mine Run, 740; Brigade Drill, 744; The Crossing of the Rapidan, 745; In Line of Battle, 746; Longfellow's Son Shot, 747; A Fatal Mistake, 749; Reënlistments, 761; Music for the Army, 762; Money Paid by Drafted Persons, 767.

## CHAPTER TWENTIETH.

March 1, 1864—May 7, 1864.

The Battle of the Wilderness, 776; Grant takes Command, 777; The Invalid Corps, 784; Lieut. Scott Resigns, 785; "Wanted,—Recruits." Poster, 787; Ball at General J. J. Bartlett's Headquarters, 789; Veteran Reserve Corps, 790; Reduction of Army Corps, 792; The Countersign, 797; The Demi-Brigade, 798; The Demi-Brigade Dissolved, 803; The Fight of May 5, 805; The Fight of May 6, 807; The Fight of May 7, 809.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-FIRST.

May 8, 1864—May 18, 1864.

The Battle of Spottsylvania Court House and Laurel Hill, 811; Captain A. P. Martin Wounded, 816; The Fight of May 8, 816; The Fight of May 9, 818; Casualties, 818; The Fight of May 10, 819; The Fight of May 11, 820; The Fight of May 12, 822; Casualties, 823; Turned in a Section, 825; The Fight of May 18, 826.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SECOND.

May 19, 1864—May 25, 1864.

The Battle of the North Anna River and Virginia Central Railroad, 827; The Fight of May 19, 831; Rounds Fired by the Battery in Eighteen Days, 833; The Fight of May 23, 834; The Crossing at Jericho Ford, 834; The Fifth Battery Men as Barn Movers, 835; The Fight of May 25, 839; Casualties, 839; Lieutenant Appleton's Promotion and Resignation, 847.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-THIRD.

May 26, 1864—June 14, 1864.

The Battle of Bethesda Church, 851; Officers Promoted, 857; Casualties, June 2, 858; Bethesda Church, 858; The Charge of the Battery, 863; The Company Fund, 864.





## CHAPTER TWENTY-FOURTH.

June 15, 1864—August 18, 1864.

The Battle of Petersburg, 869; The Assault of June 18, 877; Casualties, 877; The Fortifications, 879; The Norfolk Railroad Cut, 881; The Sanitary Commission, 886; The Army Ration, 887; A Work Built for the Battery, 889; The Rebel Raid into Maryland, 890; Bombardment of July 30, 893; Casualties, 894.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-FIFTH.

August 18, 1864—September 1, 1864.

The Battle of the Weldon Railroad, 899; Expiration of Term of Service, 901; The Possession of the Weldon Railroad, 901; Casualties, 905; The Third Massachusetts Battery, 906; Officers Promoted, 907; Members of the Third Massachusetts Battery Transferred, 908.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SIXTH.

September 2, 1864—November 19, 1864.

The Battle of Hatcher's Run, 910; Disposal of Transferred Non-Commissioned Officers, 915; Commission Officers Promoted, 917; Non-Commissioned Officers Promoted, 918; The Battery in Fort Davidson, 919; Mustered Out at Expiration of Term of Service, 923; New Section (Centre) Added, 924; The Fight at Hatcher's Run, 924; The Defences of Washington, 927.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVENTH.

November 4, 1864—April 6, 1865.

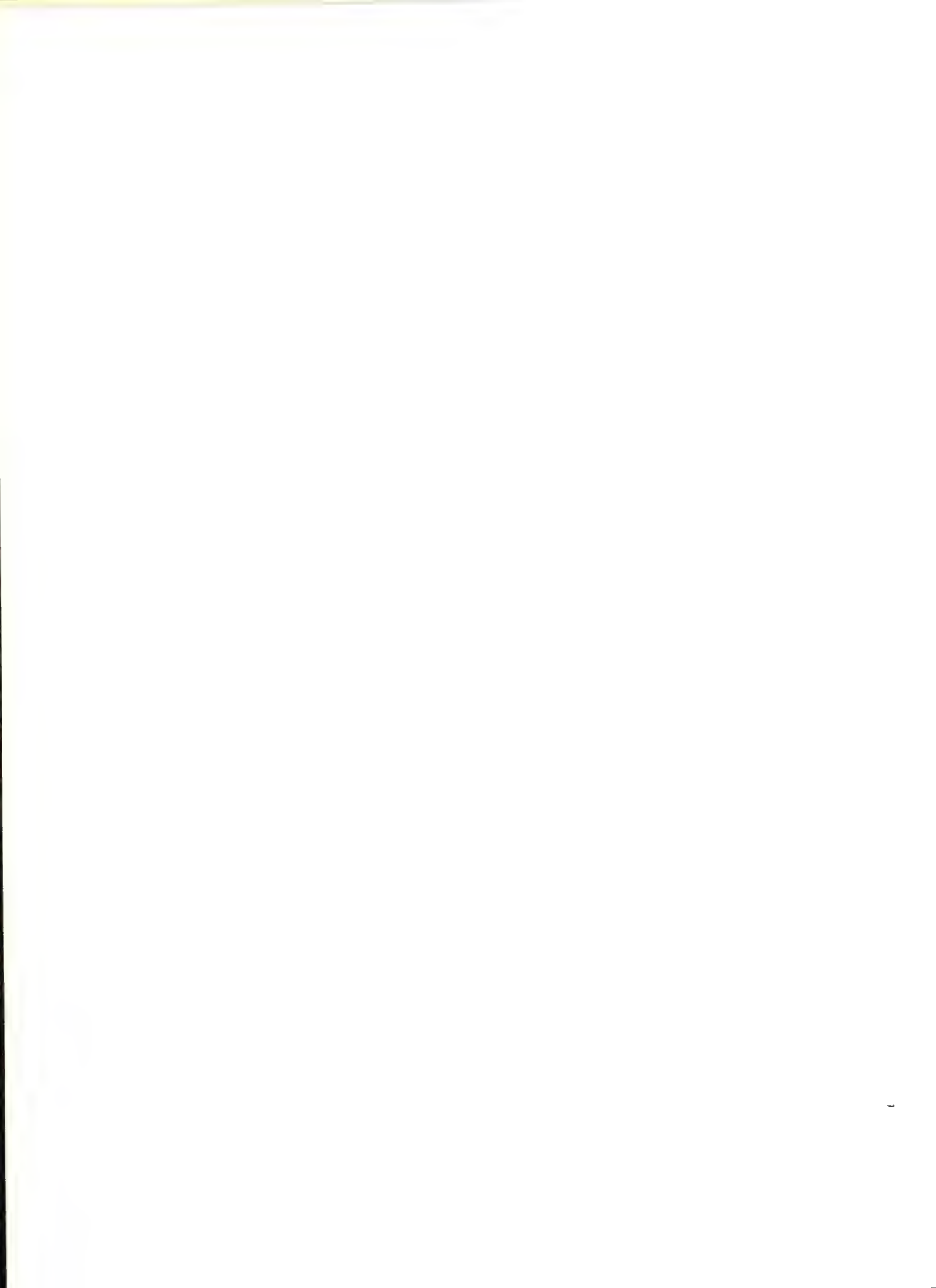
The Assault on Petersburg, 930; Examination of Recruits at the Hospital, 935; The Weldon Railroad, 936; In the Advance Going Out: In the Rear Coming Back, 938; Four Guns in Fort Hays, 938; Two Guns in Battery 22, 938; Retired from the Forts, 939; Returned to the Forts, 940; Hatcher's Run, 941; Back to the Old Camp, 941; Turned in a Section, 942; The Final Attack, 943; The Last Shot, 943; Casualties, 947.

## CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHTH.

April 3, 1865—June 24, 1865.

Guns removed from Fort Hays, 953; The Artillery Reserve, 954; The Artillery Brigade, 955; The Last Camp in Virginia, 956; The Last March, 957; Mustered Out of the United States Service, 958.

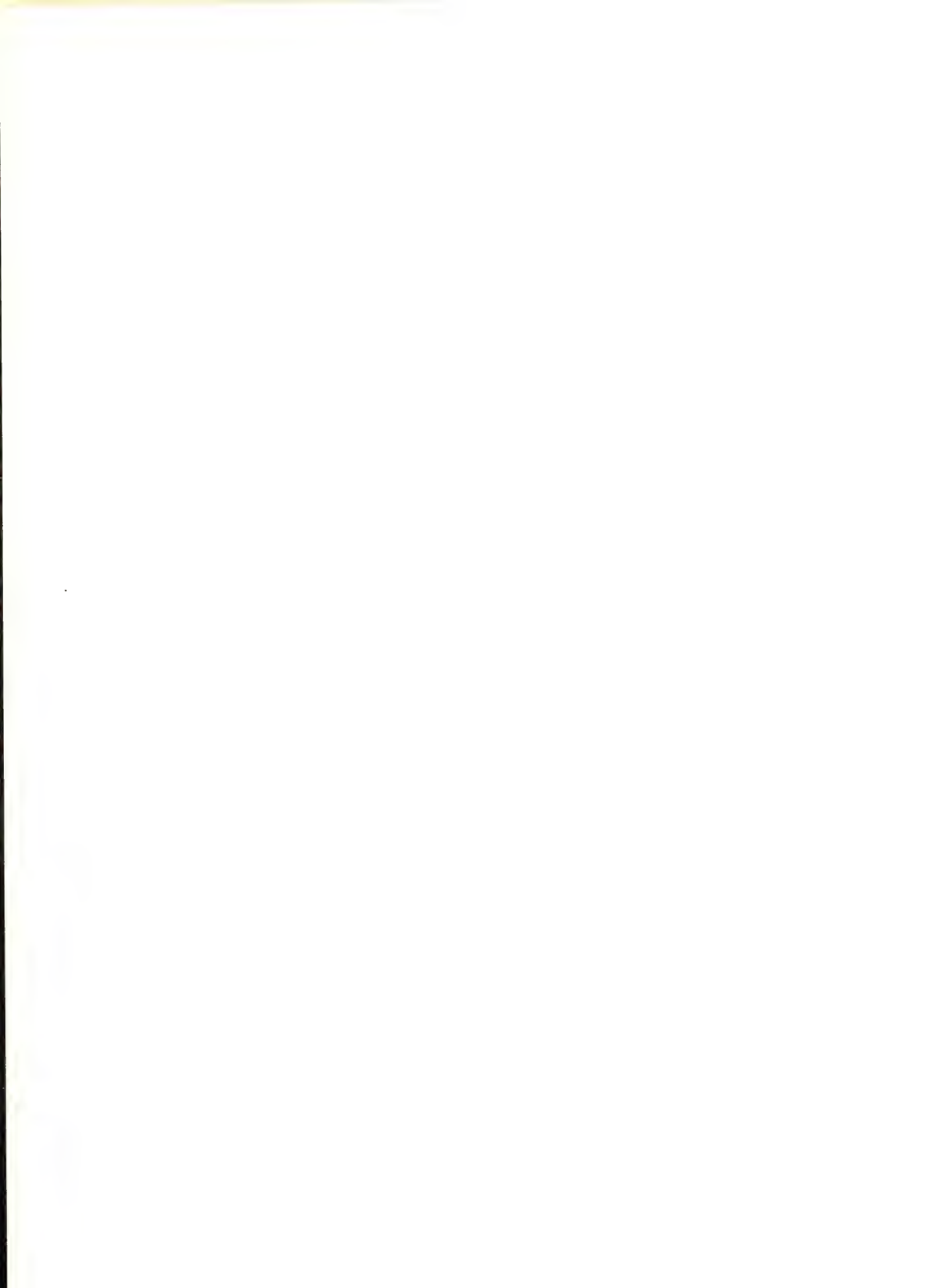
Proceedings of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery Association, 969.



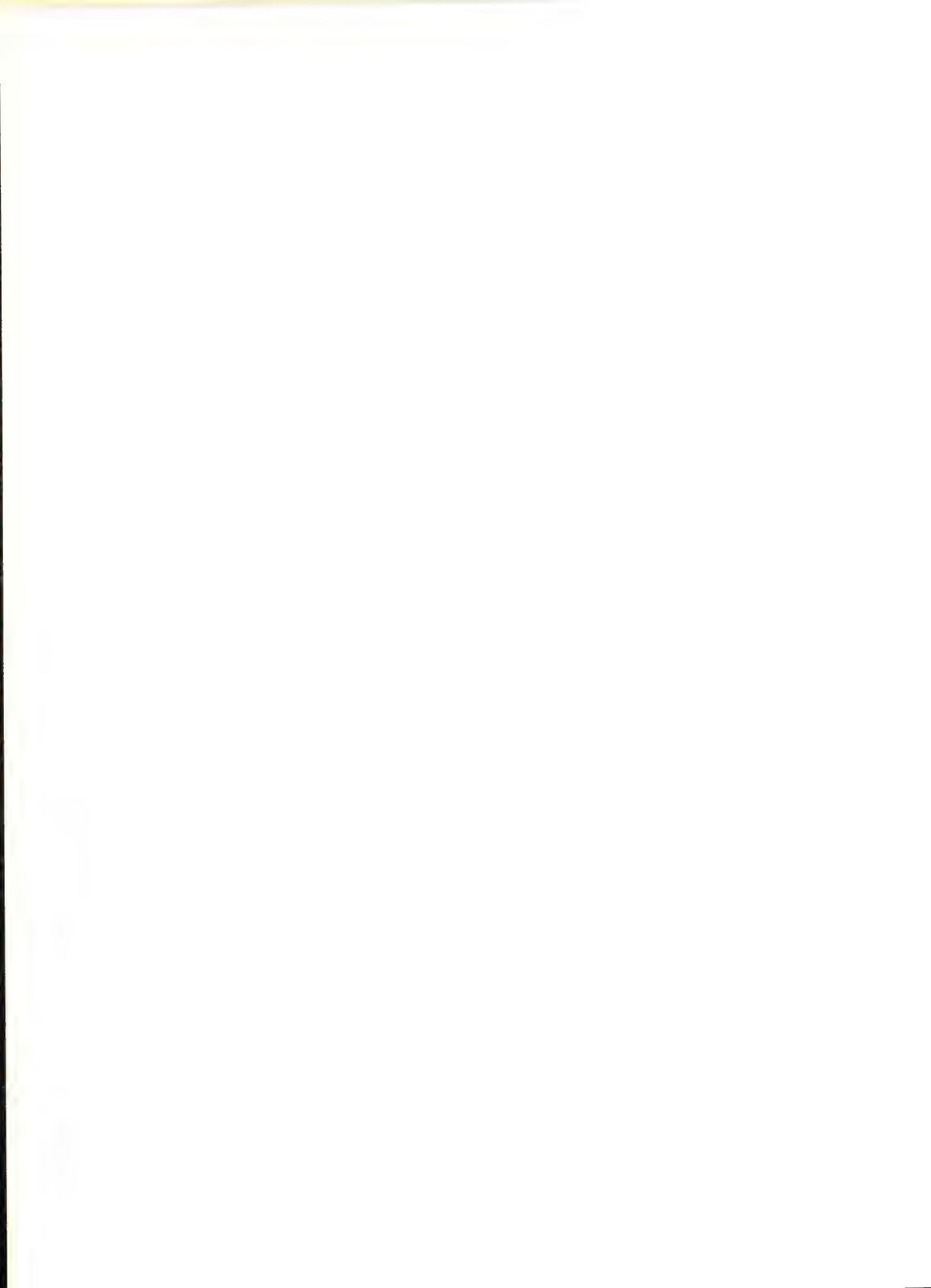
## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

	PAGE
THE BATTERY FLAGS . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
THE COMMISSIONED OFFICERS . . . . .	66
EQUIPMENTS . . . . .	75
LIEUT. HYDE AND "BLACK CHARLEY" . . . . .	92
PLAN OF OPERATIONS: YORKTOWN . . . . .	204
BUGLE CALL—"IN BATTERY" . . . . .	205
BUGLE CALL—"TO THE COLOR" . . . . .	209
SIGNAL FLAG : . . . . .	219
REDOUBT . . . . .	225
LUNETTE . . . . .	226
CAMP CHAIR . . . . .	228
HOUSE NEAR WORMLEY'S CREEK . . . . .	234
REBEL REDOUBT . . . . .	247
VALLEY OF THE CHICKAHOMINY: PLAN . . . . .	286
BATTLE OF GAINES MILLS: PLAN . . . . .	314
BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL: PLAN . . . . .	360
SECOND POSITION AT MALVERN HILL . . . . .	372
CANNONEER'S SWORD . . . . .	386
ARMY DESK . . . . .	441
BATTLE OF FREDERICKSBURG: PLAN . . . . .	459
BATTLE OF CHANCELLORSVILLE: PLAN . . . . .	544
BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, JULY 2, 1863: PLAN . . . . .	602



	PAGE
PORTRAIT OF CAPTAIN AUGUSTUS P. MARTIN . . . . .	613
BRINGING OFF THE GUN . . . . .	636
BATTLE OF GETTYSBURG, JULY 3, 1863; PLAN . . . . .	648
CAPTAIN PHILLIPS AND HIS HORSE . . . . .	662
FIFTH MASS. BATTERY MONUMENT . . . . .	676
HIGH WATER MARK: TABLET . . . . .	678
LIEUT. APPLETON AND HIS HORSE "FOLKO" . . . . .	707
RAILROAD BRIDGE OVER THE RAPPAHANNOCK RIVER . . . . .	733
CAMP OF THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., DEC. 1863,—APRIL, 1864 . . . . .	740
"ACTION FRONT." DRILL AT WINTER QUARTERS CAMP, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., MAR. 1864 . . . . .	793
ONE PIECE OF THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY, RAPPAHANNOCK STATION, VA., APRIL, 1864. LIEUT. SIMONDS STANDING IN THE REAR . . . . .	797
BATTLE OF PETERSBURG: PLAN . . . . .	869
REUNION AT NEW BEDFORD, MASS., AUG. 9, 1892 . . . . .	967





## CHAPTER I.

### THE BATTERY FLAGS.

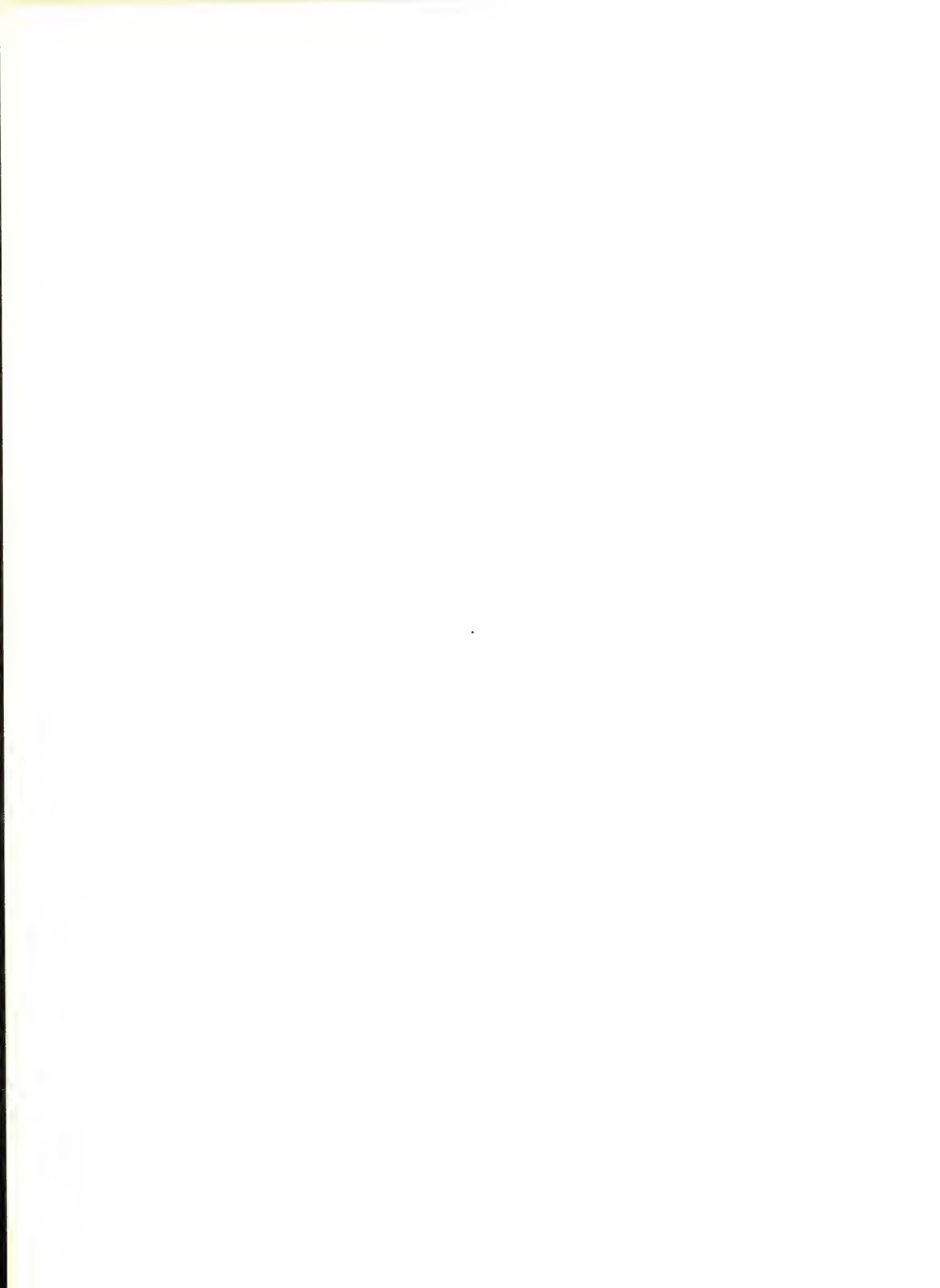
"An' didn't we flock to the colors when the drums began to beat,  
An' didn't we march with proud step along this village street?  
An' didn't the people cheer us when we got aboard the cars,  
With the flag a-wavin' o'er us, and went away to the wars?"

—CAPTAIN JACK CRAWFORD.

There never was a time when the American Flag stood for so much in the estimation of the people of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, as in the spring and summer of 1861: there was never a time when the emblem of the indivisibility of the Union stood so much in need of appreciation and respect.

Emotions of alarm and anxiety for the security of the individual and all he held most dear, mingled with and intensified the enthusiasm which called together great convocations of all classes and both sexes, to witness the simple raising of the flag which represented all that the constitution of the United States was intended to guarantee. In the capital of the state vast assemblages breathlessly watched the unfolding of flags of immense size, made of the costliest material, across the principal streets, in the most conspicuous places, to the music of the national airs.

Flags were flung out from the steeples of churches. The clergy were among the most patriotic of those who addressed the multitude, the exercises opening with prayer. Far as the eye could see, above the crowd in the street, in the windows and on the roofs of houses, the people waited for the orator's closing words: "Our Country, the United States of America," which were the signal for the running



out of the flag, and for long continued and hearty cheering, while the bands played "The Star Spangled Banner" and "Hail Columbia."

Members of Congress anxious to show their colors, and returned travellers from the turbulent South, made soul stirring speeches and roused their youthful hearers to a wild fervor which from the first was unrestrainable, and sooner or later carried them "away to the wars." Ardent, unflinching, undying devotion to the beautiful ensign was inculcated by the speakers and punctuated by the fife, drum and bugle.

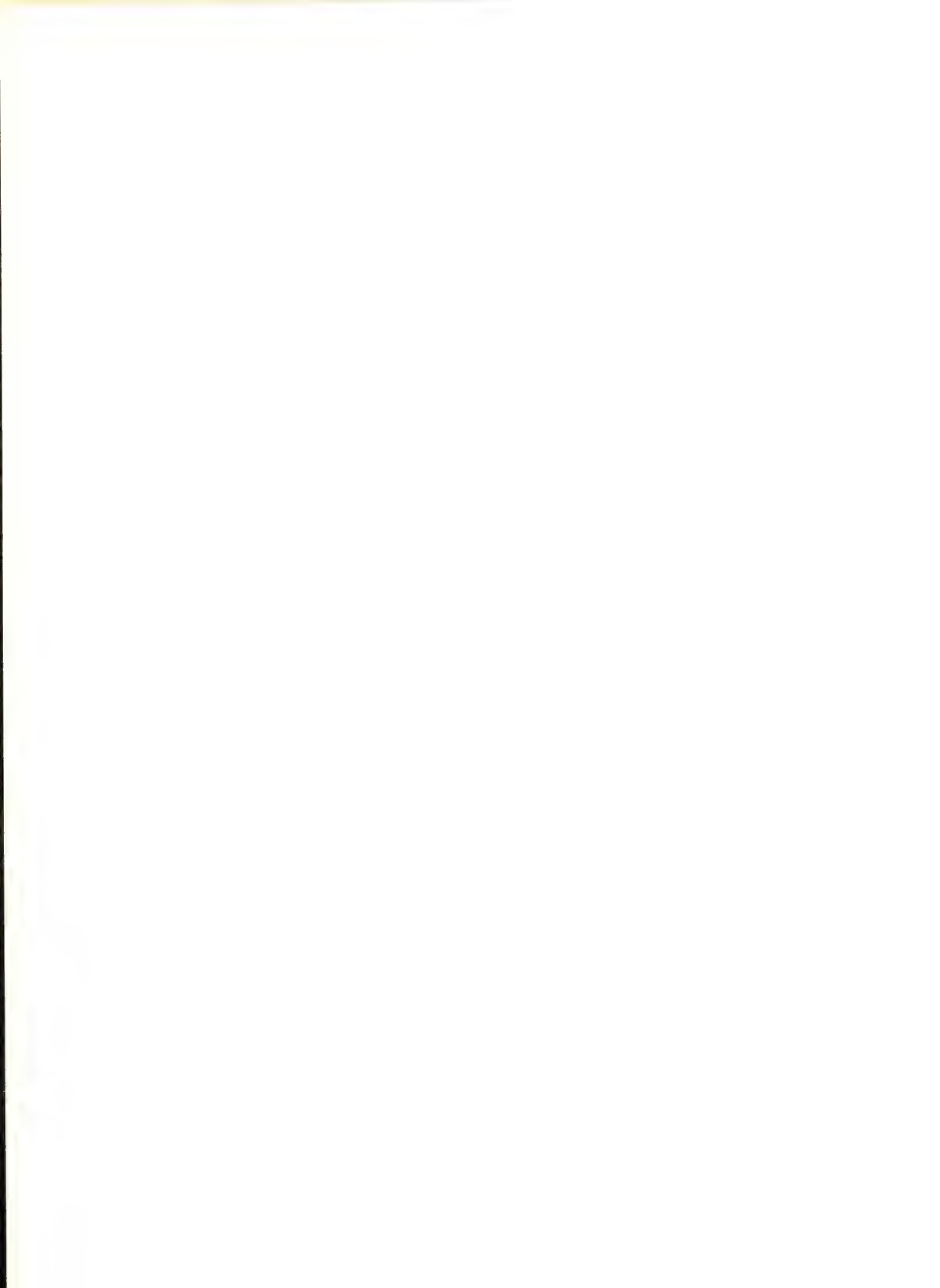
In the hush of the church vestries mission circles were formed by women, ten thousand of them in this state, who, fearing they knew not what, saw their stitches set through tears, by hurrying, tremulous hands, while the men cheered at the "flag raisings." They organized little bands called "Soldiers' Aid Societies."

Sweethearts and wives, and sisters, made red, white and blue neckties, which the young soldiers wore in the state camps or on brief furloughs home.

Young ladies in private schools took up subscriptions and purchased handsome standards which they presented to the volunteer companies. Young gentlemen in theirs presented flags and equipments to graduates. Note paper and envelopes ornamented with flags were the correct thing in correspondence.

A large and elegantly wrought shawl was presented to the wife of Governor Andrew by R. H. Stearns & Co., popular dry goods merchants, designed and executed, by a lady in Newton. It was of the finest worsted in red, white and blue colors, with thirty-four stars and the Union shield of the same material so arranged as to give to the whole a symmetrical appearance and an exceedingly fine effect.

And underlying all this ebullition of feeling absorbed by one object; in the participation of which political lines were effaced and a "war democrat" was as good a fighting man



as a republican, there was absolute, uncompromising fealty to the government, and a grim determination to stand by the flag at whatever cost to themselves or to others.

Major C. A. Woodruff, U. S. A., in a speech at one of the reunions of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, has given the best expression to this sentiment:

"No patriotic citizen of this Government can admit that there was any equality of flags: for true Americans there was but one national flag, and that the one the Union soldiers bore to complete victory: nor that there was any co-honor of causes: for true Americans there was but one just cause, and that the preservation of the Federal Union."

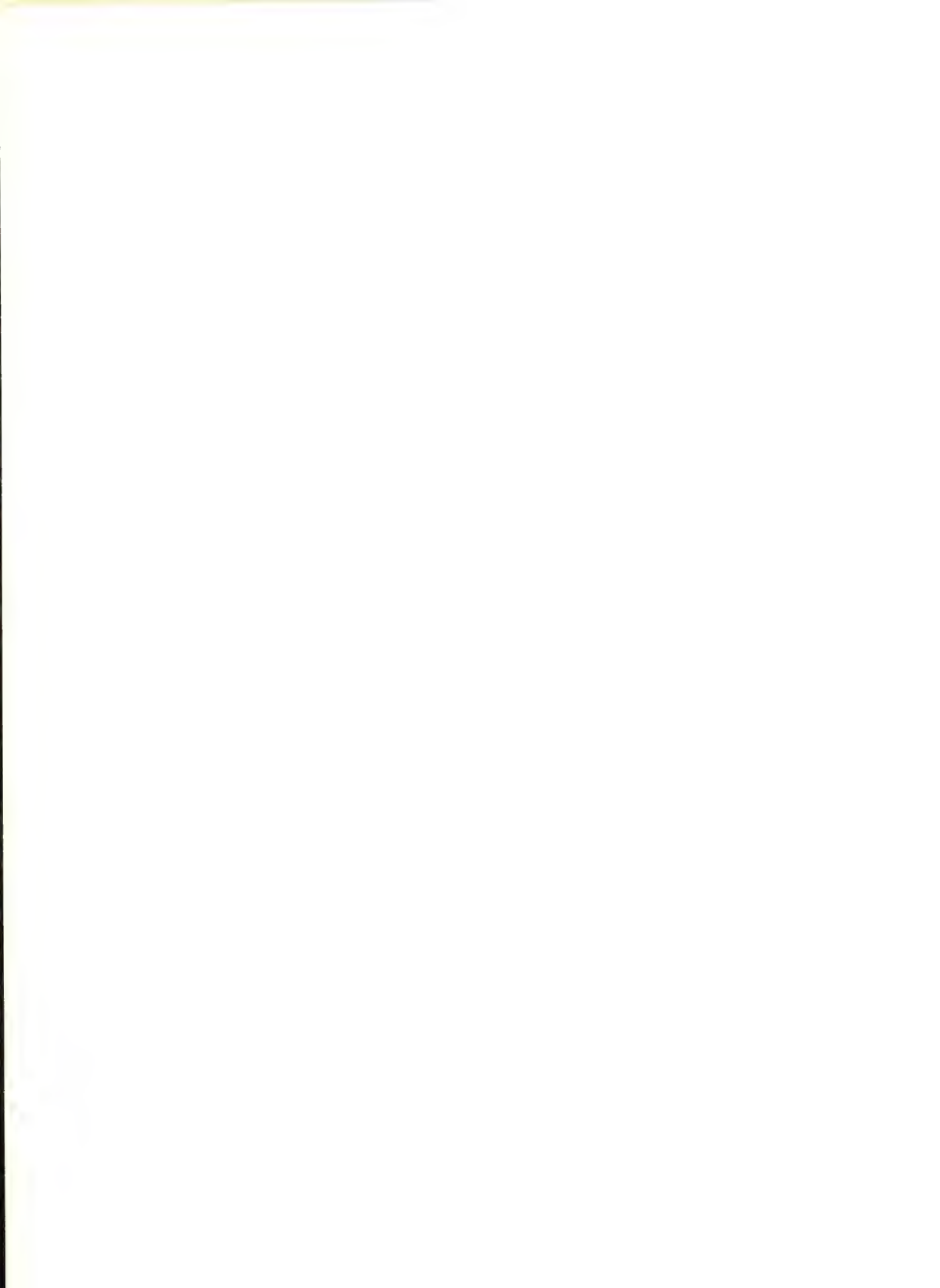
To prove this fealty by action there was an ever increasing necessity in the danger which threatened Washington, and called forth from Wendell Phillips the following enunciation:

"The war, then, is not aggressive, but in self-defence, and Washington has become the Thermopylæ of liberty and justice. Rather than surrender that Capital, cover every square foot of it with a living body; crowd it with millions of men and empty every bank vault at the North to pay the cost. Teach the world, once for all, that North America belongs to the stars and stripes, and under them no man shall wear a chain. . . . Cannon think in the 19th century; and you must put the North in the right before you can justify her in the face of the world: before you can pour Massachusetts like an avalanche through the streets of Baltimore, and carry Lexington on the 19th of April, south of Mason and Dixon's line."

### THE FLAGS OF THE BATTERY.

NOTES OF FRANCIS P. WASHBURN, MAY 5, 1900.

"As regards the Battery flags: two were given us by the state when we were organized; one a full-sized silk battle flag, the stars and stripes, the other a white silk guidon with



cross cannon and number and name of the Battery. The first had the staff shot off at Gaines Mills, and after the battle, was spliced, and did service through the Seven Days fight. Both flags were so badly used up in the campaign that when the men were transferred to the Third Mass. and Fourth R. I. batteries at Harrison's Landing the flags were sent back to the state. The only flags we ever carried after this were the regular U. S. Artillery guidons.

The guidon was not used at the Seven Days' fight but was in the baggage wagon at that time, and a can of oil was spilled on it which spoiled it for use by the Battery, and I always supposed it was sent home with the other flag.

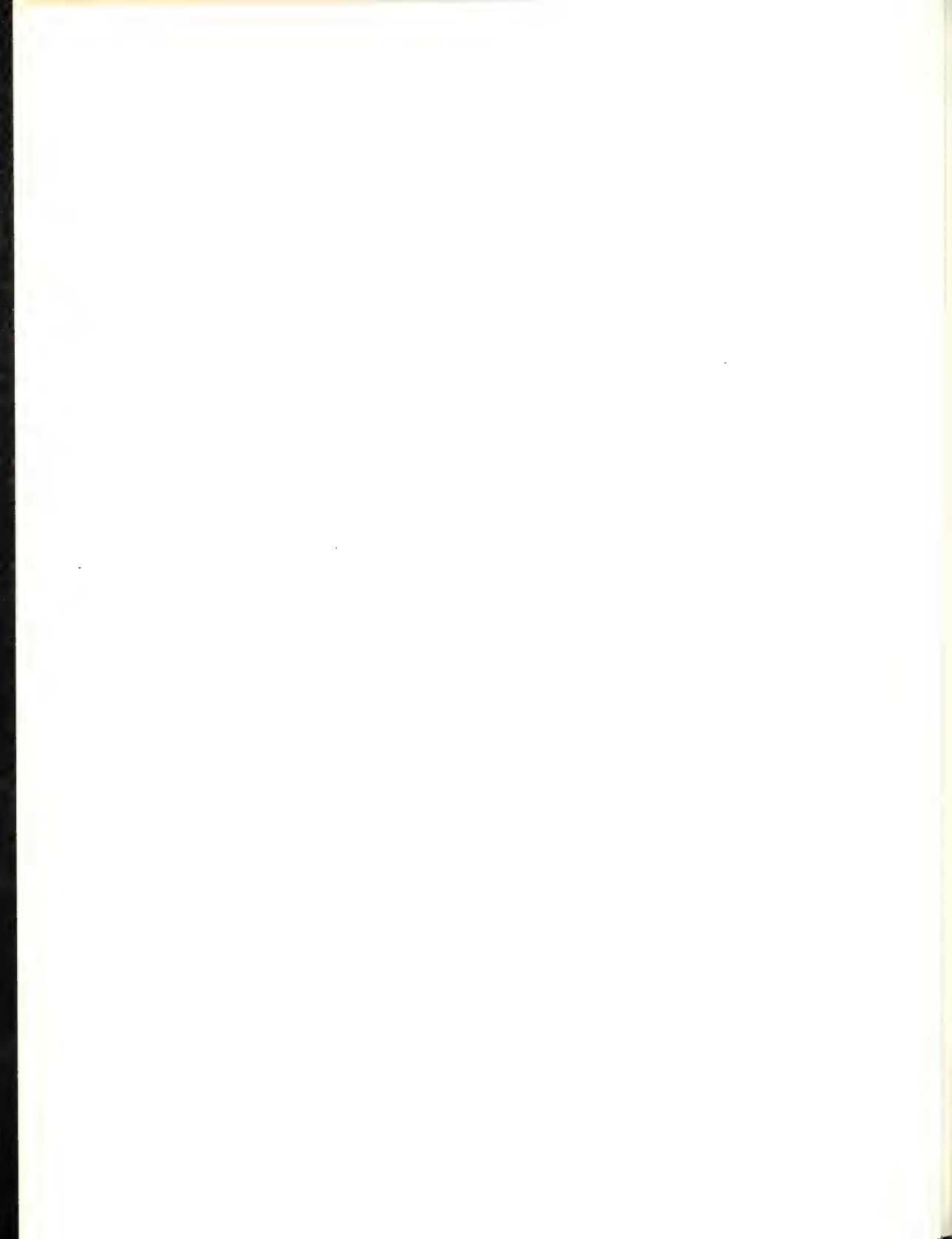
The flags were furnished by the state, and were a part of the equipment carried by a battery at that time. When we joined the Army we were not allowed a color bearer or a guide: one of the buglers took those places."

#### THE COLOR BEARERS.

The buglers were James Winters, John C. Tucker, and after Tucker's three years' term expired, Henry M. Gifford. Winters re-enlisted and served through the war. The first guidon was Mortier Gale. He carried a large flag at parade, a small flag or guidon was ordinarily used. On a march both flags were carried in the Battery wagon. He carried the U. S. flag until after the seven days' battles. He was afterwards hospital steward. The second Bugler took his place. The state guidon could not be used because of the white color. It was sent home from Harrison's Landing.

Then came Andrew Hosley, a detached man from an infantry regiment, who carried the colors, and after him A. K. P. Hayden.

In the memory of some members Chris. Allen of New Bedford at one time acted as color bearer, and George W. Poole as Guidon.





According to the report of Colonel Charles Amory, Master of Ordnance of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts for 1861, that department issued to the Fifth Mass. Battery 1 silk Guidon with staff and socket, 1 National flag, silk, with staff and socket, 4 camp colors with staves, and 2 bugles.

### THE FLAGS UNFURLED.

*Journal of D. Henry Groves.*

"Camp on Pennsylvania Avenue, Washington, about 8 or 10 minutes' walk from the Capitol, Sunday morning, Dec. 29, 1861: After breakfast put on my uniform and went on dress parade. As it is the first Sunday here, we took our Ensign and Right Guide from their covering and for the first time in our presence our colors were loosed to the breeze.

"They are handsome flags, one an American flag of silk, and the guidon of red and white with golden cannons, and the number of the Battery. After parade, before we were dismissed we had divine service. The officers sang a psalm, then Lieut. Allen acted as chaplain. He read the first chapter in the Bible, then sang, then a prayer, and finished the services by all the men singing 'Old Hundred.'"

At this time the state guidon, swallow tail in form, was half red and half white, but subsequently, while retaining its shape, the stars and stripes were added in accordance with the following general order:—

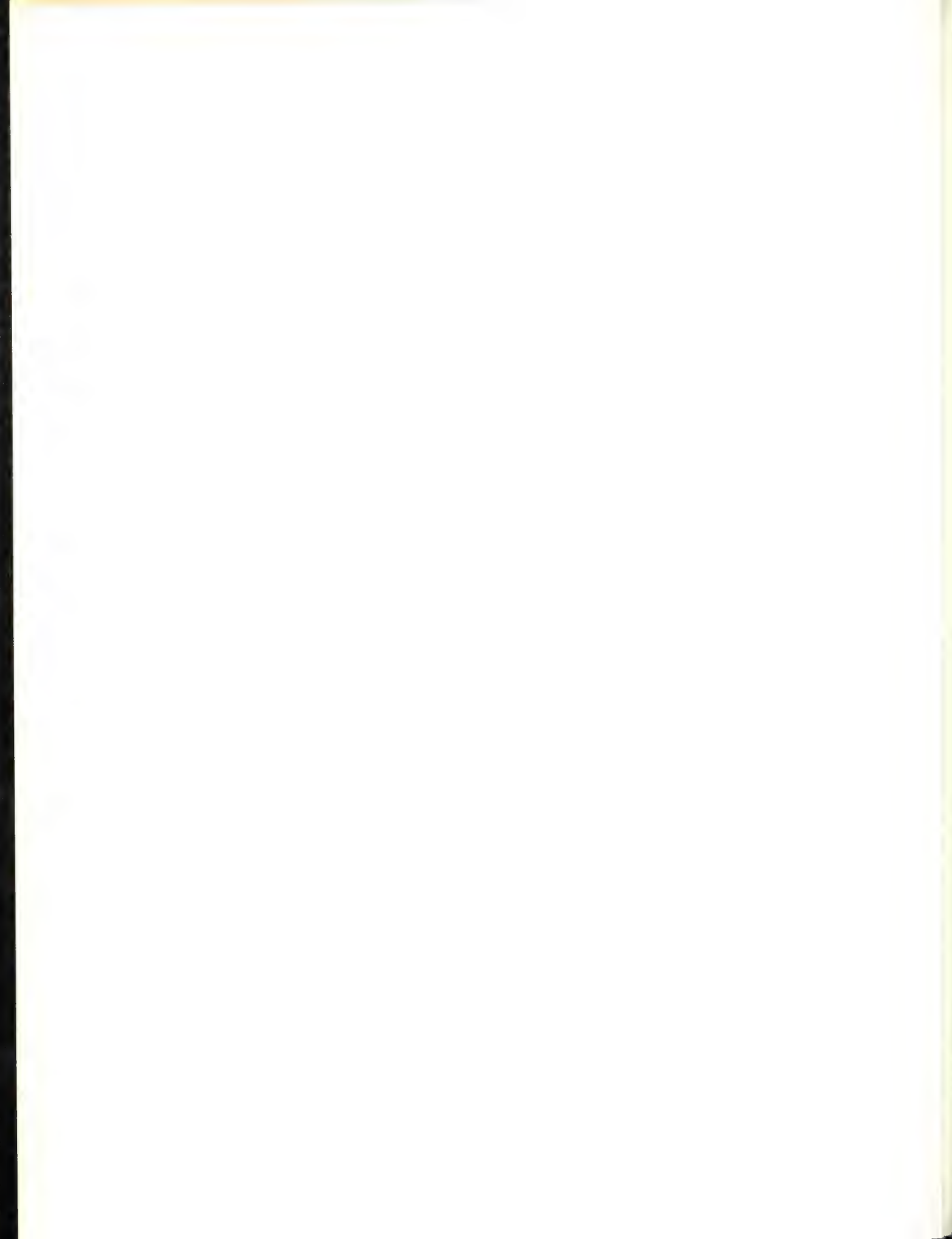
HEADQUARTERS OF THE ARMY,  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, January 18, 1862.

General Orders  
No. 4.

1. Under instructions from the Secretary of War, dated January 7, 1862, guidons and camp colors for the Army will be made like the United States flag, with stars and stripes. . . .

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS,  
*Adjutant General.*



## THE FLAGS REPLACED.

His Excellency Governor John A. Andrew in his inaugural address, January 9, 1863, recommended replacing the flags torn and worn in battle in the following words:

"Since the summer of 1862, several of our volunteer corps which reported that their colors had become unfit for use by being in battle and worn by the exposures of service, have been supplied by the Master of Ordnance with new flags upon the return to his charge of those which they had borne so honorably through two campaigns. I respectfully ask an appropriation to cover the expense thus incurred, and of the replacement when needed of the colors of all the Massachusetts troops. It is a proud satisfaction to know that never yet has the white standard of this commonwealth been surrendered to the enemy."

In 1863, Joel Hayden was Lieut. Governor, Oliver Warner, Secretary, Henry K. Oliver, Treasurer. Jonathan E. Field was president of the Senate and Alexander H. Bullock was Speaker of the House of Representatives.

The legislature of that year passed the following Resolve:

Resolved, That a sum not exceeding three thousand dollars is hereby appropriated for the purpose of replacing the flags of Massachusetts regiments worn out or lost in service, the same to be expended from time to time during the current year, by the Governor with the advice and consent of the Council.

Approved March 5, 1863.

A copy of this Resolve was sent to the Captain of the Battery with the following words added in red ink: "A 'special Requisition' for the above will be promptly answered."

It is noted by the historian of the Third Mass. Battery that on March 13, 1863, a new state color appeared in line. The Fifth Mass. Battery was then in camp near the Third in the vicinity of Falmouth, Va., but there is no record of a new color having been sent or received. In his Returns of Clothing, Camp and Garrison Equipage for Oct. 31, 1863, Captain Phillips made the following entry:



"Oct. 31, 1863, Received One Silk Guidon—new—." In November of the same year "On hand One Guidon."

According to the report of the Master of Ordnance of the State of Massachusetts for the year 1863, no worn colors from the Fifth Mass. Battery were in possession of the Department, January 1, 1864, nor received during that year ending December 31, 1863, neither is there any mention of the one issued to them during that year.

In the Acts and Resolves of the Massachusetts Legislature for 1864, Chapter 68, may be found the following Resolve to provide for the procuring of flags to replace those lost or worn out in the service, and for other purposes:

Resolved, That the unexpended balance of the appropriation of three thousand dollars authorized by Chapter 26 of the Resolves of 1863, together with an additional sum not exceeding one thousand dollars, shall be allowed and paid for the purpose of replacing the flags of Massachusetts regiments worn out in the service, and also for providing the necessary colors and guidons for Massachusetts regiments and batteries in the service of the United States; the same to be expended from time to time, during the current year by the Governor, with the advice and consent of the Council.

Approved May 10, 1864.

Section 77, Chapter 238, Acts and Resolves, 1864.

Each regiment shall be furnished by the State with the national and state colors, their staffs, belts and sockets, and each battery of light artillery and company of cavalry with its proper guidon, staff, belt, and socket, and the commander of such regiment, battery, or company, shall be responsible for their safe keeping.

From the Report of Brigadier-General and Acting Chief of Ordnance Richard A. Peirce to the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, dated January 2, 1865, for the year 1864:

"Schedule K: Worn colors received by the Chief of Ordnance during the year ending December 31, 1864.

5th Light Battery, 1 Guidon, silken.

Schedule L: Worn colors in charge of the Chief of Ordnance, December 31, 1864.

5th Light Battery, 1 Guidon, silken."



There is no mention of the one issued to them in 1864.

In a letter to a member of his family Captain Phillips wrote: "Before Petersburg, Nov. 16, 1864, I send you by Lieut. Tripp the Battery flag which I wish to preserve as a trophy. It is torn and spotted, but I wish to keep it just as it is."

In his Returns for the month of November, 1864, he has,—"Rec'd One Guidon in case—new—" and in December "On hand one Guidon."

### THE INSCRIPTIONS ON THE FLAGS.

HEAD QUARTERS OF THE ARMY.

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

WASHINGTON Feb. 22 1862.

General Orders

No. 19

The following Order has been received from the War Department:

It is ordered that there shall be inscribed upon the colors or guidons of all regiments and batteries in the service of the United States the names of the battles in which they have borne a meritorious part. These names will also be placed on the Army Register at the head of the list of the officers of each regiment.

It is expected that troops so distinguished will regard their colors as representing the honor of their corps—to be lost only with their lives; and that those not yet entitled to such a distinction will not rest satisfied until they have won it by their discipline and courage.

The General commanding the Army will, under the instructions of this Department, take the necessary steps to carry out the order.

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS

Official:

*Adjutant General.*

Nothing was done in relation to this order until the autumn of 1864, when there appeared the following circular forwarded through the Commander of the Artillery Brigade:

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,

September 21st 1864.

Circular

No. 135

Division Commanders and the Commander of the Artillery Brigade, will please have made out a report from each regiment and battery in their commands, of the battles which they claim should be inscribed on their flags and guidons for meritorious conduct as prescribed





in General Order No. 19, of February 22, 1862, from Head Quarters of the Army.

By command of

MAJOR GENERAL WARREN.

(Signed)

FRED T. LOCKE

A. A. G.

HEAD QUARTERS ARTILLERY BRIG, 5TH A. C.

Sept. 21st 1864.

Official.

Furnished for the information of Battery commanders. A list of battles in which their commands have borne a part, and which will entitle the commands to have the same inscribed on their guidons, will be forwarded by commanders with the least possible delay.

By command of

COL. C. S. WAINWRIGHT

FORD, MORRIS,

Lieut. A. A. A. G.

The following November a document was received at Battery Head Quarters labelled "Decision of the Military Board in Relation to what constitutes a battle to distinguish from skirmishes in which some portions of the command may have been engaged.

Also calling for a list of Battles in which Battery E has actually been engaged during the present war."

This is endorsed by Captain Phillips, "Received and information furnished Nov. 11, 1864."

### THE DECISION ETC.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS.

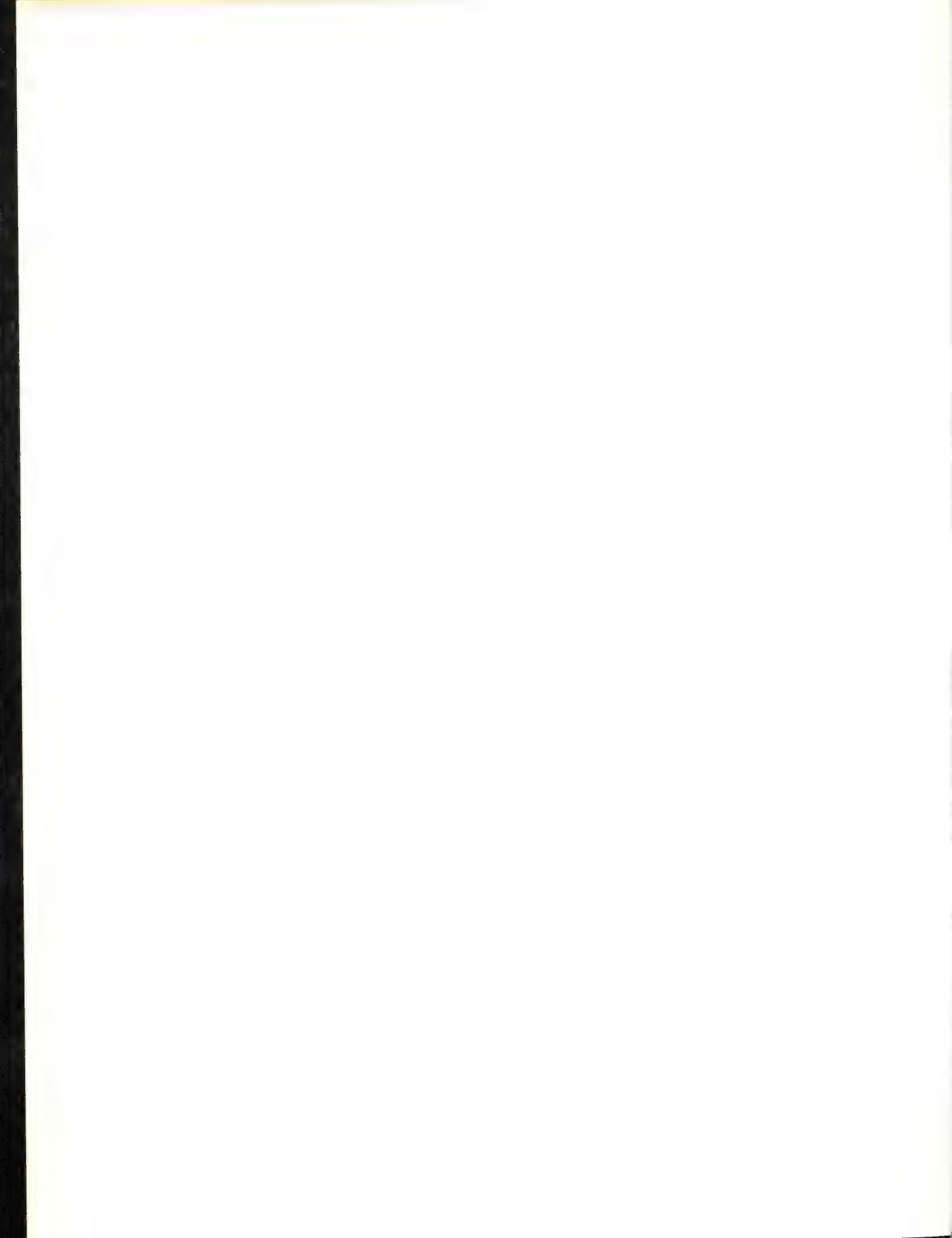
Nov. 8, 1864

General Orders

No. 55

By decision of the Military Board convened at these Head Quarters Oct. 29, 1864, by S. O. (Special Order) No. 268, the following list comprises all the battles in which this Corps has been engaged. Many regiments have claimed as battles actions which the board decides are only part of the same battle, and to be included under one name.

All that are claimed on the original list that do not appear on the list furnished have been rejected.



It is decided that an organization may claim any engagement in which the Corps to which it belonged took part, whether actually engaged or under orders and held in readiness on the field. Division Commanders and the Commander of the Artillery Brigade, will have new lists forwarded as soon as possible from all the regiments and batteries in their commands to include only such battles designated on the accompanying list, in order that the claims may be forwarded, and the list published at an early date.

By command of

MAJ. GENERAL WARREN

A. S. MARVIN JR.

A. A. General.

Head Quarters Artillery Brig. 5th A. C.

Nov. 9, 1864.

FORD MORRIS

Lieut. and A. A. A. General.

Official:

The "list" is appended, and in the following spring the order for the inscriptions was issued:

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

March 7. 1865.

General Orders

No. 10.

In accordance with the requirements of General Orders No. 19, of 1862, from the War Department, and in conformity with the reports of boards convened to examine into the services rendered by the troops concerned, and by the authority of the Lieutenant General commanding Armies of the United States, it is ordered that there shall be inscribed upon the colors or guidons of the following regiments and batteries, serving in this army, the names of the battles in which they have borne a meritorious part, and as hereinafter specified, viz:

## BATTERY "E" MASSACHUSETTS ARTILLERY.

Yorktown.

Hanover Court House.

Mechanicsville.

Gaines Mills.

Malvern Hill.

Second Bull Run.

Rappahannock Station.

Mine Run.

Wilderness.

Spottsylvania.

North Anna.

Bethesda Church.



Fredericksburg.  
Chancellorsville.  
Gettysburg.

Petersburg.  
Weldon Railroad.  
Hatcher's Run.

By command of Major General Meade

GEO. D. RUGGLES,  
*Assistant Adjutant General*

Official:

### RETURNED TO THE STATE.

Many flags had been returned before the war ended, for Governor Andrew thus referred to them in his inaugural address to the legislature in January, 1865:

"In the vestibule of the capitol of the Commonwealth you passed to this hall of your deliberations beneath a hundred battle-flags, war worn, begrimed and bloody. They are sad but proud memorials of the transcendent crime of the Rebellion, the curse of slavery, the elastic energy of a free Commonwealth, the glory and the grief of War.

There has been no loyal army, the shout of whose victory has not drowned the dying sigh of a son of Massachusetts. There has been no victory gained which her blood has not helped to win."

After the war was over the Government made the following provision for the preservation of the colors in the following order:

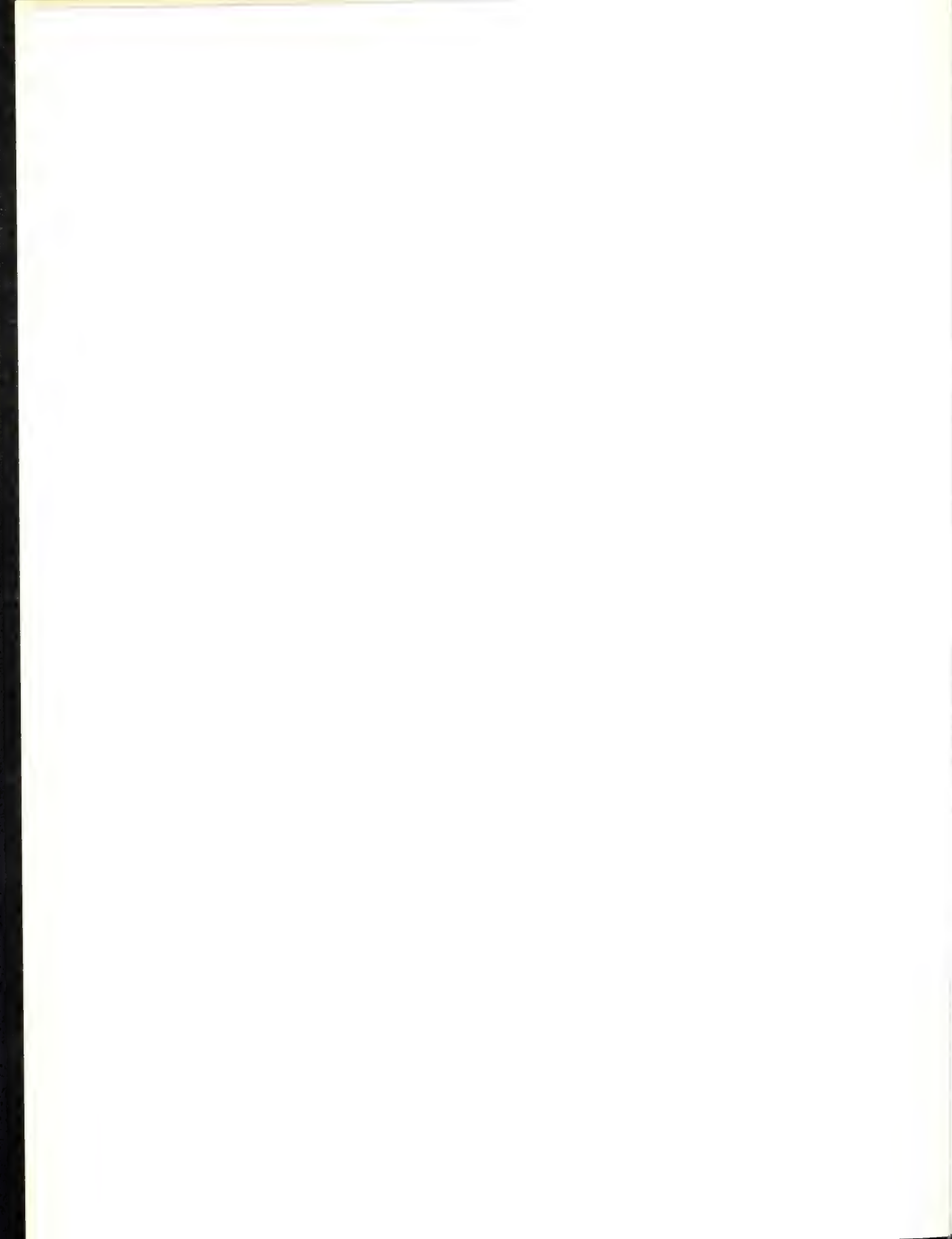
WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON May 15, 1865.

General Orders

No. 94

Extracts: III. The Adjutant General of the Army will designate places of rendezvous in the respective States, to which the regiments, after muster out, will be forwarded *for payment*.

IV. Upon arrival at the rendezvous where the musters-out are to take place, a critical examination of the regimental and company records, books, &c., will be made; and in case of omissions, the proper commanders will be made to supply them, and make all the entries as enjoined by the Army Regulations. At the same time the muster-out rolls will be commenced and prepared *in accordance with existing regulations*, under the direction of the Assistant Commissaries of Musters of Divisions, superintended by the Corps Commissaries. Corps



and Department commanders will see that the work is pushed with energy and executed promptly, using to this end Division and Brigade commanders to superintend it, and their respective staff officers, to aid the mustering officers in collecting the data for the muster-out rolls and discharge papers as well as the preparation of the same. . . .

V. So soon as the rolls of a regiment are completed, the said command, with its arms, colors, and necessary equipage, will be placed *en route* to its state, and to the rendezvous therein at or nearest which it was mustered in.

*En route*, and after arrival in the State the following will be observed:

1. Immediately on arrival at the State rendezvous, the regiment will be reported to, and taken control of, by the Chief Mustering Officer for the State, or his assistant at the point.

7. The Chief Mustering Officer will, under regulations to be established by himself, take possession of and carefully preserve the regimental and company records, also the *colors* with the respective regiments, and hold them subject to orders from the Adjutant General of the Army.

8. As soon as practicable after arrival at the state rendezvous the Chief Mustering Officer, or his assistant, will see that the arms and other public property brought to the State by the troops are turned over to the proper officer of the Supply Department thereat.

VI. In preparing the muster-out rolls, Corps, Department, Division and Brigade commanders will hold regimental officers to a strict accountability, in order to insure accurate and complete records of the enlisted men, and the better to establish the just claims of the non-commissioned officers and privates who have been wounded, or of the representatives of those who have died from disease or wounds, or been killed in battle.

VII. Prior to the departure of regiments from the rendezvous where mustered out, all public property,—except arms, colors, and equipage required *en route*,—will be turned over to, and cared for by, the proper officers of the Supply Department concerned.

## THE RETURN OF THE GUIDON BY CAPT. PHILLIPS.

HEADQUARTERS BATTERY E.  
MASS. ART'Y

READVILLE, MASS., June 12, '65.

I certify on honor that I have this day turned over to





Bv't Capt. (Robert) Davis 2d U. S. Inf. and mustering officer the following articles of C. C. and G. Equipage in obedience to G. O. No. 94 War Dept.

A. G. O. current series.

### A GUIDON.

On the back of this paper is written:—

"No. 4. Transferred to Capt. Davis, 1 Guidon."

In Captain Phillips' Returns of Clothing, Camp and Garrison Equipage for the month of June, 1865, there is the entry:—

"Transferred to Capt. Davis One Guidon."

The records of the Record and Pension Office of the War Department, show by information forwarded from that office December 8, 1900, that by telegram dated War Department, Adjutant General's Office, June 13, 1865, the chief mustering officer of the State of Massachusetts was authorized to turn over all regimental colors in his charge under section 7, paragraph 5, Special Orders No. 94, War Department, Adjutant General's Office, 1865, to the Governor of the State of Massachusetts, at such time as the latter might name.

### RECEIVED BY THE STATE.

On the 13th of December, 1865, the following General Order was issued:

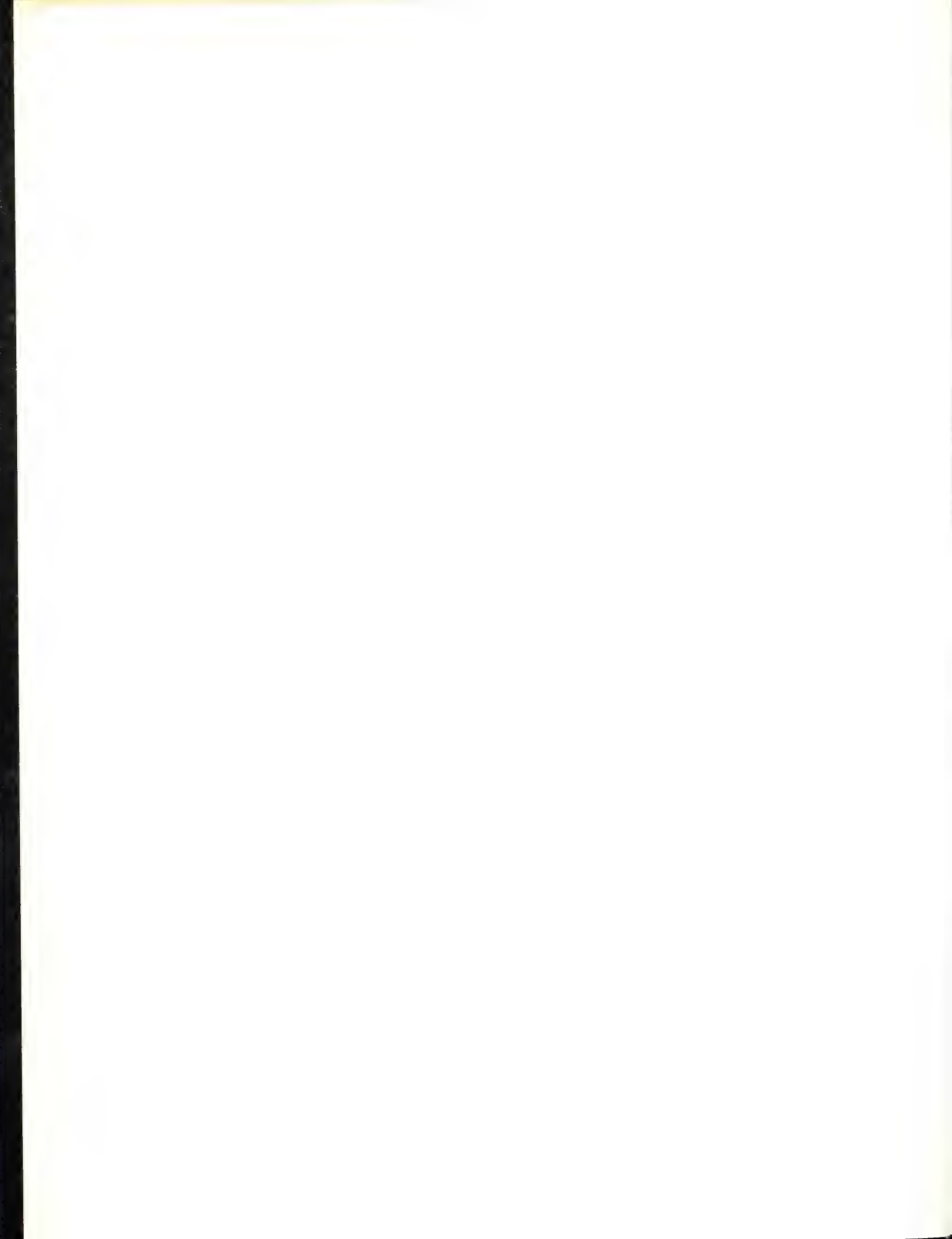
COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

December 13, 1865.

General Orders No. 18

By General Order No. 94, of the War Department, issued May 15, 1865, volunteer regiments and batteries, on their return to their respective states, when mustered out and discharged, were to deposit their colors with the chief United States mustering officers, to be by them transferred to the governors of the states.



Since that time the following Massachusetts regiments and batteries, having faithfully served their country to the end of the Rebellion, returned home and been discharged, their colors have been received by Brevet-Colonel F. N. Clarke U. S. A., Chief Mustering Officer, viz. . . . 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 11th, 15th, 16th Batteries, Light Artillery . . . .

On Friday, 22d. instant.—Forefather's Day.—the colors will be escorted from Colonel Clarke's headquarters, No. 2 Bulfinch Street, to the State House, where they will be formally received by His Excellency the Governor; and placed in the public archives of the Commonwealth, to be sacredly preserved forever as grand emblems of the heroic services and patriotic devotion to Liberty and Union of one hundred and forty thousand of her dead and living sons.

The escort will be performed by the 1st Company of Cadets Lieutenant Colonel Holmes commanding, who will report to Brevet Colonel Clarke, at his headquarters, at 11 o'clock a. m., when the line of march will be taken up.

All general, regimental and company officers, and past general, regimental and company officers of Massachusetts, and especially all officers and past officers, and all non-commissioned officers and privates of the several organizations named above, are invited to take part in the ceremony, and join in the procession.

The officers will, as far as practicable detail a color-guard for the colors of their respective late commands. The original date of muster-in of each command will govern its place in the procession. Officers and enlisted men, as far as practicable, will appear in uniform.

For further orders and information apply to the Adjutant General of the Commonwealth.

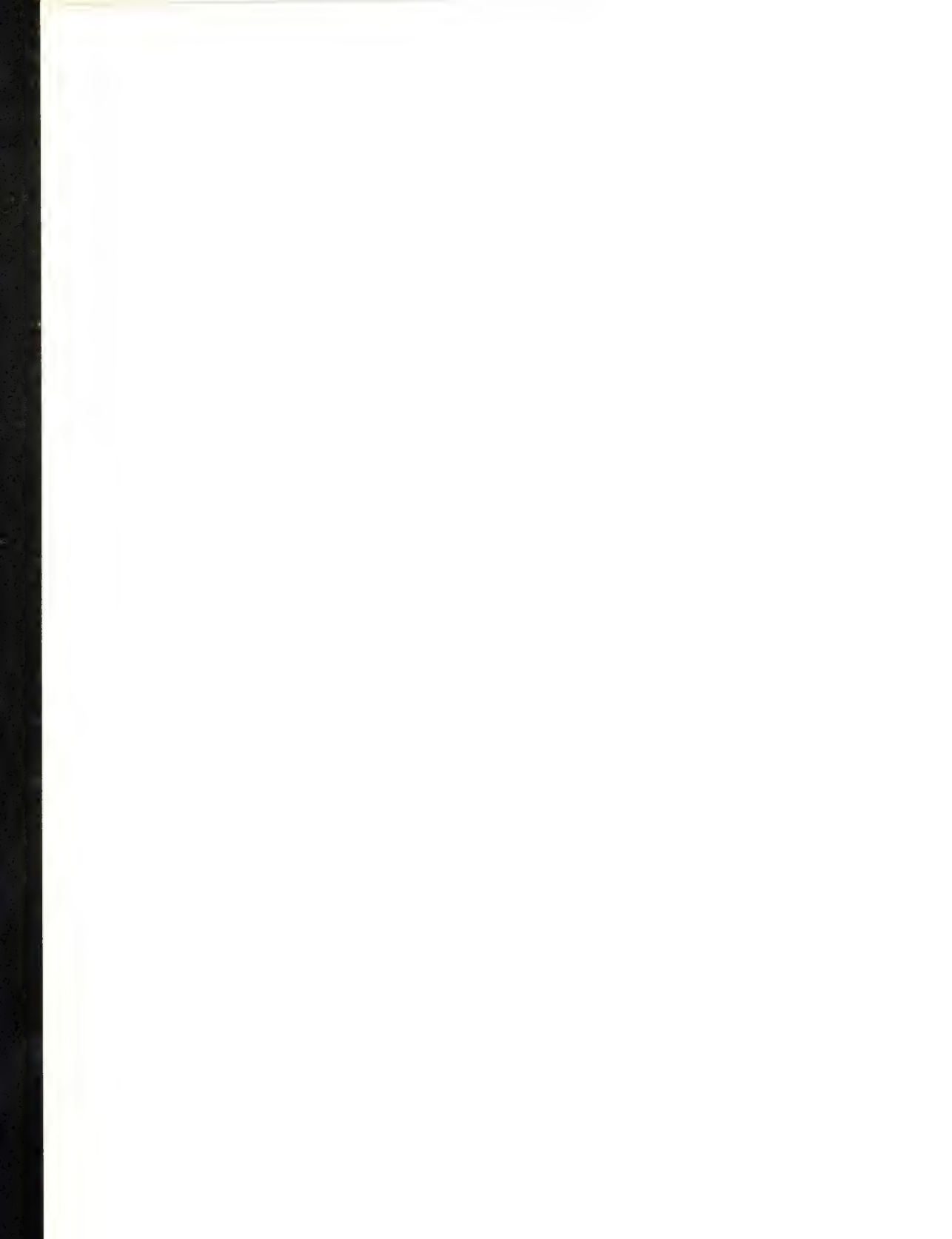
By order of His Excellency JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WILLIAM SCHOULER, *Adjutant General*.

The returned regiments and batteries having by their representatives signified their intention of taking part in these ceremonies, the following order was issued:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,  
December 13, 1865.

[General Order, No. 19.]

It having been represented at these head-quarters that the Massachusetts regiments and companies which had filled their allotted terms of service in the field prior to May 15, 1865, the colors of which are deposited in the State House, desire to take part in the flag reception on the 22d. instant, referred to in General Order No. 18, current series,



The Commander-in-Chief most cordially complies with their wishes. The colors of these organizations will be handed them on the morning of the 22d. upon proper requisition. They are to be returned at the close of the services. Major General Darius N. Couch of Taunton, ranking officer of volunteers in Massachusetts, has been invited to take command of the troops. Should he decline Brevet Major General George H. Gordon of Boston, next in rank, will take command.

The commanding general will arrange details.

By order of His Excellency JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM SCHOULER, *Adjutant General.*

Major Gen'l Couch accepted the command, appointed his staff, designated the Division and Brigade commanders, and made such arrangements for the order of the procession as he thought proper, announcing the same through the public press as directed by the Commander-in-Chief.

Included in the regiments and batteries were those who served three months, ninety days, one hundred days, six months, nine months, one year and three years regiments and batteries, and it was decided that the organizations should take their places in line according to their numbers and not according to date of muster-in, as stated in General Order No. 18. This was to prevent confusion in the formation of the line. Meetings were at once held and color-bearers appointed by the organizations, and Brig. Gen. Edward W. Hinks was appointed Chief of Staff with headquarters at Room 10, State House.

Brigadier and Brevet Major-General Joseph Hayes was appointed to the command of the Division of Artillery, which consisted of two Brigades: First, sixteen light batteries, Captain and Brevet Colonel Augustus P. Martin, commanding, and Second, four regiments and two battalions heavy artillery, Colonel Wm. S. King, commanding.

The procession formed in the following order:

1st, Cavalry; 2d, Artillery; 3d, Infantry.

The Cavalry formed on Park Street mall of the Common, right resting near Park Street gate, the Artillery on the



Tremont Street mall, right resting near Park Street gate, and the Infantry on Beacon Street mall, right resting in front of the State House.

General officers and their staffs appeared mounted as far as practicable, and officers and men were in uniform and carried side arms when such were available.

The weather was clear and cold and the ground was white with snow.

The stars and stripes floated from staffs attached to churches, and decorated public and private buildings. The windows and roofs of houses were filled with spectators looking down on the crowd beneath, but the mind was busy with memories of events undreamed of in 1861, and at sight of the worn colors borne by the troops, although there were cheers hearty and prolonged, they were cheers with a difference.

The headquarters of General Couch were pitched on the Park Street mall near the gate, and the colors were delivered to the officers of the respective commands from his tent. Before the procession started the flags were formally passed over, with a few remarks from Brevet Colonel Francis N. Clarke, Chief U. S. Mustering Officer to General Couch at these headquarters.

General Couch's speech of acceptance closed with the following words:

"To those who have been spared to bear them on to final triumph, devolves the privilege of returning them to the Commonwealth, in the consciousness that the object for which they were unfurled has been fully accomplished, the principles they symbolize triumphantly vindicated, and the Union of the States restored upon a firm and enduring basis."

This ceremony over, the procession started at eleven o'clock a. m. The Boston Brigade Band accompanied the Independent Cadets who formed the escort, and Gilmore's Band preceded the Infantry Corps.





The route of march was from the Common to Tremont Street as far north as Hanover Street, then as far south as Dover Street and back to the Common through Arlington and Beacon Streets.

In the Artillery Division, which made a fine display, the Fifth Mass. Battery, Brevet Major C. A. Phillips, marched with 40 men.

The moment the head of the procession reached the State House, its arrival was announced by a gun from Light Battery A on the Common.

The color-bearers took their places on each side of the steps leading up to the front of the capitol, and the remainder of the commands stood about in the yard on either side.

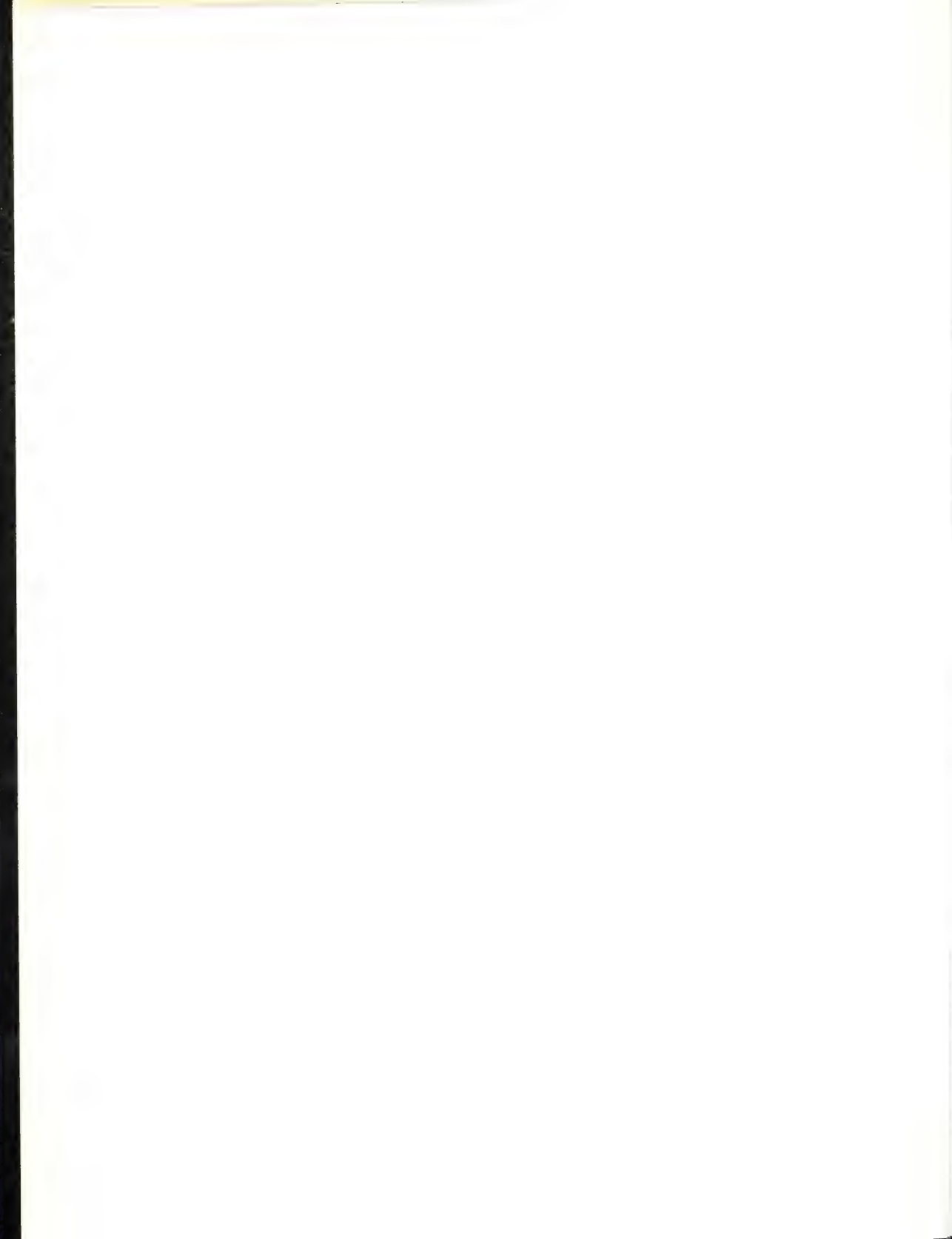
The colors were raised when the Governor and his staff came forward, and prayer was offered by the Rev. Samuel K. Lothrop D. D. Chaplain of the Cadets. Gen. Couch then addressed the Governor. His speech ended with the words,—

"May it please your Excellency, the colors of the Massachusetts Volunteers are returned to the State."

In his address of acceptance Governor Andrew promised that they should be "preserved and cherished amid all the vicissitudes of the future, as mementoes of brave men and noble actions," and his pledge has been kept inviolate by successive Governors and legislatures, the result of whose combined efforts is a Memorial Hall designed especially to hold them, in simple grandeur second to none in the world, which forms a part of the rotunda of the capitol. In their sockets cut in the shelves of these niches the staves are firmly fixed, and from them forever droop the colors never more to be "loosed to the breeze."

#### THE BATTERY FLAGS IN 1902.

From the Report of Brigadier General and Acting Chief



of Ordnance Richard A. Peirce to the Governor and Commander-in-Chief, dated January 1, 1866, for the year 1865:

"Schedule of Worn Colors in charge of the Acting Chief of Ordnance Dec. 31, 1865. . . .

5th Light Battery Mass. Volunteers 2 Guidons, silken, National."

These are doubtless the flags belonging to the Battery now preserved at the State House as described August 11, 1900, by Mr. Charles O. Eaton, who made the flags for the troops in the first place, and has had exclusive charge of them since they were brought back from the War, viz.,

No. 1, a National Flag, stars and stripes, about five feet long, a large flag for a battery. It has no lettering, and is ragged and torn. It is made of silk, and has a staff with spear-head and battle-axe combined.

No. 2, is a National Guidon in good condition, that is, not torn. It has a staff with spear-head. It is swallow tail form, with gold stars on a blue ground, and the stripes red and white alternate, beginning and ending with red. The names of the battles are inscribed with red letters on white stripes and gold colored letters on red stripes, beginning with Yorktown in the upper red stripe. The list of battles is the same as that given in General Order No. 10 p. 10 except that "Second Bull Run" is written "Bull Run 2d."

## CORPS AND BRIGADE FLAGS AND BADGES.

"He interposed only a pin between himself and the only thing he dreaded—oblivion. The pin held his name to his blouse, so that on the morrow the newspapers might tell who had died for his country."

—GEN. W. W. AVERELL on the *American Volunteer*.

The Corps, Division, and Brigade flags accompany the commanding general on the march, and are pitched in front of Head Quarters in camp.



HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR ALEXANDRIA SEMINARY, VA.  
March 24, 1862.

## General Orders

No. 102.

## Extract.

X. Brigades in Divisions, and Divisions in Army Corps, will be numbered from right to left, but in reports of operations they will be designated by the names of their commanders.

XI. Flags will be used to designate the various Headquarters as follows:—

General Head Quarters: National Flag.

1st Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square red flag beneath; 2d Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square, blue flag beneath; 3d. Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square blue and red flag vertical beneath; 4th. Army Corps, National Flag, with a small, square, blue and red flag horizontal beneath.

1st. Division of an Army Corps, red flag 6 ft. long and 5 ft. wide.

The Artillery will have the colors of the Division to which it belongs, and be distinguished by a right angled triangular flag, six feet long and three feet wide at the staff.

The Hospitals will be designated by a yellow flag.

These flags will be attached to a portable staff 14 feet long, in two joints, and will be habitually displayed in front of the tent, or from some prominent part of the house or grounds occupied as the Head Quarters which they designate, and on the march shall be carried near the person of the officer commanding the Corps, Division, Brigade or Regiment it is intended to designate.

By command of

MAJ GEN'L McCLELLAN.

S. WILLIAMS,

A. A. G.

This order, that in reports of operations the organizations should be designated by the names of their commanders, has done much to make incomprehensible the records of the War, and to rob those who merited them of the honors to which they were entitled, for in many instances only the last name of a commander is given, where there were several of the same name in the Division.



March 24, 1862, General Fitz John Porter's Division to which the Fifth Mass. Battery was attached, formed a part of the Third Corps of the Army of the Potomac, and had embarked at Alexandria for the Peninsula campaign and Yorktown.

When the Fifth Corps was permanently established, July 22, 1862, Porter's Division became the 1st Division of that Corps.

General Philip Kearney, who commanded a Division in the old Third Corps, ordered during the Peninsula campaign the wearing of a red diamond-shaped patch on the side of the cap, for identification of the members of his Division, which is said to have suggested the Corps badges devised by General Daniel Butterfield a year later, and adopted by Major General Joseph Hooker.

The flag of the 1st Division, Fifth Corps, in the spring campaign of 1863, was a rectangular white flag, with the red maltese cross in the centre.

## DISTINCTIVE CORPS BADGES.

HEAD QUARTERS  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

March 31st 1863.

"Circular"

For the purpose of ready recognition of Corps and Divisions of this Army, and to prevent injustice by reports of straggling and misconduct through mistake as to their organizations, the Chief Quartermaster will furnish without delay the following badges to be worn by the Officer and Enlisted men of all the regiments of the various corps mentioned. They will be securely fastened upon the centre of the tops of the caps. The inspecting officer will at all inspections see that these badges are worn as designated.

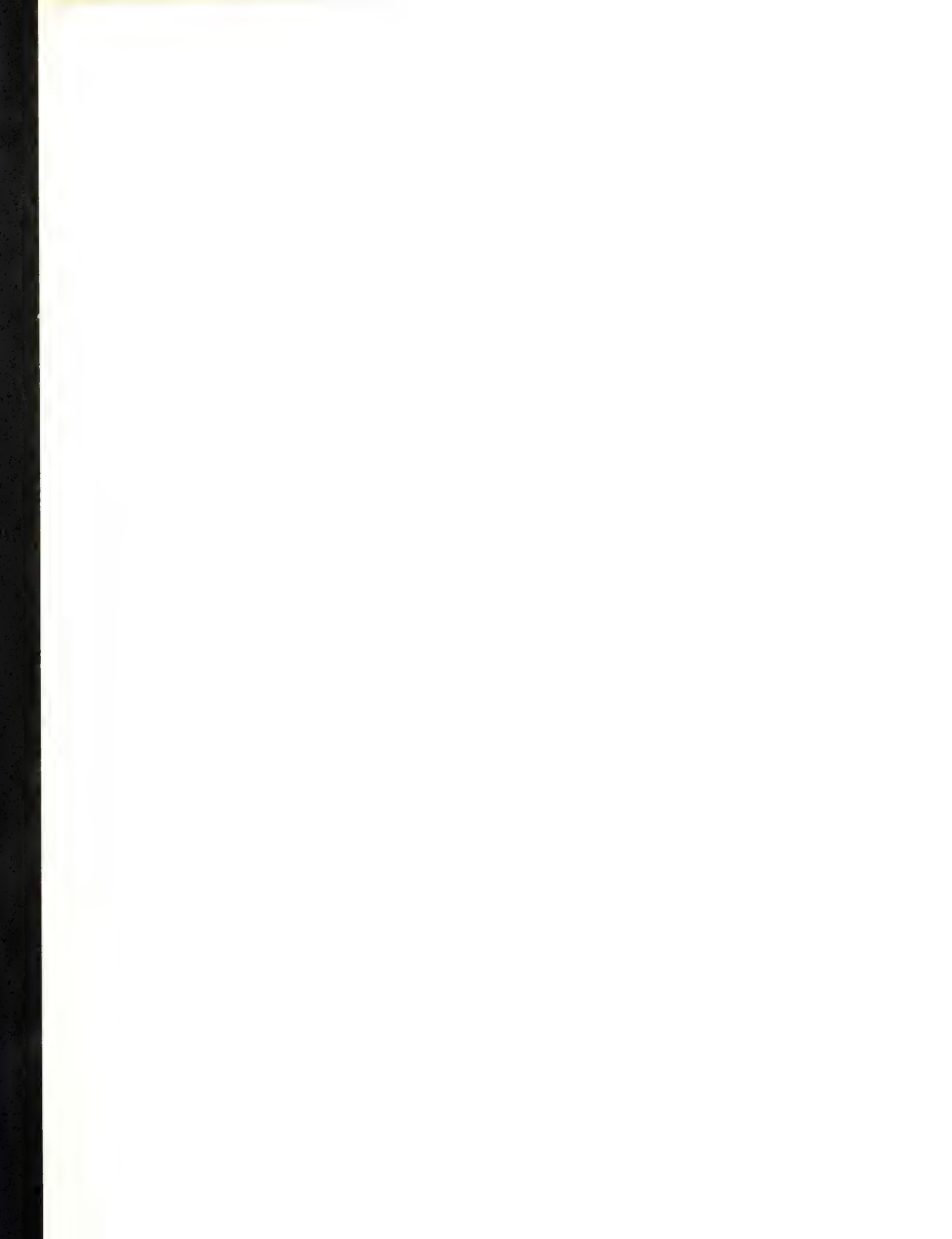
5th Corps, a Maltese Cross. Red for 1st Div: White for 2d Div: Blue for 3d Division.

The size and color will be according to pattern.

By command of MAJ. GEN'L HOOKER.

S. WILLIAMS,

(Sd.) A. A. G.





HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS,

April 1. 1863.

(The Badges are now being prepared and will shortly be furnished.)

Official:

(Signed) FRED T. LOCKE,

A. A. G.

HEAD QUARTERS 1ST DIV. 5TH CORPS.

April 1. 1863.

Official: (Sd.) C. W. B. MERVINE,

Asst. Adj't. Gen'l.

HEAD QUARTERS DIVISION ART'Y

1st Div. 5th Corps, April 2d. 1863.

Official:

A. P. MARTIN,

Capt. Com'd'g Div. Artillery.

These badges were worn upon the top of the men's caps, and on the sides of officers' hats.

The Reserve Artillery had a swallow-tail flag, red, with cross cannons white, in the centre.

From the Diary of Captain Nathan Appleton.

MARTIN'S BRIGADE BADGE.

"Sunday, November 22, 1863. Captain A. P. Martin gets up a Brigade badge. . . ." "The first time he went to Boston after this, he had one made by the firm of Guild, jewelers on Washington street. It is a maltese cross: the bars being of gold, and the centre a small maltese cross of stones, the white one being pearl, combining the three Division colors, red, white and blue, the pin at the top composed of two crossed cannons."

HOSPITAL FLAGS.

WAR DEPARTMENT

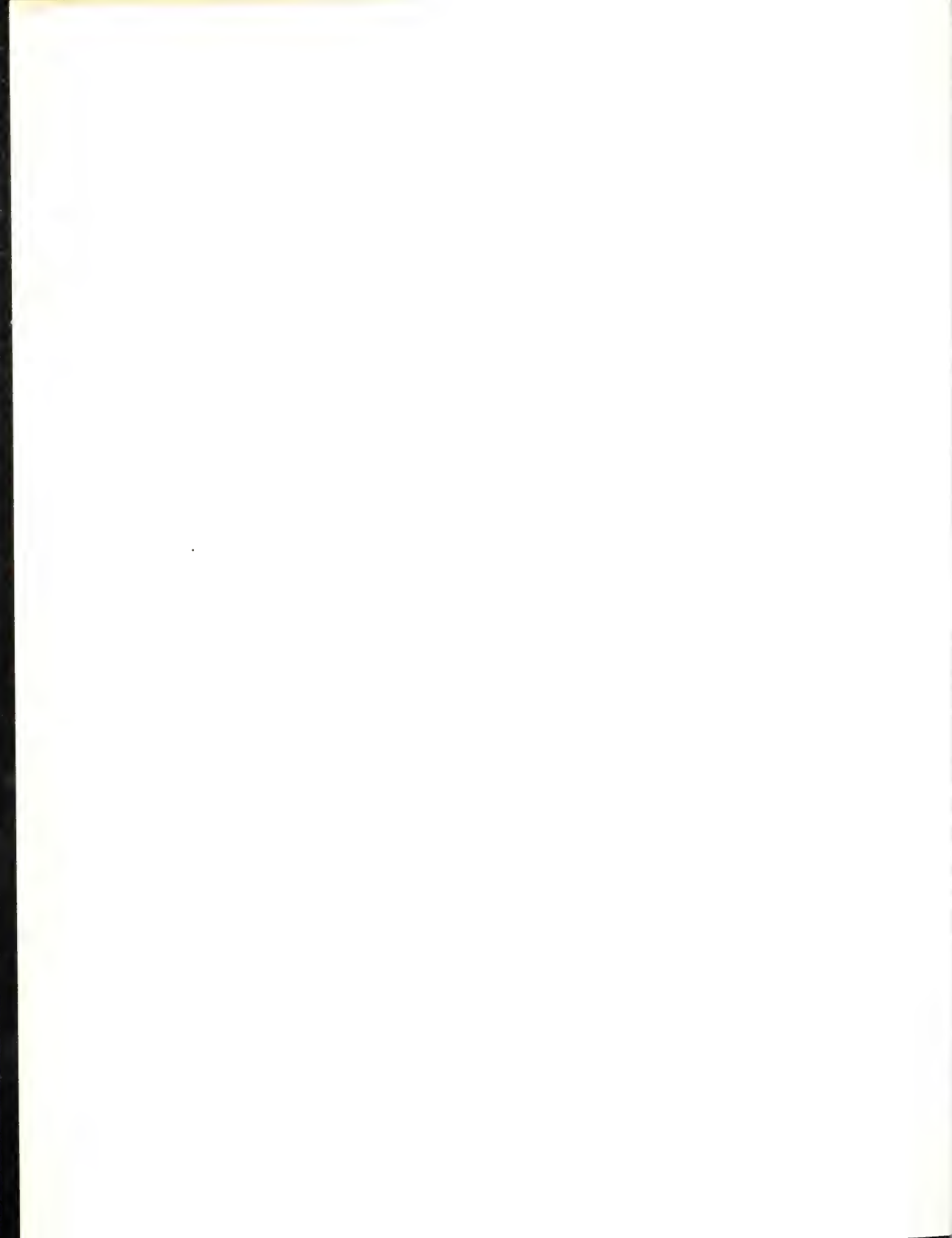
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

WASHINGTON, Jan'y 4. 1864.

General Orders

No. 9.

The Hospital and Ambulance Flags of the Army are established as



follows:—For General Hospitals, yellow bunting 9 by 5 feet, with the letter H, 24 inches long, of green bunting, in centre.

For Post and Field Hospitals, yellow bunting 6 by 4 feet, with letter H, 24 inches long, of green bunting, in centre.

For ambulances, and guidons to mark the way to Field Hospitals, yellow bunting 14 by 28 inches, with a border, one inch deep, of green.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
Ass't Adjt. General.

#### HEAD QUARTERS FLAGS.

#### UNDER GRANT AND MEADE.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,

May 2, 10.30 a. m. 1864.

Circular:

Hereafter the designating flag for these Head Qrs. will be a magenta colored swallow tail flag, with an eagle in gold surrounded by a silver wreath for an emblem.

By command of Maj. Gen'l Meade.

(Sgd) S. WILLIAMS,  
Ass't Adjt. Gen'l.

HEAD QRS. 5TH ARMY CORPS.

May 2, 1864.

Official:

(Sgd) FRED T. LOCKE,  
Ass't Adjt. General.

HEAD QRS. ART'Y. BRIG. 5TH A. C.

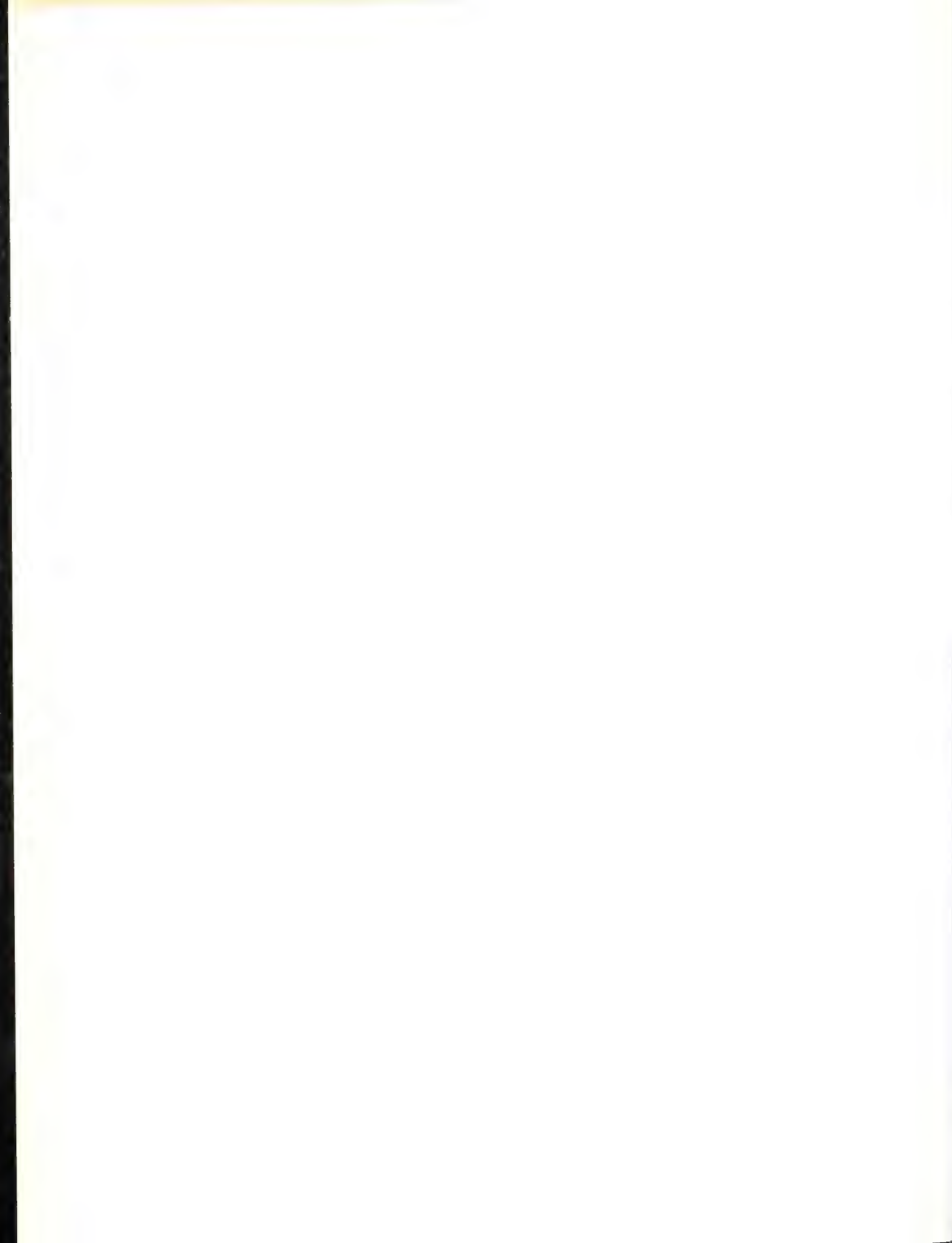
May 3, 1864.

Official:

A. MATTHEWSON,  
Lieut. & A. A. A. Gen'l.

#### THE LETTER E.

In the estimate for clothing for October, 1864, in Quarter Master Sergeant Wm. H. Peacock's Account Book, are 30 blouses, 40 caps, 100 cross cannon, and 100 Letter E. See p. 50 General Order No. 86, Consolidation of Artillery.



## CHAPTER II.

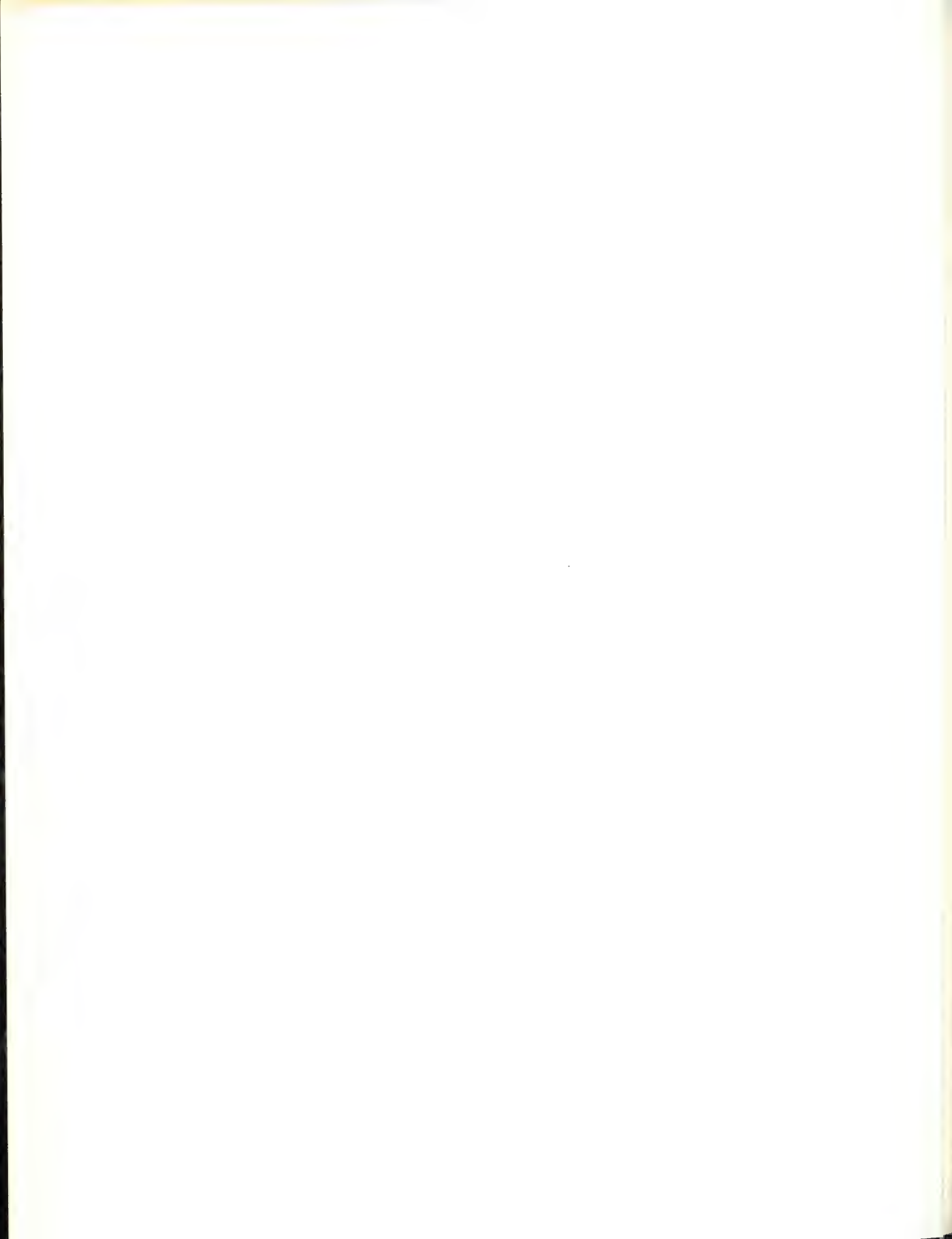
### IN 'SIXTY-ONE.

"They knew how genuine glory was put on;  
Taught us how rightfully a nation shone  
In splendor; what strength was, that would not bend  
But in magnanimous weakness."

—WILLIAM WORDSWORTH.

In the first moment of the declaration of a Union of States bearing the title of the United States of America, the germ of expansion had taken root, and following close upon its rapid growth came the anxiety for the safety of the seat of government. John Quincy Adams in a speech in Congress on April 14, 1842, thus gave expression to his belief that the vicinity of Washington would, sooner or later, become the theatre of a great conflict:—"If civil war come" said he, "if insurrection come, is this beleaguered capital, is this besieged government to see millions of its subjects in arms, and have no right to break the fetters which they are forging into swords? No! The war power of the government can sweep this institution (slavery) into the Gulf."

The "institution" standing thus between the States, an ever present, ever increasing source of ill feeling, was nevertheless not the immediate provocation that roused the North to action in 'Sixty-One. Not the slightest allusion was publicly made to it amidst the bustle and unusual excitement of a military character, which unsettled the public mind; in which decision and hesitation alternated, when men resolved and women pleaded tearfully, then yielded with a proud, fond foreboding, too soon realized,



of the sacrifice to come: but the plea was always the danger that menaced the capital and the threatened disseverance of the Union; a plea which was comprehended in England as shown by a few words of John Bright in a speech at Rochdale, when he declared:—"If the thirty-three or thirty-four States of the American Union can break off whenever they like, I can see nothing but disaster and confusion throughout the whole of that continent. I say that the war, be it successful or not, be it Christian or not, be it wise or not, is a war to sustain the government and to sustain the authority of a great nation."

In 1861, John A. Andrew was Governor of the state of Massachusetts, John Z. Goodrich Lieutenant Governor, Oliver Warner Secretary, Henry K. Oliver Treasurer, President of the Senate William Claflin, Speaker of the House of Representatives John A. Goodwin. Clerk of the Senate Stephen N. Gifford, Clerk of the House William Stowe. The Rev. A. L. Stone was Chaplain of the House, the Rev. A. S. Patton of the Senate. Maj. John Morrissey was Sergeant-at-Arms.

The Governor's Staff consisted of Lieutenant-Colonels Horace Binney Sargent, Harrison Ritchie, John W. Wetherell and Henry Lee Jr.

The members of the United States Senate from Massachusetts, were Charles Sumner, who was chairman of the Committee on Foreign Affairs, and Henry Wilson, who was chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs. U. S. Representatives from this state were Thomas D. Eliot, James Buffington, Benjamin F. Thomas, Alexander H. Rice, William Appleton, John B. Alley, Daniel W. Gooch, Charles R. Train, Goldsmith F. Bailey, Charles Delano, Henry L. Dawes.

Abraham Lincoln of Illinois, had been elected President of the United States, and Hannibal Hamlin of Maine, Vice President. The election took place on November 6, 1860.





South Carolina, the most recalcitrant State, had threatened, in case Abraham Lincoln was elected, to secede from the Union, in order to form a new confederacy of those states which upheld the traffic in slaves. Accordingly, notwithstanding Congress was not in session until the 3d of December, 1860, the members of the United States Senate from South Carolina hastened to resign their seats. It was determined that United States law should no longer be administered in that state, and the United States judge for the district of South Carolina resigned his office. Other civil officers of the Government followed suit, the palmetto flag of South Carolina displaced the flag of our Union on several vessels in Charleston harbor, and a convention of the people was recommended by the state legislature then in session. On December 20, 1860, South Carolina by a unanimous vote formally passed an ordinance of secession; commissioners were appointed to proceed to Washington to treat with the United States, and soon thereafter its representatives in Congress dissolved their connection with that body.

Thus was inaugurated the War of the Rebellion, for Georgia soon joined her fortunes with those of South Carolina, and the "blue cockade" a sign in former years of South Carolina's nullification, appeared in the streets of Savannah. In 1832, South Carolina nullified the revenue laws of the Union.

January 5, 1861, John A. Andrew was inaugurated Governor of the Commonwealth and on the 14th a committee of the State Senate made the following report:

Report of a Committee.

IN SENATE, January 14, 1861.

The Committee on the Militia, to whom was referred the portion of the Governor's address relating to the Militia, beg leave to report that they have considered the suggestions therein contained, and in order to give the Commander-in-Chief the power of immediately increasing the efficiency of an active militia by enlarging the number of privates in



companies of cavalry and infantry, by organizing new companies, and filling up to their quota the regiments and battalions now existing, and by increasing the whole force on the present basis, to such an extent as in his opinion the exigencies of the times may require, unanimously recommend the passage of the accompanying Act.

For the Committee,

CHARLES O. ROGERS.

This report was accepted but before the bill came up in the Senate the following General Order was issued by the Adjutant General of the State.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

January 16, 1861.

[General Order No. 4.]

Events which have recently occurred, and are now in progress, require that Massachusetts should be at all times ready to furnish her quota upon any requisition of the President of the United States, to aid in the maintenance of the laws, and the peace of the Union. His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief therefore orders.—

That the commanding officer of each company of Volunteer Militia examine with care the roll of his company, and cause the name of each member, together with his rank and place of residence, to be properly recorded, and a copy of the same to be forwarded to the office of the Adjutant General. Previous to which commanders of companies shall make strict inquiry whether there are men in their commands who from age, physical defect, business, or family causes, may be unable, or ill-equipped to respond at once to the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, made in response to the call of the President of the United States, that they be forthwith discharged, so that their places may be filled by men ready for any public exigency which may arise, whenever called upon.

After the above orders shall have been fulfilled, no discharge, either of officer or private shall be granted, unless for cause satisfactory to the Commander-in-Chief. If any companies have not the number of men allowed by law, the commanders of the same, shall make proper exertions to have the vacancies filled, and the men properly drilled and uniformed, and their names and places of residence forwarded to Head Quarters.

To promote the objects embraced in this order, the general, field, and staff officers, and the Adjutant and Acting Quartermaster General will give all the aid and assistance in their power.



Major Generals Sutton, Morse and Andrews, will cause this order to be promulgated throughout their respective divisions.

By command of His Excellency, JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WILLIAM SCHOULER,  
Adjutant General.

Adjutant General Schouler in his "History of Massachusetts in the Civil War" says that although this order was criticised as unnecessary and sensational, in some quarters, it was obeyed with alacrity by those to whom it was addressed.

Next came the discussion of the Militia Bill in the State Senate:

#### AN ACT IN RELATION TO THE VOLUNTEER MILITIA.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:—

SECTION 1. The volunteer militia companies, as now organized, with their officers, shall be retained in the service: and, hereafter, as the public exigency may require, the organization of companies of artillery may be authorized, on petition, by the Commander-in-Chief, with advice of the Council, and the organization of other companies may be authorized on petition by the Commander-in-Chief, or by the mayor and aldermen or selectmen by his permission; but all additional companies, battalions and regiments which may be organized under the provisions of this Act, shall be disbanded whenever the Governor, or the legislature, shall deem that their services are no longer needed. Companies of cavalry shall be limited to one hundred privates and a saddler and a farrier: companies of artillery to forty-eight cannoneers, twenty-four drivers, and a saddler and a farrier: the cadet companies of the first and second divisions to one hundred, and companies of infantry and riflemen to sixty-four privates.

SECTION 2. The fourteenth section of the thirteenth chapter of the General Statutes, and all laws or parts of laws now in force, limiting the number of the volunteer militia, are hereby repealed.

SECTION 3. This act shall take effect upon its passage.

SENATE, January 18, 1861.

Passed to be engrossed.

Sent down for concurrence.

S. N. GIFFORD, Clerk.

There were several substitute bills but they were rejected, and the bill as here given passed both branches; amended in Section 1, by the insertion of the words,



"and said companies so retained and so organized, shall be liable on a requisition of the President of the United States upon the Commander-in-Chief to be marched without the limits of the Commonwealth,"—

after the lines referring to the authorization of the companies and before those referring to their disbandment.

It was signed by the Governor February 15, 1861, but in the mean time Resolutions had passed both branches and received the Governor's signature, for plans for secession were rapidly reaching their consummation in the Southern States, and the situation became more and more one of anxiety and alarm. Mississippi promptly gave evidence of her affiliation with the seceding states. Jefferson Davis, afterwards president of the confederacy, who had been U. S. Secretary of War under President Franklin Pierce, and was then U. S. senator from Mississippi, took leave of the U. S. Senate on January 20, 1861. It was months before the other Southern States passed ordinances of secession, and the western portion of Virginia never wavered in her loyalty to the Union, but was made a new state, that of West Virginia, while the conflict raged in the eastern portion of her sacred soil. There was in all the southern states a respectable minority in favor of the Union who found their most distinguished representative in the person of ex-President Andrew Jackson of Tennessee, on the pedestal of whose monument were cut in the solid granite by the order of the citizens of that state, his memorable words:—"The Union must and shall be preserved."

It was the union of the State of Virginia with the Confederacy which placed Washington, the capital of the nation in imminent peril for four years. Already, in the winter of 'Sixty-One the extremity of the Long Bridge across the Potomac River over which was the passage south out of Washington, was "hostile soil."





RESOLUTIONS IN THE MASSACHUSETTS  
LEGISLATURE.

January 23, 1861, the Governor signed the following:

Resolves tendering the Aid of the Commonwealth to the President of the United States, in enforcing the Laws and Preserving the Union.

WHEREAS, Several states of the Union have through the action of their people and authorities, assumed the attitude of rebellion against the national government; and whereas, treason is still more extensively diffused, and, whereas, the state of South Carolina, having first seized the post office, custom house, moneys, arms, munitions of war and fortifications of the federal government, has by firing upon a vessel in the service of the United States, committed an act of war: and, whereas, the forts and property of the United States in Georgia, Alabama, Louisiana and Florida, have been seized with hostile and treasonable intention: and, whereas, senators and representatives in Congress avow and sanction these acts of treason and rebellion: therefore,

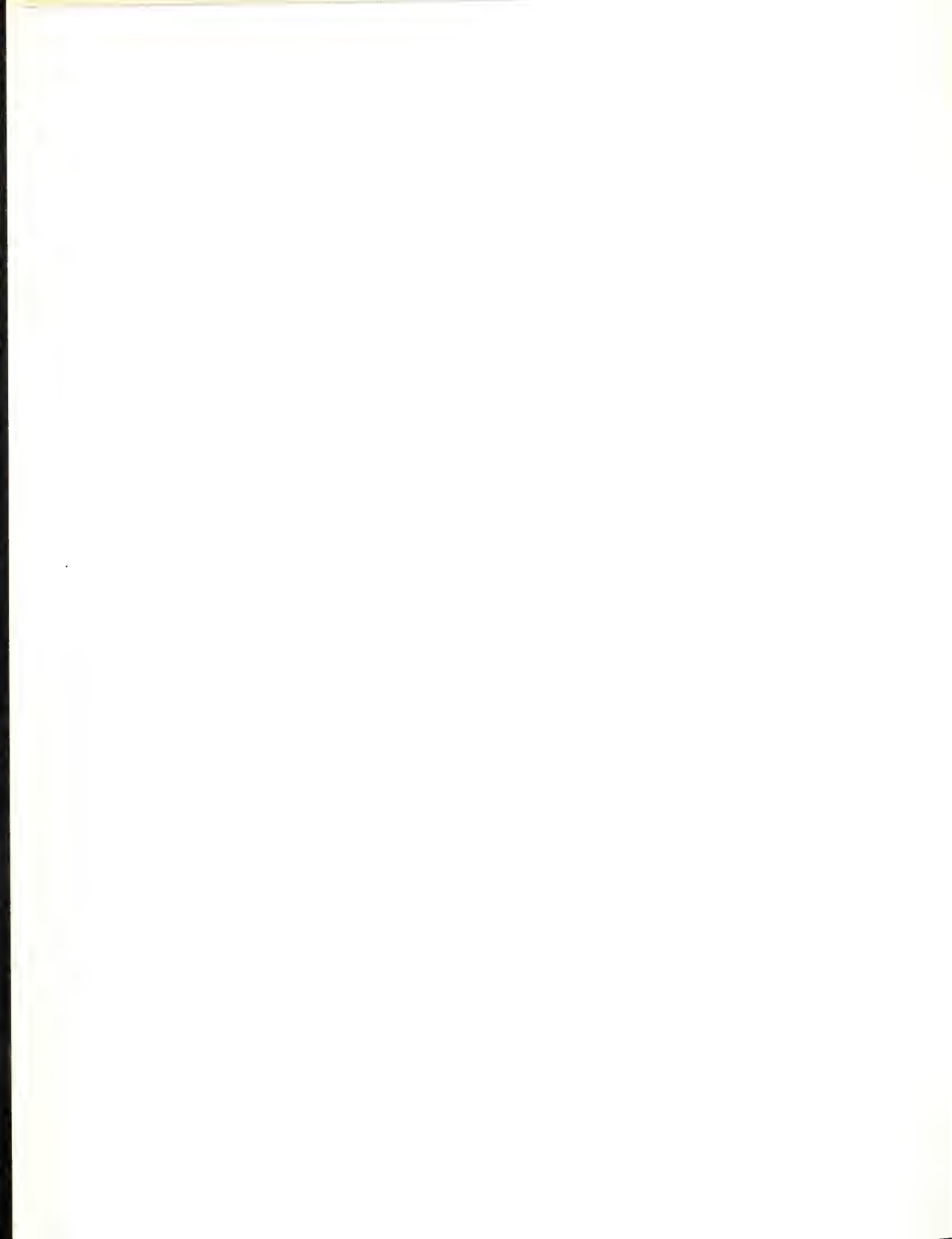
*Resolved*, That the legislature of Massachusetts, now, as always, convinced of the inestimable value of the Union, and the necessity of preserving its blessings to ourselves and our posterity, regard with unmingled satisfaction the determination evinced in the recent firm and patriotic special message of the President of the United States (James Buchanan) to amply and faithfully discharge his constitutional duty of enforcing the laws and preserving the integrity of the Union: and we proffer to him, through the Governor of the Commonwealth, such aid in men and money as he may require, to maintain the authority of the national government.

*Resolved*, That the Union-loving and patriotic authorities, representatives and citizens of those states whose loyalty is endangered or assailed by internal or external treason, who labor in behalf of the Federal Union with unflinching courage and patriotic devotion, will receive the enduring gratitude of the American people.

*Resolved*, That the Governor be requested to forward, forthwith, copies of the foregoing resolutions, to the President of the United States, and the Governors of the several states.

Approved January 23, 1861.

At this period, and intimately connected with the scenes enacted in the national capital previous to the inauguration of President Lincoln March 4, 1861, immortal names



of Massachusetts illumine every page of history, names, some of which are borne by members of the Battery and by others whose influence swayed its fortunes. Here also Rhode Island, so closely connected with the Battery in its marches, camps, and battles, furnishes her quota of leading figures.

It was as members of a commission appointed to represent the interests of Massachusetts on a question of disputed boundary between Massachusetts and Rhode Island,—a question which had long been in dispute, the first report of a commission having been made to this Commonwealth February 21, 1792,—in the Supreme Court of the United States, that four lawyers met at Washington in January, 1861: Ex-Governor John H. Clifford of New Bedford, who had been attorney general of the state from 1849 to 1853, and again from 1854 to 1858, and was then "Of Counsel for the Commonwealth," and Hon. Stephen H. Phillips who had been attorney general since 1858, represented Massachusetts; the Hon. Charles S. Bradley ex-Chief Justice, and the Hon. Thomas A. Jenckes, represented Rhode Island. All arrived in Washington before January 26, 1861. Hon. Edwin M. Stanton was then U. S. Attorney General, holding that office in the Cabinet of the retiring President, James Buchanan.

An account of an interview between Attorney General Stanton and these gentlemen, with attending circumstances, by the late Hon. Stephen H. Phillips, from which these facts are taken, was published in the *New York Sun*, June 11, 1893. He was then the only surviving member of the commission.

On Wednesday evening January 30, 1861, a special messenger was sent to Willard's Hotel to convey the gentlemen from Massachusetts to the Attorney General's office in the Treasury Building.

Stanton said when Governor Clifford remarked upon the difficult access to the building, that such strictness might



keep honest men out, but that all the public buildings were full of traitors. In relation to the seizure of all the archives and muniments of the Government, the following is quoted by Mr. Phillips from a letter written by Governor Clifford to Gen. the Hon. Henry Wilson, dated Feb. 5, 1871:—

"When it was known with what facility this could have been accomplished, and a provisional Government declared, with the ready recognition of almost every diplomatic representative of foreign governments then in Washington, it is not surprising that I should have felt in passing through the corridors of the Treasury building at midnight with two or three superannuated watchmen only for its custody and defence, as if I were walking over a mined fortress, that might at any moment be blown up under my feet."

At the time of this interview of January 30, 1861, the navy had been dispersed where it would do no good, the "Brooklyn" was the only fighting ship at Secretary Toucey's disposal, (Isaac Toucey of Connecticut was Secretary of the Navy) the officers of the Naval Academy and the practice ship "Constitution" and the northern cadets generally were loyal.

Secretary Stanton thought that the militia could be promptly mobilized only in three states, viz., New York, Massachusetts, and Rhode Island.

The following is a copy of a letter signed John H. Clifford and Stephen H. Phillips to Governor John A. Andrew, written that night after their return to the Hotel from their call upon the U. S. Attorney General:—

WASHINGTON, WEDNESDAY NIGHT,  
January 30, 1861.

Dear Sir,

In an interview we have had with the Attorney General of the United States, we have been authorized to express to you confidentially our individual opinion that there is imminent if not inevitable peril of an attack upon the city of Washington, between the 4th and 15th February, with a view to secure the symbols of Government, and the power and prestige of possessions by the traitors who are plotting the dissolution of the Union.



We have a moment before the closing of the mail, to say to you, in this informal way, that no vigilance should be relaxed for Massachusetts to be ready at any moment, and upon a sudden emergency, to come to the succor of the Federal Government.

This may be an unnecessary precaution, but we feel that it is a simple discharge of a plain duty on our part, to give you the intimation of what we have heard from a source of such high authority.

In great haste we are very truly and respectfully,

JOHN H. CLIFFORD.

STEPHEN H. PHILLIPS.

Gov. Andrew.

---

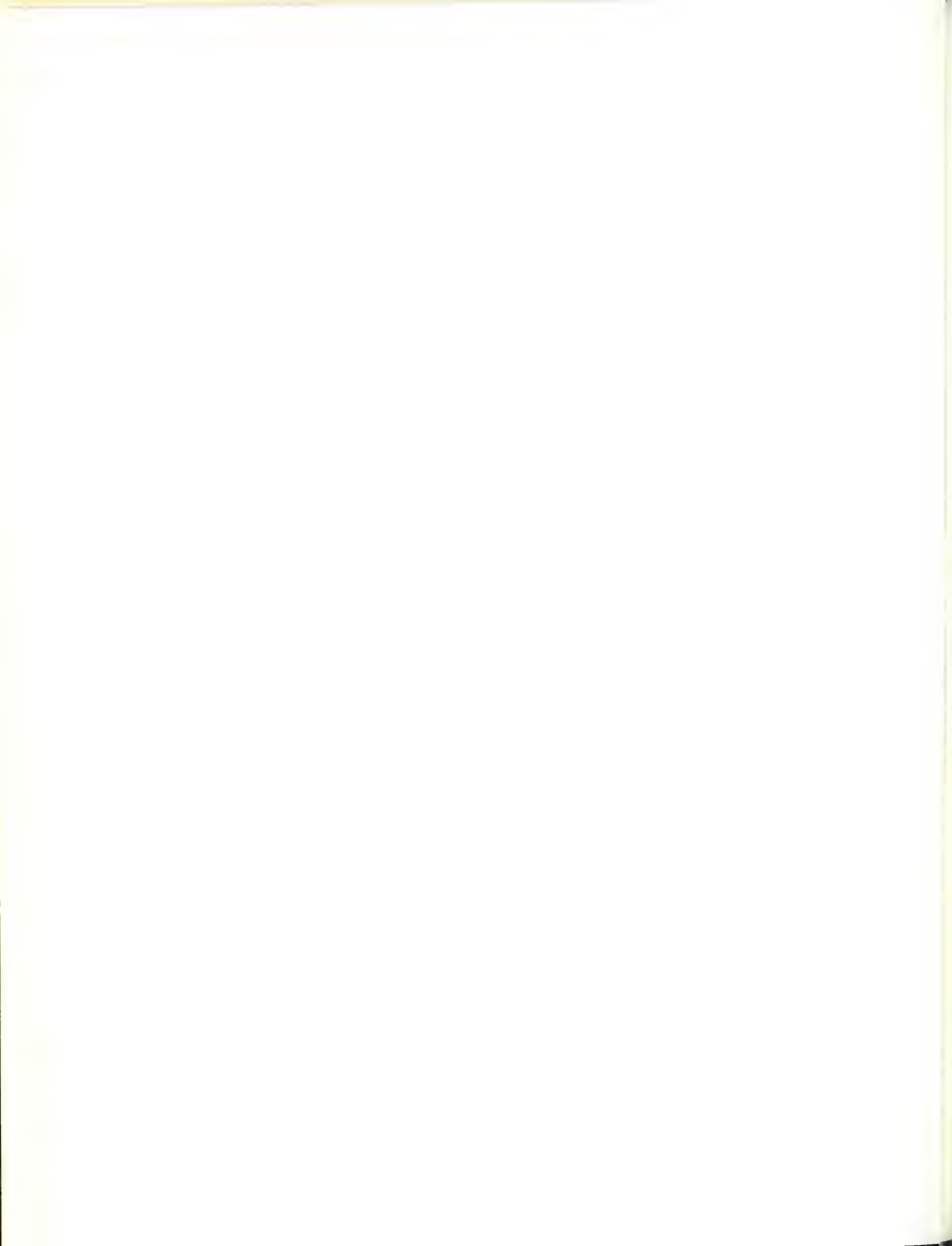
Clifford said to Phillips "Bradley and you must get through your printing by Friday. If the Supreme Court endures till then we will pack up and go home, arouse the people, and await the logic of events."

The "logic of events" was a favorite phrase of the secessionists. Phillips says "They reckoned upon getting the revolution well under way, and afterwards trusting to the 'logic of events.'"

Stanton mentioned that General Scott, who was at the head of the Army, had prevailed on the President to send for two more batteries.

Stanton was an old democrat, without as he, himself, said, affiliation with Republican leaders, neither was he in the councils of Mr. Lincoln and his friends, yet he accepted the entire responsibility of publishing to all whom it might concern, his profound sense of the impending peril, and his earnest appeal to all in authority to contribute their utmost energy for the preservation of the Union.

The day after the meeting at the office of the U. S. Attorney General, the gentlemen from Massachusetts sent a letter to the Hon. Horace Gray, explaining much that Mr. Stanton had told them, and especially indicating the route through Annapolis which Mr. Stanton favored. Mr. Gray was to apprise Governor Andrew of the contents of this letter.





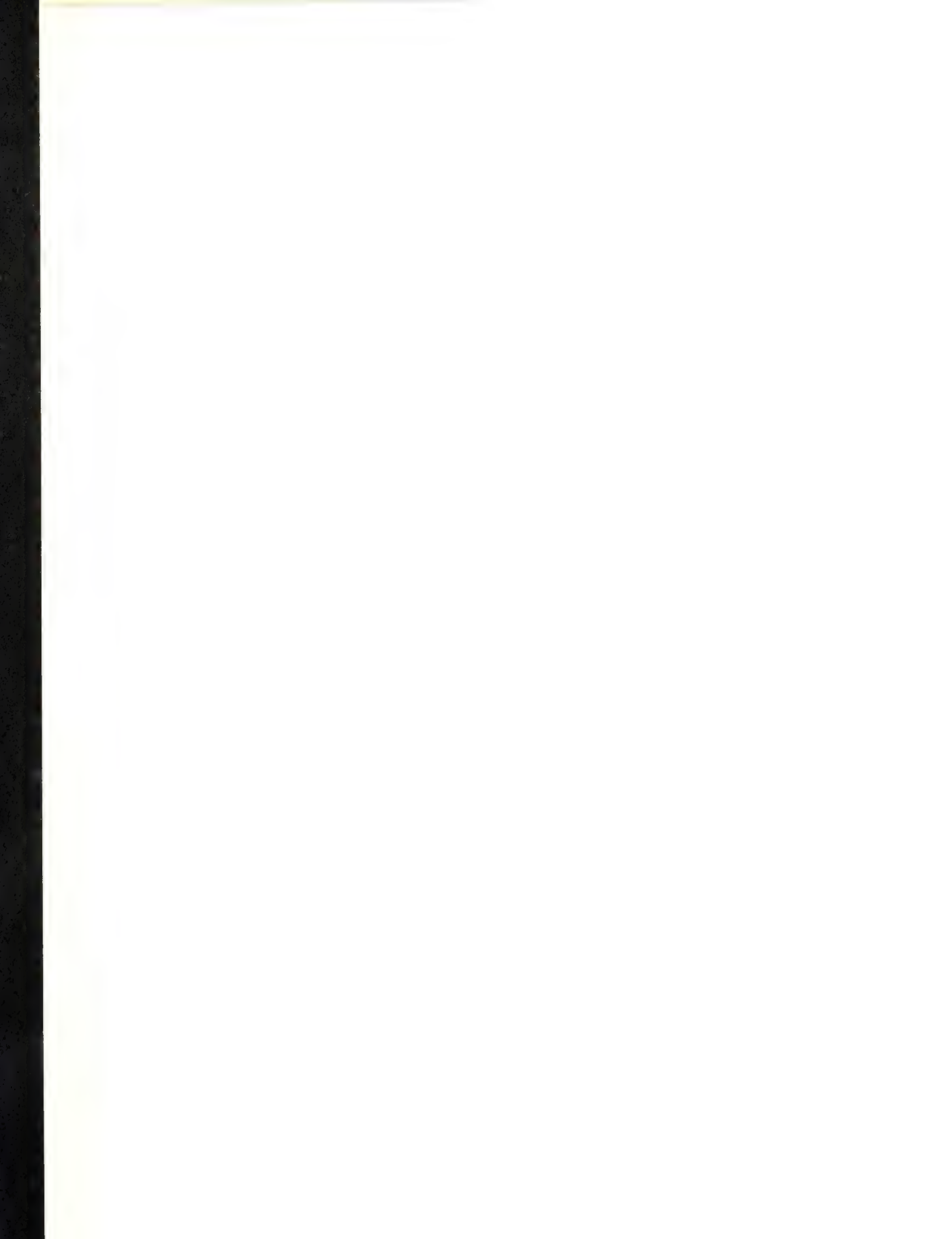
Mr. Felton of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad in a conversation with Mr. Clifford that day, said he was alarmed for his bridges.

On Friday, February 1st, Governor Clifford explained the elaborate details of the disputed boundary case to the Supreme Court, and then alluding to the troubled condition of the country, protested that in New England we should resort to no arms but those of the law to settle troubles between sister states. He used few words, but the placid dignity of his manner made a profound impression. When he got through the Chief Justice gave special directions to the Clerk, carefully notifying that the plat and surveys must be returned into court by the 1st of August. (See p. 47. Letter of C. A. Phillips.)

Feb. 2, 1861, Saturday, the commissioners left Washington. At the President street station they passed a long train, with pieces of artillery, caissons, horses, and the equipage of a light battery, followed by three cars full of soldiers. This was the West Point battery, which had left the Military Academy the day before, commanded by Lieut. Charles Griffin, afterwards a Division and Corps commander often mentioned in these pages. The orders of which Mr. Stanton had spoken had been executed with military promptness.

In a New York newspaper which they obtained at Trenton, Mr. Clifford read what caused him to exclaim "Our letter has reached Boston." Then he read that by request of Governor Andrew, the legislature of Massachusetts went the day before into secret session, in consequence of alarming news from Washington, and placed an emergency fund of \$100,000 at the disposal of the Governor.

In New York Mr. Phillips met John Bigelow, then connected with the New York *Evening Post*, who urged him to go to Albany to see Governor Morgan which the Massachusetts gentlemen refused to do. Mr. Bigelow called, bringing Mr. W. C. Bryant and a friend of the Governor,



but Phillips earnestly exhorted them to persuade Gov. Morgan to send some officer of the National Guard to confer at Washington with General Scott and the secretary of war, [Ex-Postmaster General Joseph Holt of Kentucky an honorable and patriotic Democrat, was then Secretary of War], and this timely warning in New York no doubt resulted in the readiness of the N. Y. 7th Regiment to go to Washington the following April. The commissioners reached Boston at 11 o'clock p. m. Monday Feb. 4th, going to the Tremont House, where they met more friends anxious for news. They seemed to be preparing for the worst, which simply meant war.

Mr. Phillips went to the State House at an early hour, and was cordially welcomed by Governor Andrew, who spoke of their letter as acceptable, not because it contained anything unexpected, but because it was the first responsible and compact statement which he could show to others.

Everything was bustle about the Governor's room. Military preparations were universal.

Later in the day, after Mr. Clifford's call on the Governor, Colonel Harrison Ritchie was ordered to proceed to Washington at once, to be in communication with Mr. Stanton and General Scott according to Clifford's advice.

In a sketch of Governor Andrew by Albert G. Browne Jr. military secretary to the Governor during the war, published in 1868, is the following in relation to the route to Washington by sea:—

"General Scott and Governor Andrew in consultation had provided in anticipation of obstruction of their route overland, that they should proceed by sea and be disembarked either under cover of the guns of Fort Mifflin at Baltimore, or else at Annapolis Md., and steamers were kept for weeks in readiness at his (the Governor's) bidding, to transport them to the Chesapeake."

This in point of time was January and February, 1861. Fort Mifflin was built in the form of a star, the guns



being placed on the projections. Towards the city of Baltimore there were open and level grounds affording an opportunity for 50,000 men to manœuvre. The walls were earth embankments, not more than six to eight feet in height. Mr. Phillips thus refers in his article to what occurred in March and April:—

"During the inauguration of President Lincoln, it was thought prudent to display a strong military force and to conceal a stronger one. All the avenues and approaches to the Capitol and even the roofs of buildings were guarded by armed men and artillery posted to sweep the streets. Little more than a month later, in consequence of the attack on Fort Sumter, the new President appealed to the country and 5,500 men of Massachusetts and 1,000 from Rhode Island with Governor Sprague at their head, moved almost at the tap of the drum."

#### LINCOLN'S CABINET.

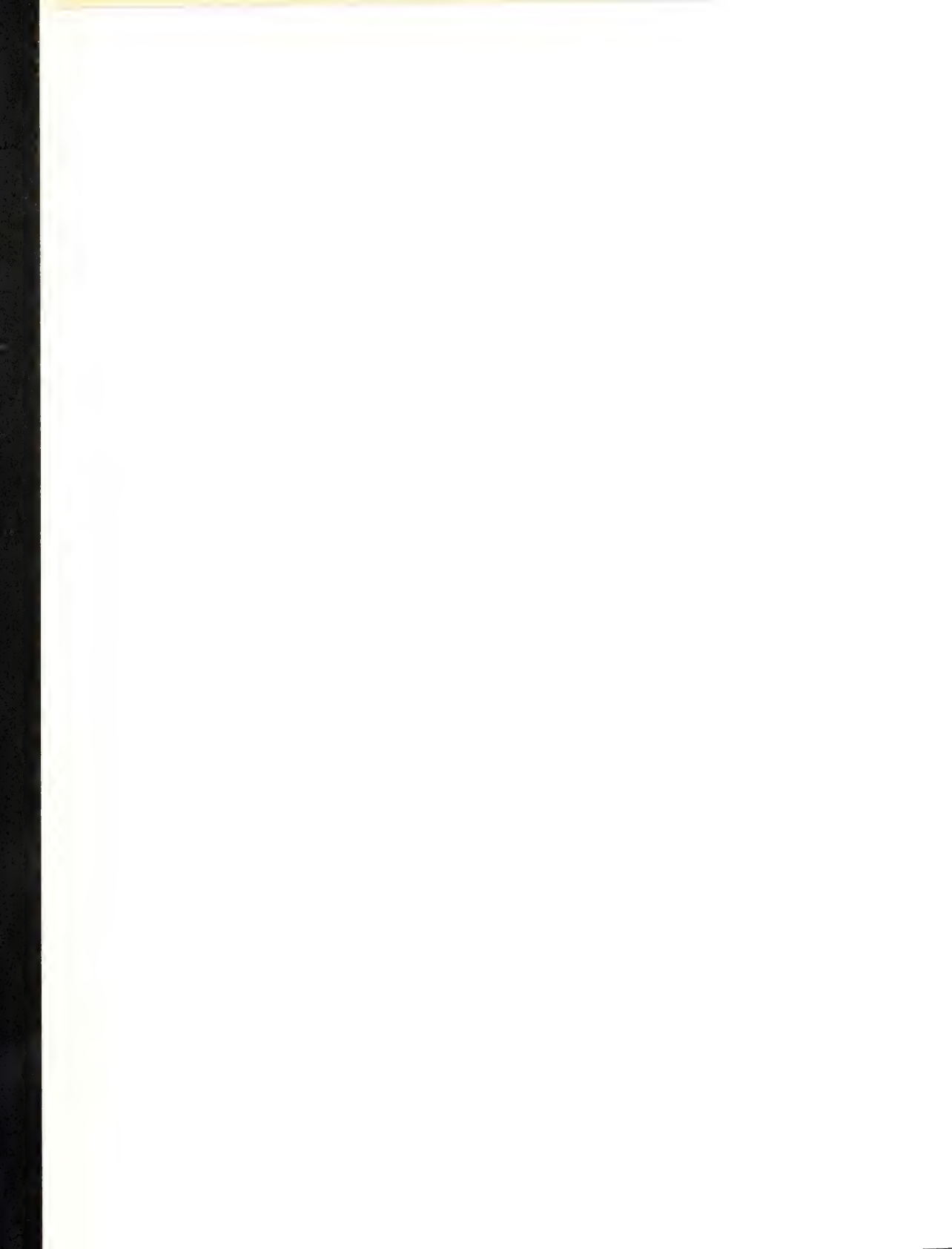
1555413

President Lincoln's Cabinet consisted of William H. Seward Secretary of State, Simon Cameron Secretary of War, Gideon Welles Secretary of the Navy, Salmon P. Chase Secretary of the Treasury, Edward Bates Attorney General. The Department of the Interior was in charge of Caleb Smith and the Post Office Department had Montgomery Blair at its head. These counsellors of the President exercised a marked influence on the conduct of the War in its earliest years.

March 9, 1861, the Confederate Congress passed an Act for the organization of an army, and the Confederate Secretary of War prophesied that the Confederate flag would float over the Capitol at Washington before the 1st of May, and it might float eventually over Faneuil Hall itself.

April 12, 1861, the attack was made by the Confederates on Fort Sumter, South Carolina, and 30,000,000 people, it was said, watched the contest by telegraph.

April 15, 1861, Abraham Lincoln President of the United States issued a proclamation calling for 75,000 men.



## THE ROADS TO WASHINGTON.

The railroad bridges of the Northern and Central Pennsylvania and the Philadelphia and Baltimore Railway, crossed several rivers within the boundaries, and on the night of the 19th of April, 1861, after the Massachusetts 6th Reg't. Infantry, had fought its way through the riotous city of Baltimore, the bridges over them were destroyed by the order of the authorities of the city.

Besides the route from the north to Washington through Baltimore, there were two other routes viz., one by the Potomac River, and the other by way of Annapolis. The route adopted by the New York 7th Regiment Infantry was followed for months by all succeeding regiments from the North. From Philadelphia there were two ways to Annapolis, one down the Delaware River, passing the capes of Chesapeake Bay, through the Bay and up the Severn River to the harbor of Annapolis, the other was to go to Havre de Grace, from Philadelphia, and from there to Annapolis. The N. Y. 7th took the latter route. All the rails were up from Annapolis to Annapolis Junction, and communication between Washington and the North by rail and wire, was destroyed. Telegraphing direct from Washington to New York, was suspended for nine days.

At this time Charles A. Phillips a younger brother of the Attorney General and afterwards captain of the Battery, having graduated from Harvard College class of 1860, at the age of 19, was studying law in a lawyer's office in New York. The following is an extract from his Journal.

New York. Monday, April 22, 1861: "I start on Wednesday to join Salem Zouaves—uniform ordered—revolver purchased and all ready. I am just packing this book away."

The Salem three months men were passing through



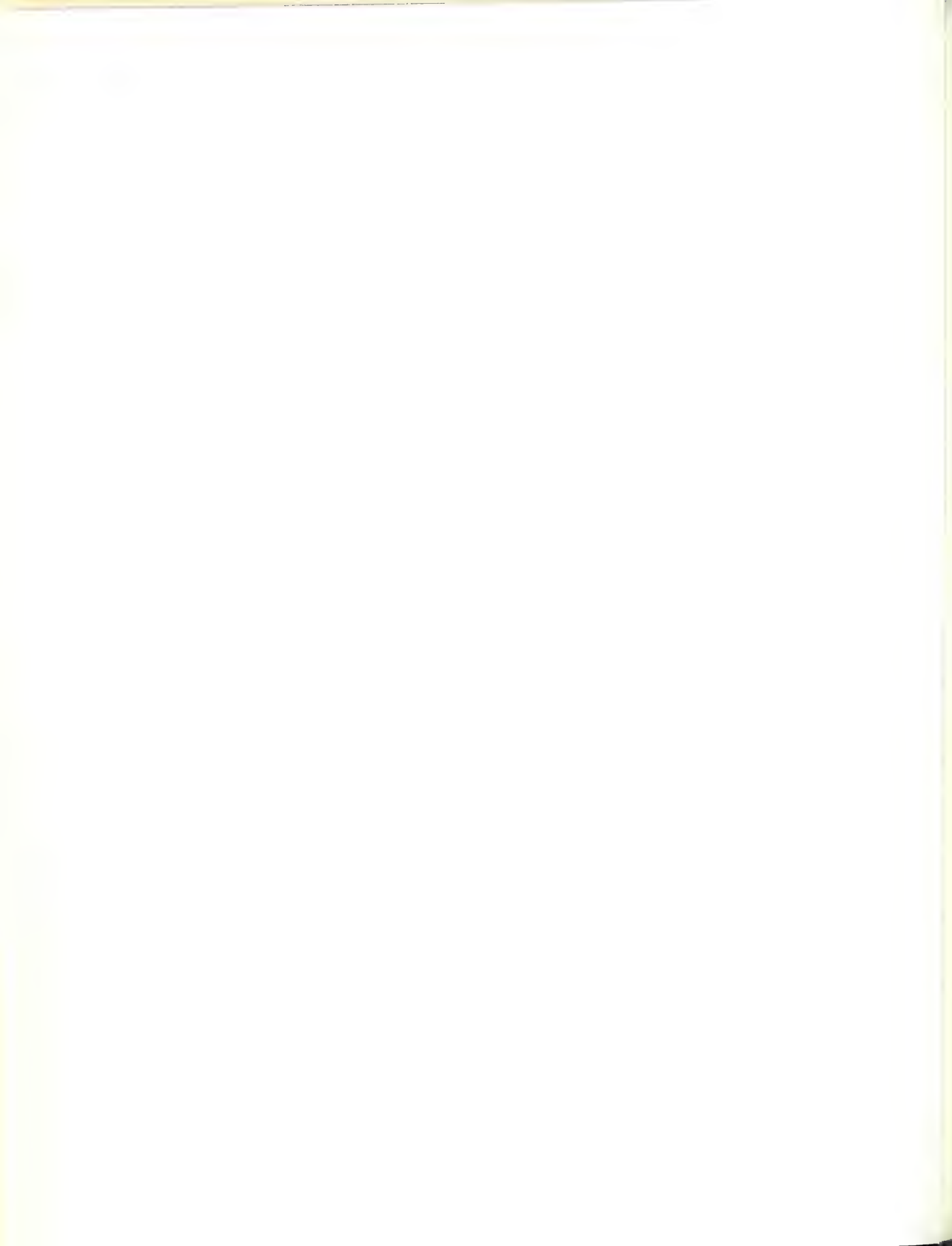


New York bound South. The next day he wrote home, "I am off for Washington. I have stood it as long as I could and can't keep away: I was asked to join the 9th Regiment here but I prefer to join the Salem Zouaves, so I am going on to join them and see if they will not take me. I shall start at the earliest opportunity, probably on Wednesday or Thursday, with the 9th Regiment. Massachusetts is doing nobly and exciting the admiration of all here."

Still in New York on April 24th he wrote to one of his brothers:—"I want to get on to Washington and join the Salem Light Infantry, but find I may have some difficulty in getting on. Can't you get me some certificate or something of the sort from the authorities in Massachusetts, that will put me through? I have no doubt Captain Devereaux will take me.

Can't you get a note from Gov. Andrew passing me on to Washington as a recruit to the S. L. I.? They are rather short of men, only 64, and ought to be glad to get me. I am determined to go, somehow, and if you can get me something of the sort I can get an opportunity to leave with the 9th Reg't. which will leave here no earlier than Friday afternoon, and probably not before Saturday. Missing these, I can probably get a chance very soon. I prefer a Massachusetts regiment. Please see what you can do for me."

The advice he received from his brother was that if he was to join the Salem Zouaves, or Light Infantry, he must go home and start from Massachusetts. Another brother Edward W. Phillips afterwards lieutenant in the 50th Massachusetts Infantry, had joined the Fourth Battalion. The New York Seventh Regiment arrived in Washington at noon of April 25th and were cheered by the Sixth Massachusetts outside the Capitol as they approached the station. For five days Washington had been isolated from the



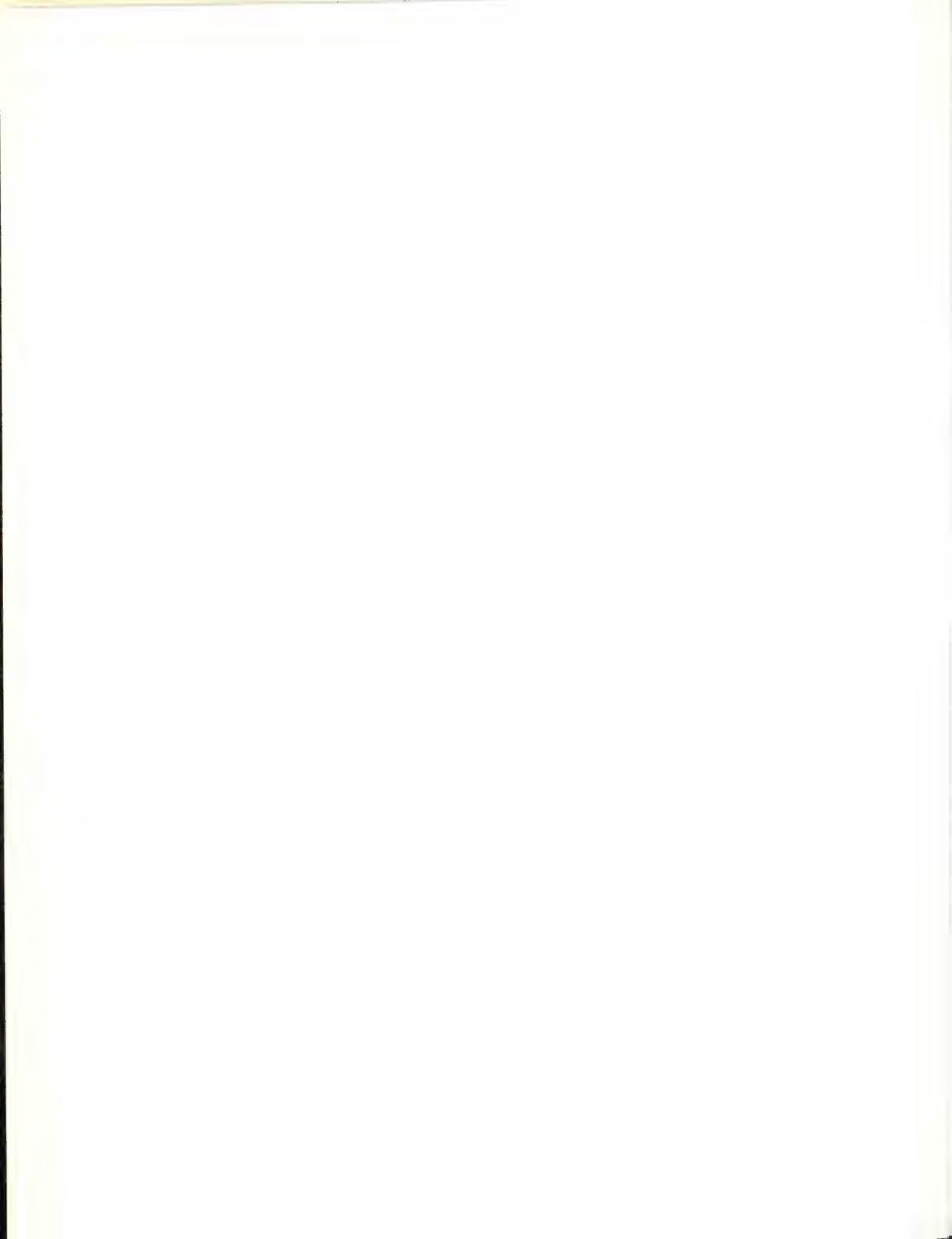
rest of the world, defended only by a small force of Regulars and District Militia, the Massachusetts Sixth Regiment, and citizens, including congressmen from the western states; not more than five thousand men under arms. The windows of the public buildings by order of General Scott were barricaded and earthworks were thrown up. The principal passage ways of the Treasury and the Capitol were defended by howitzers which raked their length. Breastworks were set up in the Capitol made of the iron plates cast for the dome supported by barrels of cement and heaps of stone and timber. The basement of the building was used as a kitchen and bakery, and after communication with the North was resumed, troops bivouacked in the rotunda, and the chambers of the Senate and House were turned into barracks.

A large proportion of the incumbents of the public offices in all the Departments, had been retained by the incoming administration, and it was well known that among them were many spies and traitors, ready to give aid and encouragement to the enemy in the destruction of the Government to which they had taken the oath of allegiance. The Confederacy had a considerable force the whole line, from the Chesapeake Bay to Edward's Ferry, about 30 miles above the capital. Maryland was then mainly in hostile possession. Baltimore and Ashland Md. were in the hands of the insurgents. The White House and Treasury building might be destroyed by long range cannon aimed from Arlington Heights two miles away.

The number of troops then reported at Richmond under command of the rebel general Beauregard was 27,000 men, in addition to the Virginia troops in the vicinity of Washington.

The Long Bridge had been secured by General Scott, and the bridge at Georgetown had been rendered useless.

If taken, the capital could not have been retained against superior numbers, but the capture would have placed the



archives in the hands of the enemies of the Union. Washington was, however, in the words of President Lincoln, considered "safe for the country and the Constitution," after the Mass. 6th Regiment via Baltimore, and the New York 7th via Annapolis had arrived, although there was "great need of reinforcements."

#### PRIVATE OF MARINES.

C. A. Phillips instead of going to Washington as he proposed in his New York letters, went to Salem and as he recorded in his Journal of July 27th, 1861, "got a place as private of marines on board the Propeller 'Cambridge' owned by the State of Massachusetts and the underwriters of Boston.

Sergeant of Marines JOHN DOVE.

Corporal CHAS. J. LEE."

There were other Salem young men on this transport.

#### FOUR LETTERS OF C. A. PHILLIPS.

(BOSTON, MASS.)

"PROPELLER CAMBRIDGE T WHARF.

Wednesday Evening, May 1, 1861.

We got on board here about two hours ago. and are just sitting down. Yesterday we did nothing but drill a little, get caps etc. About 5 o'clock we were dismissed for the night, and I went out to Cambridge and spent the night with Fox and Scott. Fox was keeping guard at the Arsenal in the rain till 9 o'clock this morning. We reported at 9 o'clock, and after loafing round a little while, we signed a receipt for equipments etc. and then the Articles, and took an oath of allegiance. After this we were dismissed till 3, and Huntington and I went over to Jamaica Plain; our uniforms passing us over the road free. At half past two we got our uniforms, and started for Roxbury with the Sergeant. Our uniform consists of a dark blue fatigue



cap with a bugle in front, dark blue frock coat with brass buttons and yellow trimmings, and light blue pants, altogether a snug looking uniform. After standing in the rain some time we got into a car and started for Roxbury. Arriving at the Sergeant's we stumbled into the middle of an Irish picnic party and a good many small boys. The Sergeant—John Dove—has a pretty little house and quite a large estate, into which we marched and paraded for a little time, after which we marched into the house, stacked our arms in the back parlor, and then marched into the front parlor to be introduced to the notabilities. Here we found quite a crowd gathered to receive us, particularly young ladies. After a short interval of conversation, we adjourned to the dining-room and prepared to pitch in. The Sergeant had prepared quite a little collation of oysters, ham, corned beef, salad, coffee, lemonade etc. to which you may be assured we did ample justice, particularly as I had had no dinner. After this we returned immediately to our quarters and were ordered to prepare to go on board. Accordingly we shouldered our knapsacks and haversacks, took our revolvers, formed, and marched down State Street.

Here we got our first taste of glory.

The small boys hurrahed, the people stood still and looked, and for a short time we were the centre of attraction. Our men are pretty good looking, and a pretty good set of fellows. Their names are Sergeant John Dove, Corporal C. J. Lee, Privates James Turner, Andrew Miller, Albert Upton. ——— Arnold, Ben Nichols, C. E. Pond, ——— Cutler, ——— Henry, Frank Pope, W. D. Huntington, C. A. Phillips.

When we got to the wharf we found the 'Cambridge' lying ready to take in her guns, which were on the wharf: two 8 in. to go forward, one small brass to go on the quarter deck, another ditto to go forward. We are quartered in the state rooms,—3 in a room—opening into the cabin.





Huntington, Lee and I are in one room. Our state rooms are first rate and our accommodations excellent. At this moment we are most of us sitting around the cabin table. 78 bunks have been fitted up amidships to carry two men in each, recruits. We shall sail tomorrow for Fort Monroe and Annapolis. Our Articles bind us for 30 days unless sooner discharged."

"PROPELLER CAMBRIDGE

OFF CAPE COD

May 2, 1861.

As I shall get a chance to send a letter at Holmes Hole by William Lee I have come down from deck to write a little. To continue my journal which I sent by Mr. Huntington:—Last evening we turned into our state rooms and enjoyed a good night's rest till about 7 o'clock. As the cook had neglected to provide for us we went on shore to get breakfast. At half past nine having returned to the boat, we were put on guard at the gangways and on the wharf, while we took on board our guns:—two 8 in. forward, one 12 pounder brass gun on the forecastle, and one 12 pound rifled brass gun on the quarter deck. From 9 and one half to 11 and one half, I was keeping guard on the wharf, my musket gaining weight very rapidly. At 11 and one half we cast off, and steamed down the harbor, saluting Fort Independence as we passed. We were too far off, however, to distinguish any faces.

At noon our duties proper commenced, and so far consist in mounting guard three at a time, two at the after companion way, and prevent any but officers, marines, etc. from passing, and one on the lower deck over the forward hatchway, to prevent any smoking, fire etc., the powder being stored below. The last guard carries a cutlass, and the post is not considered a very desirable one, as it helps on sea-sickness very much. The weather was very rough coming out, the number stretched out on deck was very

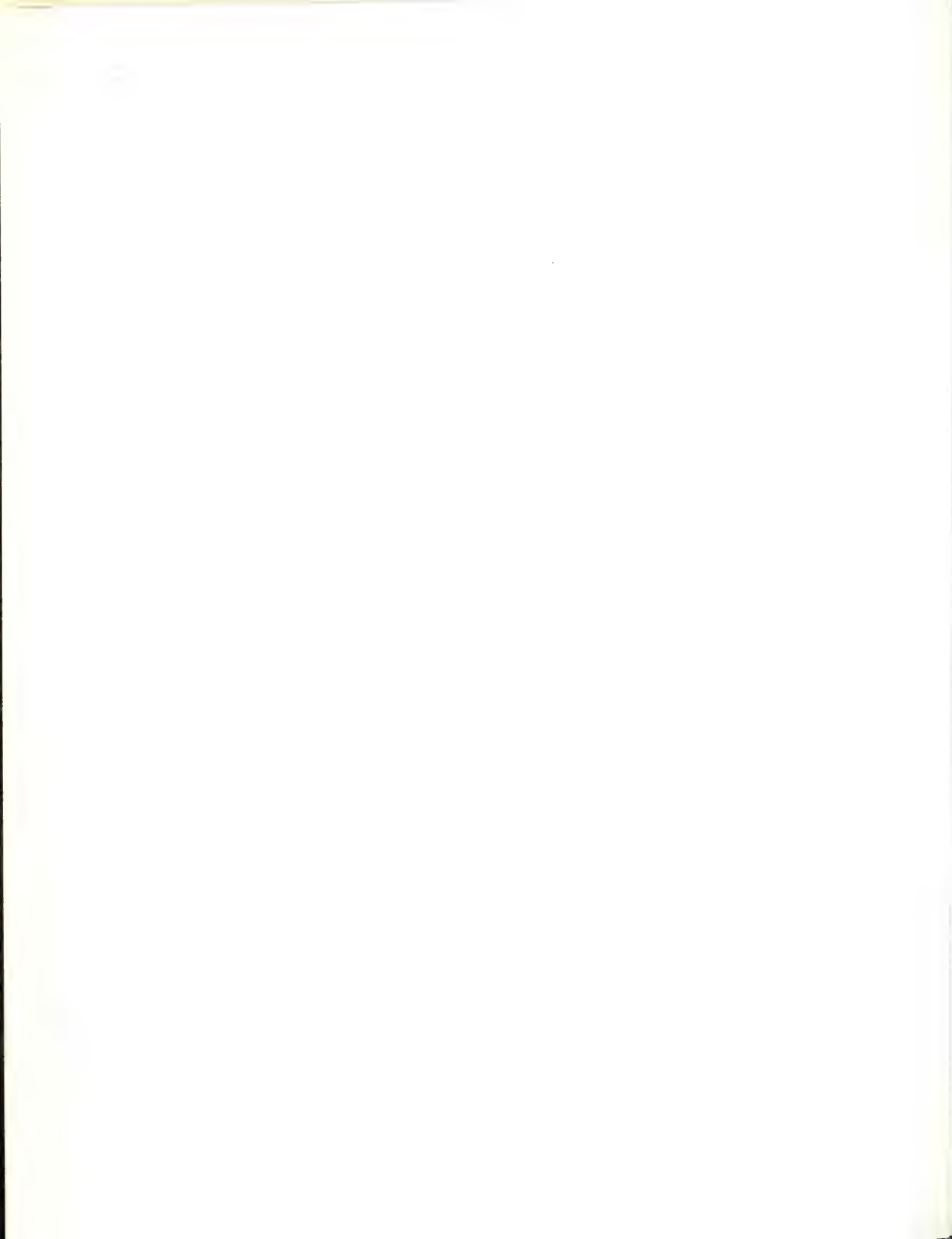


large, and I fared like the rest, but having now cast up my account and eaten a good dinner I feel all right. We dine in the cabin, faring like the officers on roast beef, ham, potatoes etc. Owing to the number of officers on board we have been crammed a little, 6 being quartered in each state room: but as we shall keep watch and watch, this will not trouble us much. The watches will be set tonight at 8 o'clock. There are two watches of six each, four hours apiece, two at the companion way, two at the powder hatch, and two on deck. We have a number of troops on board, I do not know how many, bunked amidships. We shall stop at Fort Monroe, then at Annapolis, and thence, nobody knows where."

WASHINGTON May 9. 1861.

4 o'clock P. M.

My last letter left me at Fort Monroe, Saturday night. Sunday morning we hauled up to the wharf and landed about a hundred troops, and then took in six eight inch Columbiads and 1200 shells to carry to Washington. This was quite a job as there were no machines for handling the heavy guns. The shells were passed in quite easily, a string of riflemen forming, and passing them from hand to hand. During the day we got two hours leave of absence, and visited the Fort. This is a tremendous fort and a very pleasant place. The grounds are planted with apple trees and the officers' quarters are surrounded with gardens full of roses and flowers of all kinds, in full bloom. After exploring the Fort thoroughly we went down to see the big gun which stands out on the point on a concrete platform, solitary and alone. They say they won't allow it to be fired, because it breaks all the windows in the Fort. After getting in a part of our cargo, we hauled into the stream and lay there over night, keeping a strict guard, to guard against any attack. In the morning we found the steamer 'Resnake' lying alongside, and while speculating



as to her character and passengers, her boat came alongside with Capt. Devereaux and Lieut. Putnam of the Salem Zouaves, who were going to Washington in the 'Roanoke.' By this time we could see the fellows on the quarter deck getting leave of absence. We started in the ship's boat for the 'Roanoke.' The wind was blowing heavily, and I had a tremendous long oar, but Cambridge training showed itself, and very soon we arrived. We met quite a cordial reception on deck, and had quite a jolly time till our leave expired and we reluctantly rowed back. Luckily, however, we did not part here: the 'Roanoke' wanted to go up the Potomac, and having no guns hardly dared to go alone, not knowing how many batteries might have been erected along the shore.

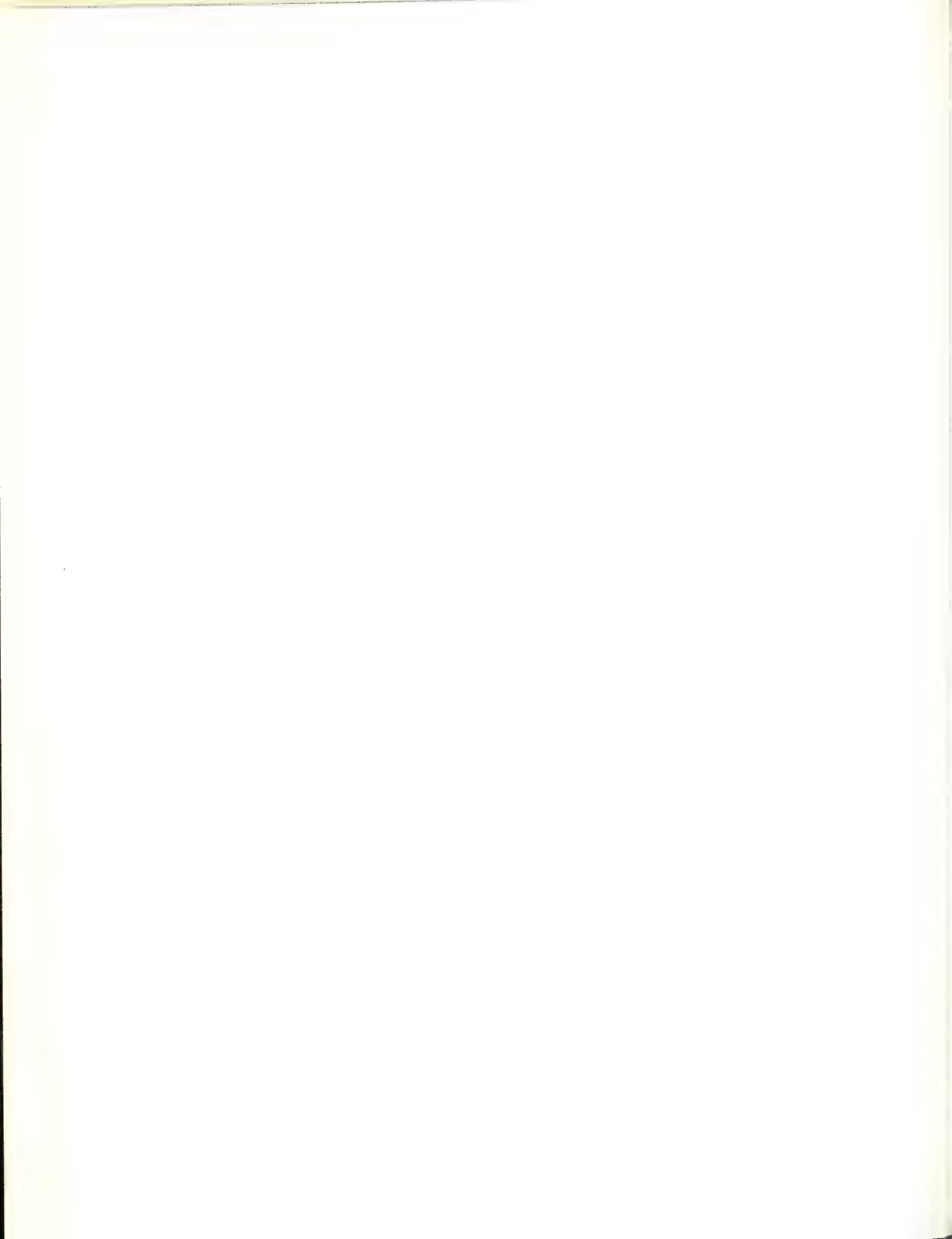
As we were armed and our new Captain not unwilling to try our guns, we changed our destination and agreed to go as a convoy.

About 11.30 Monday morning, having got all our cargo on board, we steamed off up Chesapeake Bay in company with the 'Roanoke.' The weather was squally and unpleasant, but nevertheless we contrived to enjoy the sail. About 8.30 we arrived in the mouth of the Potomac and anchored for the night.

About 20 of Dodd's Rifles turned out to assist us in the watch, and we began to realize that we were in an enemy's country. We were armed with rifles and revolvers loaded and capped, and had ten rounds of ball cartridge in our boxes. Our orders were not to allow any boat to approach the ship, but to hail it and to fire if they did not sheer off, and, as the Captain observed, to fire very quick.

However, we were not molested, as the secessionists evidently did not care to attempt to cut out an armed steamer.

The rifle which we carry on night watch, is a very pretty one, with a large bore and rather heavy, but very neat and serviceable.



Early in the morning we started up the Potomac, the 'Roanoke' ahead with a pilot. The day was lovely, and we had a splendid sail up the river. We saw nothing of the batteries thrown up along the river and we think they must be somewhere else. However, we were all ready for them; our guns were shotted and run out, and all of us, who were not on duty, were ordered to be between decks to serve the big guns.

Acquia Creek was the point where we apprehended an attack, and as we approached it, the Captain told the gunners to get ready to be fired into. Our 8 inch gun on the port bow was cleared for action, the tackle run out, sight adjusted, and all the preparations made. As we approached the critical point the 'Roanoke' dropped back to give us the first chance, and we steamed ahead, expecting the battle to begin, every moment. All our hopes, however, were disappointed: our peaceful voyage was not interrupted, and we steamed past Fort Washington and Alexandria, where the secession flags have all disappeared, and made fast to the Arsenal wharf, after colliding with another propeller, which carried away the starboard fore shrouds.

The next day we commenced to unload, and as we were of no use we went into the city.

1st to the Capitol, where we found the Salem Zouaves quartered in the rear of the left wing behind the House of Representatives. The House was full of soldiers, writing letters. Lang Ward was at one desk, John Hodges at another, and by invitation of the Salem Zouaves we stopped to dinner and had a jolly time.

The dining room is very high studded, being the area on the side of the Capitol steps. Our dinner consisted of minced fish, bread, crackers, and coffee, and though not very luxurious fare we had a pleasant time, and a jollier crowd was never seen. We spent about the pleasantest time we have had since we left. We returned, according to orders, about six o'clock, just in time to see the 'Cambridge'





steaming up the river and passing through the bridge. Inquiring I found she had gone up to G street, so chartering an omnibus we started, and arrived on board at 8 o'clock; luckily finding the steamer, as we should have been locked up if found out after 9.30. This regulation is quite strict, a man was shot last night for not answering the post. It was about 2 o'clock in my watch, only a quarter of a mile off. I saw the flash and heard the report.

This morning I was up at the Capitol, then went down to the National Hotel to get a bath and some dinner. Washington is quite warlike, regiments parading, all round, and almost every other house being used as barracks. Colonel Ellsworth's regiment is very ubiquitous, and you see them everywhere. They keep guard at the Capitol, where, however, our uniforms pass us everywhere, and last night they turned out to put out a fire at Willard's. They entirely took the shine off the Washington firemen. This morning they were pulling down the wall as we passed. The 5th Mass. Regiment is quartered at the Treasury Department.

We are lying at the foot of G street, discharging and repairing. We shall probably sail in 4 or 5 days, though there is some talk of selling the ship to the Government and discharging the crew. I don't think however, this amounts to anything."

Fort Washington mentioned in this letter was on the Potomac River six miles below Alexandria. It was a mere water battery, intended for offensive action against the river side.

This trip on the "Cambridge" lasted ten days, and Phillips went back to the study of law which he continued in Boston in the office of his brother Hon. Stephen H. Phillips. From there he wrote the following letter:—

"BOSTON, JUNE 10, 1861.

I think the Government has shown great energy, and the



movements of the Army seem to be well planned and eminently successful. Of course such dashing exploits as the ride through Fairfax C. H. appear to display more energy than the advance of a large army, but like the charge of Balaklava they do not decide the event of a war. It is only an army of inferior strength that needs to try such experiments. Scott's policy, I take it, is to use to the utmost the advantages he has in numbers and position, and never to allow the enemy a chance to fight except at a disadvantage. Such appears to be the plan at Harper's Ferry.

Our forces are advancing from every direction, in overwhelming numbers, and the Southerners, if they remain, must inevitably be surrounded and starved out, or fight Scott on his own ground.

So with Richmond, a strong column will soon move down from the North on this city, while Butler will co-operate on the South. If the rebels, therefore, take position on either side of the city for its defense, they will be answered by the advance of the column on the other side. They will thus be unable to check the march of either column at a distance from the city, and must take up a position near Richmond and fight it out. This, I have no doubt, is the way in which the first battle will be fought, and Scott is not the cautious general we think him, if he loses it. Of the success of this plan I have no doubt, but its success depends much on careful preparation, which may account for the apparent sluggishness of the movements. But still, the advance goes on: day after day we hear of military movements, small in themselves, but in a week amounting to a great deal. Now it is the attack of a company on Fairfax Court House, to be followed by a regiment in a day or two; now a regiment attacks Philippi and in three days 10,000 men occupy the town; or General Butler occupies the point of Newport News, and in a week we find 5000 men advanced 10 or 15 miles into the country. So the movement goes on. The first attack attracts people's atten-



tion, but few pay any attention to the advance of the troops afterwards. For the last week I have kept an account of military movements, and I have on my list 69 regiments of volunteers now in active duty in Virginia and Maryland, besides several batteries of field artillery, battalions of rifles &c., and my list is by no means complete, for there must be 20 or 30 regiments, at least, in these states, of which I have no account.

This does not include the troops at Cairo, encamped in Ohio, at Chambersburg, in Massachusetts, Staten Island &c., which would more than double the number. This certainly does not look like a lack of energy.

In addition to the plan I have sketched out, the approach of cool weather will probably witness an attack upon Charleston and New Orleans: the navy yards at Norfolk and Pensacola will be repossessed, and a fleet and army will move from Cairo down the Mississippi. Thus threatened on every side I do not see what the rebels can do but surrender.

In the meantime I am getting a little anxious about our foreign relations: the attitude of England is anything but friendly. Spain seems to have taken advantage of our dissensions to seize St. Domingo, and the rejection of Baringame is a gratuitous insult on the part of Austria. I should not be surprised if a general war broke out within a year, with England, Spain, and Austria,—and perhaps Prussia,—on one side, and France, Russia, and the United States on the other. Better this than that we should descend so low as to bid against our rebel subjects for the favor of foreign nations.

I am studying law in Stephen's Boston office, and shall not, probably, return to New York."

Now approaches the 1st of August when the papers relating to the Rhode Island boundary were to be returned into court, and Charles A. Phillips was employed by his elder brother as special messenger. The commissioner says



in his article in the *Sun*, referring to this mission, "He got through without difficulty. Upon completing his business a clerk in the office from a window in the west front of the capitol showed him rebel flags at Hall's Hill. The enemy never got nearer than Hall's Hill."

In a note dated Washington Aug. 1, 1861, written to his brother young Phillips says:—

"Immediately after my arrival I went up to the capitol. . . . I was in the Senate this morning, and left while Breckenridge was making a speech against confiscating property in the seceded states."

---

The utterances of the Southern press were read with great interest at the North. Said the *Richmond Whig*, as quoted in the *Boston Journal* of Aug. 23, 1861:—

"They are alarmed for Washington, but they have not yet begun to tremble for New York and Boston. As England and France knew that there could be no stable peace with the treacherous, knavish, cowardly and cruel Chinese, short of Peking, so we know that there can be no lasting peace with the Chinese counterparts on this continent until Confederate cannon overawe New York, and Confederate legions bivouac on Boston Common. Boston is the Peking of the Western China; and 'On to Peking' is the watchword of Southern armies. Washington is a mere circumstance."





## CHAPTER III.

### THE COMPOSITION OF THE BATTERY.

"Whether in camp, on the march, or on the field of battle, there was a strength, an evident power in the artillery service that left an impression on the mind of the spectator not liable to be effaced, and the scenes in war are more terribly suggestive than an array of batteries in position, ready to open fire at the word of command."

EDWIN FORBES.

The artillery has been esteemed a valuable arm of the service, on account of its capability of inflicting so much more loss than it receives, and the many changes in the composition of the light batteries, which followed the fortunes of the Army of the Potomac, as well as in their organization, prove their adaptability to the requirements of the variable demands, and that the general disposition of them, as reduced or enlarged in their capacity, occupied a large share of the attention of the authorities whose deliberations determined these changes, in the state legislatures, in Congress, and at General Head Quarters.

Her batteries of light artillery were sent out from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts as independent batteries, known by numbers from the "First" to the "Sixteenth." This suited the requirements at the time, for at first single batteries were attached directly to infantry Brigades,—one battery to each Brigade,—and they "camped and marched, and fought together." Some batteries in other states were independent, and some were formed into regiments, like the Regular artillery of 12 batteries each, designated by letters from A to L, but these were, like the rest, passed around from one Division or Corps to another, even after



the artillery was grouped into Brigades, and in that way attached to a Division or Corps, forming a part of it and under the orders of its commander, and there was a distinct organization called the "Artillery Brigade," and the "Artillery Corps," with a chief who had his staff as in infantry or cavalry.

The only reason for preference seemed to be that in the regimental organization, although assigned like the rest to temporary service, there was chance for promotion for the officers, while as independent batteries there was no such chance.

In respect to Massachusetts it will be shown that notwithstanding all the influence that could be brought to bear upon the War Department to effect the change, her batteries came back as they went out, designated by numbers and independent of each other, and had no right to be classed in any sense as a regiment and designated by letters, yet in the spring of 1863, when it was thought expedient to consolidate the artillery, General Orders No. 86 compelled the Fifth Mass. Battery, although not a part of any regiment, to accept the regimental company or battery designation of a letter "E."

#### CONSOLIDATION OF ARTILLERY.

General Orders  
No. 86.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON April 2, 1863.

1. Under the authority contained in Sections 19 and 20 of the act "for enrolling and calling out the national forces, and for other purposes," approved March 3, 1863, it is ordered that for each and every regiment of the volunteer army *now reduced*, or that may be reduced hereafter, as set forth in said sections, consolidation shall be made in accordance with the following rules:

#### ARTILLERY.

3. Each regiment will be consolidated into *six*, or a *less number of batteries*, and the colonel, two majors, and one assistant surgeon, mustered out.



4. The companies and batteries formed by consolidation will be of the maximum strength, and will be organized as now directed by law and regulation. The first letters of the alphabet will be used to designate the companies. (See p. 22. The "E" on the caps. Peacock.)

5. The company officers—commissioned and non-commissioned—rendered supernumerary, with those enumerated in the foregoing, will be mustered out of service at the date of consolidation, all other officers and non-commissioned officers will be retained.

6. The officers to be retained will be selected by the Division and Corps commanders, under the instructions of the Commanding General of the Army or Department, from among the most efficient officers of the respective regiments.

III. The following are the sections of the Act referred to, and under which the foregoing is ordered:

Sec. 19. *And be it further enacted*, That whenever a regiment of volunteers of the same arm, from the same state, is reduced to one-half the maximum number prescribed by law, the President may direct the consolidation of the companies of such regiment, Provided, That no company so formed shall exceed the maximum number prescribed by law. When such consolidation is made, the regimental officers shall be reduced in proportion to the reduction in the number of companies.

Sec. 20. *And be it further enacted*, That whenever a regiment is reduced below the minimum number allowed by law, no officers shall be appointed in such regiment, beyond those necessary for the command of such reduced numbers.

By order of the Secretary of War.

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
*Assistant Adjutant General.*

---

The legislature of Massachusetts, mindful of its responsibility hastened to put on its passage the following Act:—

Chapter 243, Section 2, of an Act in Addition to an Act concerning the militia.

The Militia so organized shall consist of at least one regiment of cavalry to consist of twelve troops or companies: *one regiment of artillery of not more than twelve batteries*, and eight regiments of infantry of ten companies each, which shall be officered in the manner prescribed by the laws of the United States and of this State concerning the Militia.

Approved April 29, 1863.



## NOTES OF CAPTAIN NATHAN APPLETON.

"That I gave some time and thought to the improvement of the Light Artillery service of our Army during the long months of comparative idleness of winter quarters, 1863 and '64, can be judged by the letters I wrote to the Secretary of War, Hon. Edwin M. Stanton, Hon. Alexander H. Rice M. C. from Massachusetts, and a long article to the 'Army and Navy Journal' which I do not think was published:—

## TO SECRETARY STANTON.

HON. EDWIN M. STANTON.

*Sir.*

Ever since the Rebellion has existed, the Light Artillery of Massachusetts has been organized as so many independent batteries, each commanded by a captain.

The Governor and Senators of Massachusetts, I am informed, and some of the Artillery officers of the state, have interested themselves in the plan of having the batteries united in a regiment, with the appointment of field officers. I consider that it personally concerns all those connected with the Mass. Light Artillery, and I lately received a communication from one of Governor Andrew's staff on the subject, who said that a request from General Sykes,—Captain Martin 3d. Mass. Battery, is the chief of artillery of the Fifth Corps,—or from General Meade, to the Secretary of War, might have the desired effect.

This, at best, places the matter in uncertainty, and is an embassy which it would scarcely be becoming for one so young as myself (20 years of age) to undertake, unless so ordered, and I thought that I would write to you, and express freely my opinion on the subject.

That Massachusetts should have Field officers of Light





Artillery seems to me a right which she deserves, not merely in connection with other states that have regimental organizations,—and I believe that most of the states having Light Artillery enough to warrant it are so arranged,—but, also, in connection with her Cavalry and Infantry. For now there is a dead stop to promotion in Light Artillery, and some of the oldest and best tried officers of the state, who have served since the beginning of the war, and who do not wish to leave their favorite branch of the service, cannot get higher up the ladder than two bars. But, Sir, there is another consideration,—The Artillery Brigade of our Corps is commanded by a captain of Massachusetts. In the Brigade there are captains belonging to states having regimental organizations. In case of their promotion to field appointments in their regiments the Massachusetts captain would be ousted from his command.

I think that the subject of Artillery in the field is one about which little can be known except from actual experience. A Brigade of Infantry must generally act together, but it is not so with Artillery, for it has to do its work for the whole Corps. Some guns have to be put in one place, some in another, some rushed to the front, some kept in reserve, and the caissons must be put in some sheltered spot. This must be all personally attended to by the Chief of Artillery, and in addition, the position of everything remembered, while he is responsible for everything.

A Brigade of Infantry is commanded by a brigadier general or a colonel: a Brigade of Artillery often by a captain!

It seems to me that a man commanding one hundred and fifty men, one hundred, odd, horses, six guns and six caissons, in all about fifty thousand dollars worth of United States property, and who has an independent command, should rank higher than one commanding one hundred men and one hundred muskets, and who is under the direct command of another.

Why cannot the Artillery be reorganized, and the chiefs



of Artillery be commissioned by the President, and the old plan of calling a battery a company be dropped?

Is not a battery of six guns as responsible a command as that which a major of Infantry generally has? For while regiments are constantly thinned a battery must be kept full to a certain complement, or its guns are worse than useless.

And, finally, is Massachusetts to be forgotten?

It may seem to you, sir, unbecoming for one so young as myself to write thus on this matter, but I think that in a democracy one cannot overrate the good or bad which he can individually perform, and I consider it the bounden duty of any one who has ideas which he thinks may accomplish good, to present them to those in places of authority.

I have the honor to be most respectfully yours.

NATHAN APPLETON  
2d. Lieut. 5th Mass. Battery.

HON. EDWIN M. STANTON.

This very contingency mentioned in my letter to Secretary Stanton, occurred when General Grant came in person to the Army of the Potomac, and consolidated the corps.

When the Third Corps was united to the Fifth, its chief of Artillery was Colonel Charles S. Wainwright of the First N. Y. Regiment of Light Artillery, and as he ranked Captain A. P. Martin, he naturally assumed command of the Artillery Brigade. I was on his staff later as I had been on that of Captain Martin.

In a letter I wrote my brother W. S. Appleton from this camp about this date, I described Captain Martin's command as follows:—

'Our Brigade is commanded by Captain Martin of the 3d. Mass. Battery, and he has as big a staff and as responsible a place as any Brigadier. It consists of the 3d. Mass. Lt. Walcott, 12 lb. Napoleons; 5th Mass. 3 inch; Battery D,



5th U. S. Griffin's Battery, commanded by Hazlett killed at Gettysburg, now by Lieut. Rittenhouse, Parrotts 3 inch; Batteries F & K. 3d. U. S. four guns 12 lb. Napoleons, commanded by Lieut. Barstow; Battery L, 1st Ohio 12 lb. Napoleons, Capt. Gibbs; Battery C, 1st N. Y. 4 guns, 3 inch Ordnance,—same as 5th Mass.,—Capt. Barnes.'

I find this at the end of my letter:—'And now I want you, and some other influential people in Boston, to go to work, with John A. Andrew to get the light batteries formed regimentally, with a colonel, lieutenant colonel, 3 majors, adjutants, quartermasters &c &c. It ought to be done, as it stops promotion, keeps down pay, and gives the responsible command of a Brigade,—over 30 pieces of Artillery,—to a captain. Moreover the other states are organized and Massachusetts kept behind. If the matter was brought before the Governor in the right manner I think he would fix it all right. If I am in Boston this winter I shall try to do something about it myself.

Another thing is, the Mass. Batteries ought to have conscripts *immediately*. I have no doubt but what there are enough at Long Island today to fill them all. This should be attended to, as it is hard on the men to have to do Guard Duty so often.'"

---

At the time this letter was sent home by Lieut. Appleton the Legislature of 1864, had assembled.

Jonathan E. Field was president of the Senate, Alexander H. Bullock was speaker of the House of Representatives. John A. Andrew had been elected Governor for the fourth time, Joel Hayden was Lieut.-Governor. Warner and Oliver were Secretary and Treasurer as in 1861. The United States senators were the same, Sumner and Wilson, but there had been some changes in the members of Congress. Some of the old ones had dropped out. The new ones were Oakes Ames, Samuel Hooper, George S. Boutwell, John D. Baldwin and William B. Washburn. Edwin



M. Stanton attorney general in Buchanan's Cabinet was U. S. Secretary of War.

LETTER FROM GOVERNOR ANDREW TO THE SENATORS  
AND REPRESENTATIVES FROM MASSACHUSETTS  
IN CONGRESS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,  
BOSTON, May 5, 1864.

To the Honorable, the Senators, and the Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the Congress of the United States:

I beg to renew my previous representations of the anomaly existing in the organization of the light artillery arm of the volunteer forces of the United States, by means of which an injustice is done to certain states relatively to certain other states and their officers. I will illustrate by the example of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts the nature of this injustice, selecting that Commonwealth for the illustration only because I am more familiar with the facts concerning it, but being informed and believing that similar injustice is practised towards others also.

There are in the volunteer service of the United States, at this time, sixteen batteries of light artillery from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

The Government, having power in the premises to grant or to withhold organization, denies a regimental organization for these batteries, or any portion of them, while it concedes such organization for the artillery batteries of the states of Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island, certainly, and perhaps to some other states.

This discrimination creates great dissatisfaction among the artillery troops, and with reason, for a man enlisting into an Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, or Rhode Island battery, has a road open to promotion to be a colonel, while in the Massachusetts batteries, no regimental organization existing, a soldier can rise to no grade higher than captain.

Among the sixteen batteries of Massachusetts, is one which has been in the field since April 19, 1861, having accompanied the column which opened communication between Annapolis and Washington, and having re-enlisted for three years at the end of the three months' term of enlistment.

[This was the First Light Battery M. V. M. Major Asa M. Cook; Lieutenants Josiah Porter, Wm. H. McCartney, Caleb C. E. Mortimer and Robert L. Sawin. It proceeded to Washington with the Fifth Mass. Infantry, April 20.





M. Stanton attorney general in Buchanan's Cabinet was U. S. Secretary of War.

LETTER FROM GOVERNOR ANDREW TO THE SENATORS  
AND REPRESENTATIVES FROM MASSACHUSETTS  
IN CONGRESS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS,  
EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,  
BOSTON, May 5, 1864.

To the Honorable, the Senators, and the Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in the Congress of the United States:

I beg to renew my previous representations of the anomaly existing in the organization of the light artillery arm of the volunteer forces of the United States, by means of which an injustice is done to certain states relatively to certain other states and their officers. I will illustrate by the example of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts the nature of this injustice, selecting that Commonwealth for the illustration only because I am more familiar with the facts concerning it, but being informed and believing that similar injustice is practised towards others also.

There are in the volunteer service of the United States, at this time, sixteen batteries of light artillery from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

The Government, having power in the premises to grant or to withhold organization, denies a regimental organization for these batteries, or any portion of them, while it concedes such organization for the artillery batteries of the states of Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island, certainly, and perhaps to some other states.

This discrimination creates great dissatisfaction among the artillery troops, and with reason, for a man enlisting into an Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, or Rhode Island battery, has a road open to promotion to be a colonel, while in the Massachusetts batteries, no regimental organization existing, a soldier can rise to no grade higher than captain.

Among the sixteen batteries of Massachusetts, is one which has been in the field since April 19, 1861, having accompanied the column which opened communication between Annapolis and Washington, and having re-enlisted for three years at the end of the three months' term of enlistment.

[This was the First Light Battery M. V. M. Major Asa M. Cook: Lieutenants Josiah Porter, Wm. H. McCartney, Caleb C. E. Mortimer and Robert L. Sawin. It proceeded to Washington with the Fifth Mass. Infantry, April 20.



1861, by way of Annapolis, and was stationed at the Relay House, 10 miles from Baltimore.]

A majority of all the other Massachusetts batteries entered the field near the beginning of the war. They have served everywhere with honor: their officers have been tested and sifted by this long experience, and they deserve, by military accomplishment and meritorious service, equal opportunity for promotion with the officers of any other state.

I have frequently, but in vain, by letter and by officers of my staff specially deputed for the purpose, asked for them from the Secretary of War such equal opportunity, which would be afforded by authorizing the appointment of field officers of light artillery for the Massachusetts batteries in the same manner as for the batteries of Illinois, Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island.

The reasons which are assigned, in reply, by the Secretary of War, for thus withholding from one state what he grants to others, are:—

1. The averment that he accepted the batteries from those other states as components of regimental organizations, while he accepted the batteries from Massachusetts as independent and unattached.

2. That he regards the appointment of any field-officers of artillery as useless, and

3. That by Section 1. of General Order No. 126 of War Department's series of 1862, he intended to restrict such appointments by denying special authorities for muster, and thereby ultimately to do away with them altogether.

But I would respectfully represent:—

1. That the volunteer batteries of all the states named, whether accepted originally as components of regimental organizations or not, have all been serving in like manner.

2. That the weight of military practice sanctions the employment of field-officers of artillery, and

3. That since the date of General Order No. 126, above mentioned, special authorities for the muster of field-officers of artillery have repeatedly been granted by the War Department.

The example of all other military powers' instituting grades of rank among artillery officers corresponding with those among officers of other arms of the service, has long been approved by the legislation of your honorable body, and the artillery arm of the regular army of the United States is organized accordingly into regiments.

And in the volunteer service independent though the batteries may be, each constituting a unit of organization, yet, practically they do serve in conjunction, and if no artillery officers have higher rank than captain, there will be, in such a force as ours, a great number of such



officers exercising more than a captain's command, and for every captain thus employed, there will be a first lieutenant exercising a captain's command, a second lieutenant exercising a first lieutenant's command, and a sergeant exercising a second lieutenant's command.

Therefore the injustice of thus restricting to the rank of captain, officers doing field-officers duty reaches the whole way down through all the grades of rank, preventing some first lieutenant from his rightful promotion as captain, some second lieutenant as first lieutenant, some sergeant as second lieutenant, some corporal as sergeant, and some private as corporal.

I fully recognize that in any great army it will be often necessary, by the exigencies of the service, for officers to exercise commands, temporarily, superior to their grades of rank; but at the same time this fact in no manner justifies the restriction of rank as a principle, or rule, in the case of the light artillery officers of the volunteer service, and the unsoundness of the principle in its application to these officers is aggravated by the inequality of its administration; it being enforced against Massachusetts and certain other states, while it is relaxed from Illinois and Indiana, Maine, Michigan, New York, Ohio, and Rhode Island, and also, as I am informed from unofficial sources, from New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

Within the last month the *captain* of a Massachusetts volunteer battery, who has long exercised with honor, the command of a Brigade of Light Artillery, in a Corps of the Army of the Potomac, has been *superseded*, through no fault of his own, but by the addition to the Corps of an officer who is his senior in point of *rank* only, by reason of one state being privileged to appoint artillery field-officers, while like permission is refused to another state.

It is irksome to me to be obliged to return to this subject. But I know not how I can otherwise discharge my duty to the officers and men of sixteen batteries of Massachusetts Light Artillery: many of them among the best the Commonwealth has contributed to the service during the war. I am convinced that I ought not to leave them unsupported by such effort as I may be able to command. I had hoped that the object would have been attained without my appealing to the Congressional Delegation from the Commonwealth in this formal manner, but now I fear that the session of Congress may end without its accomplishment.

If captains of batteries were never needed for field or staff positions pertaining to officers of higher rank, the mere desire to secure rank to our soldiers, however meritorious, would not have influenced me, but when I know that our officers are used and needed to command Brigades of Artillery, to act as chiefs of Artillery and otherwise, on the staffs of corps and division commanders, leaving their companies to be commanded by lieutenants; when I know that the laws and regulations for the Army of the United States, include the regimental organization, with its field-officers, for regular United States batteries,



when I know that such organization and officers are not denied to other states,—some of them with fewer batteries in the field than we have—; and when I know that by reason of this sort of discrimination, good and brave officers whom I have commissioned are made to suffer what the soldier feels to be a personal and undeserved humiliation, I am not at liberty to omit my efforts.

I, therefore, earnestly and respectfully commend this subject to the attention of the gentlemen whose presence in Washington, whose relation to the Executive Government, and whose personal and official insight as the Senators of the Commonwealth and the Representatives of the People of Massachusetts, will enable them to speak efficiently, and entitle them and their opinions to the highest influence and consideration.

I have the honor to be, gentlemen, most respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

JOHN A. ANDREW,

*Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.*

Official Copy.

A. G. BROWNE JR.

*Lieut.-Col. Military Secretary.*

## STATE LEGISLATION.

In the Acts and Resolves of 1864, may be found the following:—

Section 17, Chapter 238. Concerning the Militia.

The volunteer companies shall be formed into separate regiments, or attached to such regiments of the active militia as the commander-in-chief shall deem proper, and he may retain any existing regiments of the volunteer militia.

Section 19. Companies of cavalry, artillery and engineers may remain unattached to any regiment or brigade, if the good of the service in the opinion of the commander-in-chief, shall require it, and the two corps of cadets, or either of them, may be attached to divisions at the pleasure of the commander-in-chief. In such case, such companies or corps, shall be subject to the immediate orders of the commanders of such divisions or brigades as the commander-in-chief shall designate: who shall receive the reports, returns and orders, have the authority and discharge the duties, with regard to such companies or corps, which are prescribed for the commanders of regiments with regard to other companies.

Section 25. Artillery. To each *regiment* of Artillery there shall be





one colonel, one lieutenant-colonel, one major, to every *four* companies or batteries, one adjutant, and one quartermaster, each with the rank of first lieutenant, but not to be extra lieutenants, one chaplain, one sergeant-major, one quartermaster-sergeant, one commissary-sergeant, one hospital steward, and two principal musicians.

To each battery of Light Artillery, or company of Heavy Artillery, there shall be one captain, two first lieutenants, two second lieutenants, one first sergeant, one quartermaster-sergeant, six sergeants, twelve corporals, two musicians, two artificers, one wagoner, and one hundred and twenty-two privates.

Approved May 14, 1864.

Thus it will be seen that no blame can attach to the state legislature for neglect of duty in this regard.

Every artillery officer from the highest to the lowest rank was interested in this subject, and pens were busily employed in the endeavor to effect a change. An article appeared in the *Army and Navy Journal* of Nov. 14, 1864, in which the following views are attributed to General W. F. Barry. The theme as expressed by the author of the article is "The Deficiency of Rank in the Artillery service":—

"This faulty organization can only be suitably corrected by legislative action, and it is earnestly hoped that the attention of the proper authorities may be at an early day invited to it."

The editor adds that he "regrets to say that although their 'attention' has often since been 'invited' to it, the evil remains to this day in almost equal force, and the gross injustice is seen of a body of officers, whose services are unequalled in their value and importance, suffering from the false organization of their arm. This radical defect has already lost us some of our finest artillery officers, and if not corrected, it must, we fear, lose us a great many more."

Of the result in Congress, Brevet Major Charles A. Phillips thus wrote in a letter home, dated at City Point, March 15, 1865; Captain Robert H. Fitzhugh of New York had gone above him, and was lieutenant colonel in command of a Brigade of the Artillery Reserve, after having been a junior captain to him at Gettysburg:—



"Partly I think at my suggestion Senator Wilson introduced a bill to remedy the evil, and give all battery commanders an equal chance of promotion, but I believe it was incorporated into the 'Omnibus Bill,' and was lost at the close of the session. However, Congress managed to raise our pay, which will make a difference to me of \$30 per month."

FROM THE REPORT OF B'VT. MAJ. GEN. HENRY J. HUNT,  
U. S. ARMY, CHIEF OF ARTILLERY:—

ARTILLERY HEAD QUARTERS, ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP NEAR FORT ALBANY, VA.

June 1, 1865.

... In my previous reports I have had occasion to call attention to the want of a proper proportion of field officers for the artillery, and this I did especially in the reports of the battles of Chancellorsville and Gettysburg; and as there is no bureau of artillery nor other centre of administration for it, I take this occasion to present the same subject in order that the results of our experience may not be lost. This is due to the reputation of the artillery in this war, as well as to the future interests of the service. At an early period of the war, orders were given that field artillery should be taken into service only by single batteries, 'in order to save field officers'; this whilst infantry regiments of a single battalion were allowed four with their proper staffs. Why this policy, so contrary to that of all modern armies, and so destructive to the efficiency of the most complicated of all the arms of the service, was adopted, I am at a loss to discern. Its effects have been but too clear. Not only has the service suffered from the want of officers absolutely necessary to its highest efficiency and economy, but the system has stopped promotion in the artillery, and, as a consequence, nearly every officer of promise as well as of any distinction has been offered that promotion in the infantry, cavalry, or the staff, which no amount of capacity, gallantry, or good conduct, could secure him in his own arm. The result is that, with a few marked exceptions, in which officers were willing to sacrifice their personal advancement and prospects to their love for their arm, the best and most distinguished of the officers of the artillery accepted positions elsewhere, or left the service in disgust, as opportunity offered. The effect of this and of other errors of organization, has been but too evident: the artillery, although it has done much better than under the circumstances could have been expected or even hoped, has not attained to that efficiency which was possible, and has failed to retain the pre-eminence it once held in our Army and in public estimation. This sacrifice of efficiency has been made at the expense of economy. I do not



hesitate to say that the field artillery of this Army, although not inferior to any other in our service, has been from one-third to one-half less efficient than it ought to have been, whilst it has cost from one-third to one-half more money than there was any necessity for. This has been due principally to the want of proper organization, which has deprived it of the experienced officers required for its proper command, management, and supervision, and is in no respect the fault of the artillery itself."

General Meade wrote to Captain Martin at the expiration of the term of service of the Third Mass. Battery, as quoted by the historian, "In no branch of the service is knowledge and experience so essential to success as in the artillery, nor is there any branch of the service where so little has been done by promotion to encourage the faithful and efficient officer."

Perhaps the Adjutant General of the State, William Schouler, who shared with the Governor the care of all the troops who went from Massachusetts throughout the War, had as clear an insight, and was as capable of impartially stating what treatment her light artillery deserved and what it received as any one.

In his "History of Massachusetts in the Civil War" published in 1868, he says:—"No arm of the Massachusetts volunteers did greater service to the nation, or reflected greater honor upon Massachusetts, than the sixteen light batteries which went from this Commonwealth to the War. Many of the officers held high commands, some of them of the artillery of a Corps, and yet none of them could ever reach a higher rank than captain, and for the reason that the Secretary of War would not consent to have our batteries given either a battalion or a regimental organization. States, which did not send half as many batteries into the service, had these privileges allowed them, and in consequence they had their majors, lieutenant-colonels, and colonels of artillery, while Massachusetts had no officer of higher rank in this arm of the service than a captain.

The Governor exerted his utmost power to have this



wrong righted, but in vain. The only answer which Secretary Stanton gave, was that 'mistakes had been made in the beginning of the War, which he did not wish to keep up.'

We will not say that the Secretary was altogether to blame: but the wrong done could have been righted by Congress fixing a brevet rank which would have carried command and pay with it, and not have permitted officers of the skill and bravery of Martin, McCartney, Nims, and others we could name, to serve in positions which properly belonged to brigadier generals, and to perform the duties of those positions with pre-eminent merit, while only holding in reality the commissions of captains, and allowed only the pay and allowances of captains.

It is true that these gentlemen were named in official bulletins in words of praise, for 'gallant and efficient service in the field,' and at the end of the War they were brevetted brigadier-generals: but something more was due the officers and men of the light batteries of Massachusetts."

#### A GLANCE AT ARTILLERY TACTICS.

"The Artillery drill, although equally interesting, was not as rapid as that of the cavalry, because of the weight of the guns, but there was a grandeur in the movement of so many spirited, well-trained teams and heavy pieces, not seen in the other branches of the service. Target firing was also practiced to a high degree of excellence."

EDWIN FORBES.

Brig. Gen. John Gibbon who compiled "The Artillerist's Manual," edition of 1863, declares that—"Batteries derive all their value from the courage and skill of the gunners, from their constancy and devotion on difficult marches, from the quickness and capacity of the officers, and especially from the good condition and vigor of the teams, without which nothing can be undertaken."





From the revised system of Light Artillery Tactics submitted January 15, 1859, by a Light Artillery Board consisting of Brevet Major Wm. H. French, Captain William F. Barry and Brevet Major Henry J. Hunt, having been approved by President James Buchanan, accepted for the government of the Army by the Secretary of War, and used by the Light Batteries during the War of the Rebellion, the following is taken:—

"The battery of manœuvre is composed of six fieldpieces and six caissons, properly manned, horsed, and equipped. It is sometimes reduced to four or increased to eight pieces. The tactics is adapted to either number, but six pieces are supposed. Each carriage is drawn by four or six horses, and the officers and men are as follows.—One captain, who commands the battery, three lieutenants, each commanding a section: the section of the junior lieutenant should be in the centre.

One lieutenant commanding the line of caissons.

When half batteries are formed, they are commanded by the two lieutenants highest in rank.

Six mounted sergeants, each charged with guiding and superintending a piece.

Twenty-four, or thirty-six drivers, being one to each pair of horses.

Six detachments of cannoneers, each containing nine men in mounted batteries, and eleven in horse batteries. This number includes two corporals, one of whom is chief of the caisson, and the other the gunner, has charge of the gun and its detachment.

Two trumpeters or buglers.

One guidon.

The battery is divided into three sections denominated the right, left, and centre sections.

A section contains two pieces and two caissons, and in each section the pieces are denominated right piece and left piece.

The battery is also divided into half batteries denominated right half battery, and left half battery. The word piece applies to the gun or howitzer, either with or without its limber, and sometimes to the piece and caisson together.

The front of a battery, in the order in battery, is the front of the line of pieces. In all other formations it is the front of the first line of drivers.

The right or left of a battery is always that of the actual front, whether the pieces or caissons lead.



## PARADE FOR REVIEW AND INSPECTION.

The battery being in line, with the pieces in front: the first sergeant 2 yards from the right: the bugler and guidon in one rank, 6 yards on his right: the quartermaster sergeant 2 yards from the left: the officers in one rank, 6 yards on his left: all dressed on the lead wheels of the pieces: the Captain commands:

1. Attention.
2. *Prepare for Review.*
3. Action Front.
4. *Right-Dress.*
5. Front."

## A LITTLE BIT FROM MEMORY.

Notes of Private D. Henry Grows Oct. 28, 1900:—"A section consists of two guns, as there are six guns to a battery, they are called the Right, Left, and Centre sections. When in camp the tents are placed the same as the men are at the guns, viz., odd numbers on the right and even ones on the left, making Nos. 1, 3 & 5 on the right, and 2, 4 & 6 on the left, so you will see that I, being in the 5th detachment I would be placed on the right half. No. 6 is rarely changed, because the one holding the place has to learn the firing table, which is placed in the cover of the limber chest."

Notes of Corporal Benjamin Graham Nov. 11, 1900:—

The pieces are all numbered from One to Six on a march or in a line. On a march the First piece is supposed to be in front or first, and in line of battle it is supposed to be on the right, thus: 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1, and the First piece is the First Detachment, the Second piece the Second Detachment, and so on."



## CHAPTER IV.

### RECRUITING THE BATTERY.

"Come forth! come as the torrent comes when the winter's chain is burst!

So rushes on the land's revenge, in night and silence nursed—

The night is passed, the silence o'er—on all our hills we rise—

We wait thee, youth! sleep, dream no more! the voice of battle cries."

—*The Summons*, Mrs. Hemans.

The summons of the Secretary of War, to send on all regiments and parts of regiments then enlisted, gave rise to an increased activity in the various executive departments. The demand made so peremptorily, called for prompt and speedy action. Governor Andrew issued a proclamation on August 20, 1861, which closed with the following words:—

"Citizen Soldiers of Massachusetts! Duty, Honor, the dearest sentiments of Patriotic Love and Devotion call for your brave hearts and unconquerable arms!

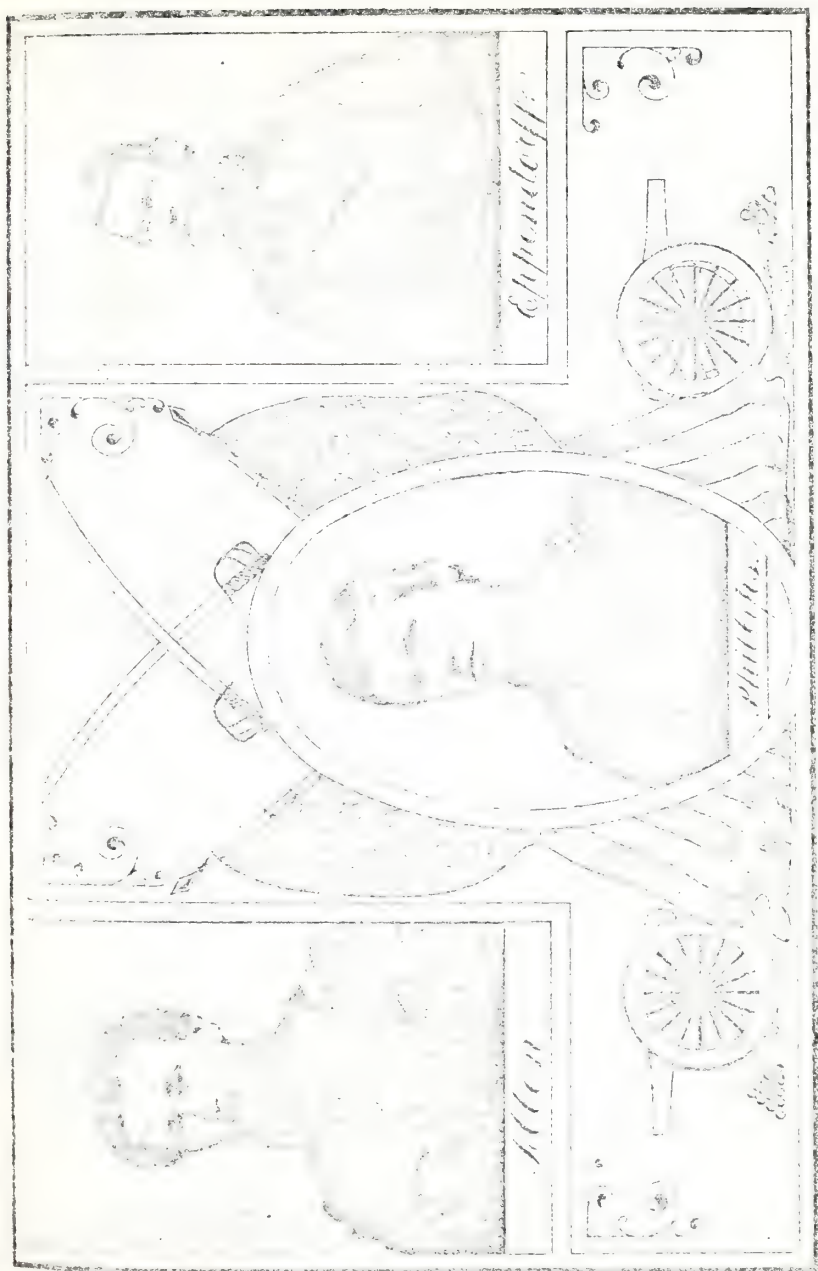
JOHN A. ANDREW

*Governor and Commander-in-Chief.*"

On the 25th advices had been received at the State Department in Washington, from all our foreign ministers, stating confidently that there would be no movement among the European governments to recognize the rebels so long as the federal government kept forces in the rebel states and held Washington.

The President not only directed that fortifications should be erected to protect Washington, but he desired that they should form a base of operations against the rebels. These



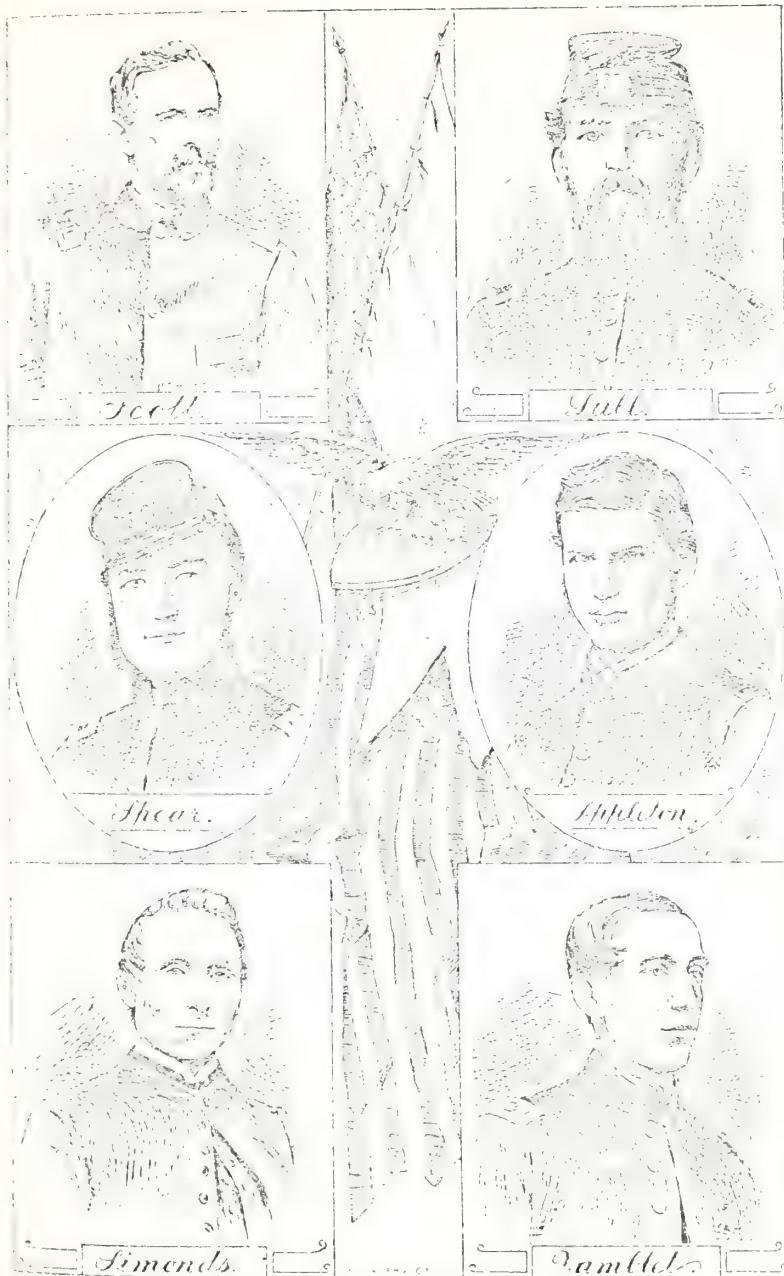














works were divided into three sections,—western, middle, and eastern.

Army Head Quarters were at Arlington House on Arlington Heights, a ridge of land running parallel with the Potomac River from Alexandria to a point opposite Georgetown a distance of nine miles. South of these heights was Four Mile Run, a small creek, and upon them a series of earthworks were erected by which a few thousand men could hold a large army in check. The Potomac Canal crossed the river on a high stone bridge. The bridge was guarded by a breastwork, and two bomb proof block houses of large logs two stories high were erected and pierced on all sides for musketry. Opposite on the Virginia shore the land rises about 150 feet to a plateau on which stood Fort Corcoran. About a mile from Arlington Heights towards Alexandria, were the middle works, erected at the crossing of the road from Alexandria to Georgetown and that from the Long Bridge to Fairfax Court House. They commanded a deep ravine towards Arlington, a wide plain towards Fairfax, and a broad valley toward Alexandria. A dense forest was cut down in order to permit an unobstructed view.

The eastern defences were back of Alexandria on Shuter's Hill and were known as Fort Ellsworth. The levelling of a forest of fifteen acres which sheltered Alexandria by three thousand men in a short time, is thus described in the *Philadelphia Ledger* in August, 1861:—"The axmen cut the trees only on one side, leaving them with just enough of the body to keep them upright. When the utmost verge was reached the largest trees were cut, and falling, swept the entire fifteen acres with one stroke. These laps are all sharpened and present a formidable appearance."

General George B. McClellan, at the immature age of thirty two suddenly summoned from Western Virginia to take command of the Army of the Potomac, was already



from personal observation qualified to express an opinion on the methods to be adopted in carrying out the President's plans. He criticised the conduct of the allied generals of the Crimean war in the following terms:—"Their measures were half way measures, slow and blundering, they failed to keep constantly in view the object of the expedition, and to press rapidly and unceasingly toward it. . . . . If a deficiency in men and means is assigned as a reason for the early operations of the allies, it is but another proof that, in undertaking the affair, they neglected one of the clearest rules of war; that is, to undertake no important operation without full and reliable information as to the obstacles to be overcome, and the means of resistance in the hands of the enemy."

He immediately introduced the strictest discipline, of which there had been a lack. It had been said that the battle of Bull Run exhibited the efficiency of artillery, and the comparative weakness of the infantry arm of the service. McClellan declared that this should be a war waged with artillery, and at once called for a large increase of artillery and cavalry, and after the review on the South side of the Potomac it was telegraphed August 25, 1861, all over the country:—"Gen. McClellan declares perfect satisfaction with his army, and his army, the greatest ever seen on this continent, is equally satisfied with him."

From this moment a sentiment of sacred honor attached itself to membership in the Army of the Potomac, and McClellan's acknowledged preference for artillery aroused in Massachusetts the latent liking for that arm of the service which had lurked in the militia system since the first two years of the Revolutionary War, when the one Corps of Artillery in the service of the Continent, under the immediate command of General George Washington, was composed chiefly of Massachusetts men.

September 5th, 1861, the mayor of New Bedford, Hon. Isaac C. Taber, was authorized to organize one or more





companies "for the national army", the bounty to each member not to exceed fifteen dollars, and the next day the *Taunton Gazette* thus appealed to the people:—

"Shall we have an artillery company?" "We say yes:" replies the *New Bedford Mercury*, "and suggest that the company already in existence here under command of John B. Hyde, as the nucleus of such an organization. Captain Hyde, we doubt not, would enter into such a scheme with zeal, and of his efficiency there can be no question."

John B. Hyde was born in New Bedford, August 14, 1830, and was educated in the public schools of that city. At the age of 18, he joined the New Bedford Volunteer Fire Department, and was Foreman of Columbian Engine No. 5, from 1854, to 1861.

In 1855, he became a member of the New Bedford City Guards, and served out the enlistment term of five years, during which time the Guards were commanded by Major George A. Bourne and Colonel Timothy Ingraham, both superior military men. In 1857 and '58, he was elected a member of the Common Council. At that time the Hon. George H. Dunbar was mayor of the city.

When the war broke out and the Home Guard was formed, he was requested by Mayor Taber to take charge of two brass pieces belonging to the city, and organize a company to man them; and from the spring of 1861, to the time of his recruiting of the Fifth Mass. Battery, he was in command of that branch of the home guard for the protection of the city in case of an invasion. This no doubt inspired the effort which resulted in the larger organization, whose destination was the seat of war.

The New Bedford City Guards, composed of so many of her citizens who were inclined to serve their country in the hour of danger, enlisted on the call for three months men, and with Timothy Ingraham as captain, went out as Company L of the Third Mass. Regt. Infantry. Colonel David W. Wardrop commanding. On their return July 23, 1861, with full ranks, their arrival was greeted by a



salvo of artillery fired upon the Common, and they were escorted to the City Hall by four companies of the Home and Coast Guard where they were addressed about 5 p. m. by the mayor and Ex-Governor John H. Clifford.

It is recorded in the columns of the daily press that the Flying Artillery at the Common performed sundry evolutions, previous to the arrival of the City Guards, which evinced a commendable knowledge of their peculiar duty, and great dexterity in discharging, unlimbering, and limbering their pieces.

The New Bedford *Mercury* of July 25th says of this artillery company:

"They are entitled to great credit for the proficiency they have made in artillery practice, and particularly as they have not had the benefit of any instruction, but have studied the science without any aid from a master. We regard it as quite extraordinary that Captain Hyde and his command have acquired such skill in all the details of duty from the mere reading of the manual."

Captain Timothy Ingraham was afterwards Lieutenant Colonel of the Mass. 18th Regt. Infantry, and Colonel of the 38th. He was provost marshal in Washington when President Lincoln was assassinated.

The Morning *Mercury* announced on this 6th September, 1861:---

"The sabres loaned to the city for the Home and Coast Guard Light Artillery, have been recalled by the Governor. Captain Hyde will take them to Boston today."

Thus the scene was changed to the city of Boston. Three days after, there was issued the following document bearing the state seal:--

GENERAL RECRUITING OFFICE FOR MASS. VOLUNTEERS.

HEAD QUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE  
FIRST DIV. M. V. M.  
NO. 14 PITTS STREET.  
BOSTON, Sept. 9, 1861.

This certifies that I have this day appointed G. D. Allen Deputy



Recruiting Officer for Gen. Wilson's Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers in the towns of Malden, Medford and Melrose.

All Recruiting Officers appointed by this Department are hereby directed to co-operate with each other, By order of

W. W. BULLOCK

General Recruiting Officer Mass. Vols.

The Fifth Mass. Battery was in camp with the 22d and the 23d, but both infantry regiments preceded it to the field.

From the New Bedford *Mercury*.

Sept. 13, 1861.

The New Artillery Company: Lieut. John B. Hyde has opened a recruiting office at the Armory corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant street. The Company for which he is recruiting is to be attached to Gen Wilson's regiment (22d.), and it should be filled at once. Lieut. Hyde is well known in this county, and his personal popularity should secure his success in his present undertaking. If he fails, we shall despair of any man's raising a company in New Bedford."

In another column was the advertisement:—

#### LIGHT ARTILLERY COMPANY

##### RECRUITS WANTED.

For an Artillery Company now forming in the City of New Bedford to be attached to Gen. Wilson's Regiment.

\$100 Bounty at the end of the War.

\$15 Bonus from the City at the time of enlisting.

\$13 per month, with Clothing and Rations.

\$4 per month for a wife.

\$8 per month for a wife and one child.

\$12 per month for a wife and two children.

Pay monthly from the State. Pay and Rations to commence immediately.

These inducements are the best now offered for young men desirous of serving their country.

Office at the Armory of the N. B. Light Artillery Company, corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant Street.

J. B. HYDE.



Boston next.

GENERAL RECRUITING OFFICE FOR MASS. VOLUNTEERS.

HEAD QUARTERS FIRST BRIGADE

FIRST DIV. M. V. M.

NO. 14 PITTS STREET

BOSTON, Sept. 16, 1861.

This certifies That I have this day appointed G. D. Allen Deputy Recruiting Officer for the Fourth Battery of Light Artillery for Gen. Wilson's Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, in the City of Boston and vicinity.

All Recruiting Officers appointed by this Department are hereby directed to co-operate with each other.

By order of

W. W. BULLOCK

General Recruiting Officer

Mass. Vol.

NOTES OF CAPTAIN GEO. D. ALLEN

Sept. 3, 1900.

"I had the mustering in papers made out on the date of the first order I had for recruiting the Battery, this especially saved the New Bedford men two or three weeks pay.

General Schouler sent for me to come to his office in the State House, and informed me that Salem and Lawrence wanted to join in recruiting a battery, and he had decided to call their battery the Fourth, and our battery would be the Fifth."

THE CALL.

The New Bedford *Standard* of Sept. 23, 1861, contained the following notice:—

"Lt. John B. Hyde advertises today for recruits for the artillery company to be attached to General Wilson's regiment. Lt. Hyde is well known here and has been exceedingly popular with his acquaintances, among whom we trust his call will meet with a prompt response. The inducements [This refers to general inducements offered





by the city] it will be seen are extremely liberal. His office is at the Armory, corner of Mechanics Lane and Pleasant street.

The following appeared in the *Boston Journal* of September 25, 1861:—

"Wanted—Recruits for the Fifth Massachusetts Light Battery, to be attached to the Twenty-third Regiment, Col. Wilson.

Able-bodied young men of good standing will please apply immediately to G. D. Allen, 111 Court street.

The Company goes into Camp at Lynnfield immediately."

The regiment raised by Senator Wilson was the 22d. The 23d. was commanded by Colonel John Kurtz. The Third Mass. Battery accompanied the 22d. to the seat of war.

111 Court street was about where the Palace Theatre now stands, at the head of Sudbury street. Sergt. Wm. H. Peacock recollects the enlistment place as a vacant store.

September 28th, 1861, George D. Allen of Malden was commissioned First Lieutenant of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery. The same day the following Special Order was issued:

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,

Sept. 28, 1861

Special Order No. 484.

Mr. George D. Allen of Malden, who is recruiting the Fifth Battery of Light Artillery, to be attached to the Twenty-third Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, now in camp at Lynnfield, is ordered to report with his command to Lt. Col. Kurtz, who will find him proper quarters.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief.

WM. SCHOULER  
Adj. General.

The *New Bedford Mercury* of the same date had the following notice:—

#### NOTICE.

"To the members of the N. B. Light Artillery Company.

The members of this Company are notified, that they go into camp



at Lynnfield, on Monday Sept. 30, 1861. They are requested to meet at the Artillery Armory, Mechanics Lane, on Monday morning, Sept. 30, 1861, at 6 o'clock *precisely*.

LIEUT. J. B. HYDE.

New Bedford Sept. 28, 1861.

Lynnfield formerly a part of Lynn, is a small town 12 miles from Boston, and the camp was established near the Lynnfield Hotel, in a level field, once used for a race-track.

When Lieut. Allen went into camp at Lynnfield he was presented with a horse, in color a dark chestnut, by E. R. Sawyer & Co.—in whose employ he was when he joined the army;—other wholesale coal dealers in Boston contributing. When he found that they were not going to take the Battery horses from here, he was obliged to sell him, and buy another in Washington.

From the New Bedford *Mercury* Oct. 2, 1861.

#### DEPARTURE FOR THE CAMP.

"Lieut. John B. Hyde and his command, 56 men, left by the early train, on the New Bedford and Taunton Railroad yesterday morning. They marched from their Armory to Market Square (City Hall) where prayer was offered by the Rev. John Girdwood, and his Honor the Mayor made a few remarks, and presented to Lieut. Hyde, on behalf of the City, a full set of equipments. Lieut. Hyde made an appropriate response. As the train left, a salute was fired on the Common by a detachment of the Light Artillery Company of this city, under command of Lieut. Pliny B. Sherman. A large number of citizens were at the depot to witness the departure of their friends and neighbors, and to express their hearty wishes for their success."

Same date:

"We learn from the 'Journal' that Lieut. Hyde and his command dined at the Parker House in Boston yesterday. His Honor Mayor Taber accompanied them, and Mayor Wightman (of Boston) and our friend Colonel Hatch were at the dinner. The Mayor of Boston was introduced by the Colonel, and addressed the men in cheering words of welcome."







## PRESENTATION OF EQUIPMENTS.

His Honor Mayor Isaac C. Taber requested Lieut. Hyde to present himself with his recruits October 1, 1861, at 7 o'clock in the morning, in front of the City Hall, where he proposed to make an address to his command. Owing to sickness the Mayor was unable to be present in person but delegated Mr. James B. Congdon, who made the address and presented to Lt. Hyde his equipments, consisting of a sabre, belt, sash, shoulder straps, spurs, and a pair of Colt's revolvers.

After these ceremonies were concluded they proceeded to the depot, headed by the New Bedford Brass Band, and took the train for the camp at Lynnfield.

## CERTIFICATE OF MEMBERSHIP.

NEW BEDFORD, October 1, 1861.

This certifies that William H. Peacock has been regularly mustered and sworn into the service of the United States, as a member of 5th Battery, 23d Regiment, now in Lynnfield.

LIEUT. JOHN B. HYDE.

"Personal" in the New Bedford *Mercury*

Oct. 3, 1861.

"Lieut. J. B. Hyde of the Fifth Battery, returned to the city last evening. He reports that his men have all been sworn in, uniformed and equipped. They are all in excellent spirits, and highly pleased with their quarters and rations."

The next day came the following announcement.

Fifth Battery: Lieut. Hyde returns to Camp Schouler at Lynnfield this morning (October 4th) with the following recruits:—

Robert A. Dillingham, Timothy W. Terry, Henry D. Scott, Alpheus H. Jones, Edward F. Smith, William Turner, Mason W. Page, Joseph G. Braley, George McCully, Samuel A. Hardy, George H. Chadwick, J. Augustus Wood, Christopher C. Allen, Edward Mitchell, Philo P.





Braley, William Greeley, Josiah W. Gardner, John Langley, James D. Allen, Charles D. Barnard, Michael Flynn, George W. Smith, Thomas Higgins and several others whose names we could not learn.

Timothy W. Terry, brother of our city marshal, has received the appointment of Quartermaster's Sergeant. The recruiting office will be kept open a short time, and those intending to enlist should do so at once. Lieut. Hyde has made arrangements with the postmaster at Lynnfield, so that all letters addressed Fifth Battery Artillery, Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, will be conveyed daily to the camp by the Quartermaster's Sergeant."

#### ADVERTISEMENT IN THE *MERCURY* OCT. 5th.

##### "LAST CHANCE.

20 able-bodied men wanted immediately. For the  
New Bedford  
Light Artillery Company  
Now encamped at Lynnfield."

After specifying the bounty, as before, the following is added:—

"Call soon, as only a few more can be accepted in this Company.

Apply at the Armory of the New Bedford Light Artillery Company, on Mechanics Lane, above Purchase street."

October 8, 1861, John B. Hyde of New Bedford was commissioned Second Lieutenant. Robert A. Dillingham of New Bedford Third Lieutenant. Charles A. Phillips of Salem, Fourth Lieutenant of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

On the same day the New Bedford *Mercury* announced the following additional recruits:

##### "THE FIFTH BATTERY

"Lieut. Hyde leaves for camp this morning with the following recruits for the Fifth Battery, completing the number of his company: Christopher C. Allen, Michael Hewitt, Robert King, Joseph R. Hathaway, Thomas Place, Richard Heyes, John F. Hathaway, Stephen Townsend, John H. Alton, Christopher B. Tripp, William S. Wilcox, Peleg W. Blake, Joseph B. Alton, James Robinson, Thomas A. Cushman, Squire W. Butts, Michael Sullivan, David B. Peirce, Benjamin S. Kanuse, James L. Warren, William H. Caswell, John T. Drew, Francis P. Washburn, Lot Tynan, James H. Albro."



Oct. 8th, the 22d. Regiment left Boston for Washington. On the 10th, according to the *Mercury*, the mayor and city treasurer of New Bedford "proceeded to Camp Schouler, Lynnfield, and paid the bounty offered by the City to volunteers in Lieut. Hyde's company, and the Clifford Guards, Co. D, 23d Regiment."

This company was recruited by Cornelius Howland Jr. and went to camp about the time the artillery company was sent there. On the 16th Colonel Kurtz changed the camp of the 23d to the location vacated by the 22d.

October 23, 1861, Max Eppendorff of New Bedford, was commissioned captain of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

### CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

The first commander of the Battery enjoyed the full confidence of His Excellency Governor Andrew, and the high officials with whom he came in business connection, and he tried to deserve this confidence to the best of his ability.

### NOTES OF CAPTAIN EPPENDORFF.

October 26, 1900.

"When, in the early part of the year 1849, the Royal Saxon Army,—I am a subject of the King of Saxony, *not* of Prussia—, was reorganized and increased, the Minister of War was compelled to call for Volunteers to fill the vacant positions of Subaltern Officers.

With 8 other young men, who like myself, had formerly been students of the Polytechnic High school in Dresden, I applied for admission in the Artillery Corps. We were accepted and mustered in as Ensigns. For 5 months we were drilled in Artillery and Infantry service, and instructed by Officers of the Regiment in general duties of an Artillery Officer, and in special Artillery science.

Having satisfactorily passed examination before a committee composed of the Staff of the Regiment, we obtained



our appointments as Second Lieutenants of the Saxon Artillery.

I served my King faithfully for 6 years, when I tendered my resignation and obtained my honorable discharge with pension, which latter I am by special favor allowed to draw in any foreign country.

On my first interview with Governor Andrew, I handed him these papers, of whose contents he took the necessary insight. My application for a position as a kind of instructor for officers and men of Batteries of the State then to be organized, was finally refused by the Secretary of War in Washington."

#### THE ORIGINAL ENLISTMENT ROLLS IN NEW BEDFORD.

Signed by The Recruits.

Enlisted at New Bedford from September 23d. to Oct. 8th, 1861, by Lt. John B. Hyde.

Robert A. Dillingham .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Henry D. Scott .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Timothy W. Terry .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles H. Mergridge .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George Shaw .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Anson E. Ferris .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Pilling .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Luther Petty .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Burke .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Jacob A. Gilbert .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Francis Oldis .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Flynn .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George W. Smith .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel R. Jordan .....	Mattapoisett, Mass.
Henry W. Soule .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John C. Hart .....	New Bedford, Mass.



Patrick Walsh .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James A. Tripp .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John G. Sanford .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Robert Miller .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Dugan .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Alexander Moore .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Henry D. Crapo .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Andrew W. Almy .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
Francis Carson .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Agen .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin T. Burt .....	Fall River, Mass.
James Winters, Bugler .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William W. Carsley .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Albion K. P. Hayden .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George S. Manchester .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Jacob Peacock .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles C. Weeden .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph W. Clarke .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Higgins .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James Neild .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Elisha J. Gibbs .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles A. Clark .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James Kay .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin Graham .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin F. Smith .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Waddington .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edwin J. Butler .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Carney .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Pinder .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James T. Shepard .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph Hall .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John E. Dyer .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward T. Wilson 2d .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward W. West .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
Philip T. Quillin .....	Fairhaven, Mass.
William H. Dunham .....	Fairhaven, Mass.





William H. Ray .....	Fall River, Mass.
Alpheus Haskins .....	Marion, Mass.
Edward F. Smith .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Gunning .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Saxner .....	Blackstone, R. I.
Mason W. Page .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph G. Braley .....	Freetown, Mass.
George McCulley .....	Freetown, Mass.
Samuel A. Hardy .....	New Bedford, Mass.
George H. Chadwick .....	New Bedford, Mass.
J. Augustus Wood .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Christopher C. Allen .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward Mitchell .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Philo L. Braley .....	Freetown, Mass.
William Greely .....	Germany.
Josiah W. Gardner .....	New Bedford, Mass.
John Langley .....	New Bedford, Mass.
James D. Allen .....	New Bedford, Mass.
[afterwards captain's clerk]	
Charles D. Barnard .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Lemuel A. Washburn .....	Freetown, Mass.
Michael Hewitt .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Ephraim B. Nye .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Edward Champlin .....	Westerly, R. I.
James Cox .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel Clark .....	Smithfield, R. I.
John M. Canty .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Charles Jay .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Hathaway Jr. ....	New Bedford, Mass.
James H. Paxton .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Frederick D. Alden .....	Fall River, Mass.
Charles H. Macomber .....	Fall River, Mass.
Benjamin West .....	New Bedford, Mass.
William Sweeney .....	New Bedford, Mass.
A. F. Milliken .....	New Bedford, Mass.
Patrick Doyle .....	New Bedford, Mass.



Henry Fitzsimmons	New Bedford, Mass.
Lorenzo D. Brownell	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Hodgins	New Bedford, Mass.
George F. Healy	Rochester, Mass.
David McVey	New Bedford, Mass.
Robert King	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph R. Hathaway	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas Place	New Bedford, Mass.
Richard Heyes	New Bedford, Mass.
John F. Hathaway	New Bedford, Mass.
Stephen Donovan	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Alton	Freetown, Mass.
Christopher B. Tripp	Westport, Mass.
William S. Wilcox	New Bedford, Mass.
Frederick W. Wood	New Bedford, Mass.
Peleg W. Blake	New Bedford, Mass.
Samuel Sanderson	New Bedford, Mass.
Joseph B. Alton	Sandwich, Mass.
James Robinson	New Bedford, Mass.
Thomas A. Cushman	New Bedford, Mass.
Michael Sullivan	New Bedford, Mass.
David B. Peirce	New Bedford, Mass.
Benjamin S. Kanuse	New Bedford, Mass.
Squire W. Butts	New Bedford, Mass.
James L. Warren	New Bedford, Mass.
William W. Caswell	New Bedford, Mass.
John A. Drew	New Bedford, Mass.
Francis P. Washburn	New Bedford, Mass.
Lot Tynan	New Bedford, Mass.
James H. Albro	New Bedford, Mass.
James W. Baldwin	New Bedford, Mass.
John H. Cole	New Bedford, Mass.
William H. Peacock	New Bedford, Mass.



## THE ORIGINAL COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

From Lt. Hyde's Rolls.

Captain, Max Eppendorff, New Bedford, Mass.  
 Sen. 1st Lt. George D. Allen, Malden, Mass.  
 Jun. 1st Lt. John B. Hyde, New Bedford, Mass.  
 Sen. 2d Lt. Robert A. Dillingham, New Bedford, Mass.  
 Jun. 2d Lt. Charles A. Phillips, Salem, Mass.

## ORIGINAL NON COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

Sergeant Major, George H. Johnson, Boston, Mass.

Sergeants:—

Frederick A. Lull, Cambridge, Mass.  
 Henry D. Scott, New Bedford, Mass.  
 Otis B. Smith, Boston, Mass.  
 Charles H. Morgridge, New Bedford, Mass.  
 William B. Pattison, Boston, Mass.  
 Peleg W. Blake, New Bedford, Mass.  
 William H. Peacock, New Bedford, Mass.

Quartermaster Sergeant.

Timothy W. Terry, New Bedford.

## Corporals.

W. G. Warren ..... Boston, Mass.  
 A. E. Ferris ..... New Bedford, Mass.  
 H. O. Simonds ..... Boston, Mass.  
 Mason W. Page ..... New Bedford, Mass.  
 William H. Baxter ..... Boston, Mass.  
 Ephraim B. Nye ..... New Bedford, Mass.

---

The representative of the New Bedford *Mercury* at



Camp Schouler thus describes an unusual scene and a novel event:—

"We saw a day or two since a noble looking mastiff, a most intelligent brute, and thoroughly trained, which was purchased by certain gentlemen in the city, and presented to the Fifth Massachusetts Battery. He was taken to the camp by Ass't Engineer H. H. Fisher, who, we learn, made an appropriate presentation speech. As 'Jack's' loyalty was beyond all question, the usual oath was dispensed with."

The sentinel "Jack" was also called "Trusty."

October 28th, His Excellency Governor Andrew received the Twenty-Third Regiment and the Fifth Mass. Battery, at Lynnfield.

Corporal Thomas E. Chase refers to this in his Diary, and says there were fifteen guns fired in honor of His Excellency, and that on that day Captain Max Eppendorff took command of the Battery.

In relation to Lieut. Phillips' fitting himself for promotion, Private Louis E. Pattison says:—

"Chas. A. Phillips joined the company at Lynnfield as Junior Second Lieutenant, and immediately had Thomas Stantial, an artificer, make him a table on which, with the aid of blocks representing artillery, and a copy of the tactics, he familiarized himself with the movements of a battery, so that later he was competent to perform his duties successfully."

#### MEETING IN MALDEN TOWN HALL.

Malden, like New Bedford, had just sent out an infantry company, Co. K, of the Mass. 17th Regt., which was at Camp Andrew, Baltimore, Md., when on Monday evening October 28th, 1861, there was a Masonic celebration at the Malden Town Hall,—a public installation of officers of Mount Vernon Lodge, and a presentation to the retiring Master of the Lodge, George D. Allen.





The presentation speech was made by Wm. H. Richardson Jr. Esq. who said in part:—

"The members of Mount Vernon Lodge . . . have called you here to seal their approbation of a step which reflects equal honor upon you in the taking and upon them in their prompt recognition of its high importance.

A few weeks since we learned that you, in obedience to the promptings of an unselfish patriotism had offered your services to your country in her hour of darkness and trial: we learned also, that the offer had been accepted, and that in a few brief weeks you would exchange the quiet walks of life, the delights of home, and the society of cherished friends, for the distant and stirring scenes of camp and battle field. Simultaneously, as it were, the members of this Institution, with whom you have been so long and honorably connected, suggested the idea of a parting testimonial, which should be alike a substantial token of our appreciation of your labors with us, of our regard for you as a gentleman and brother, and as useful and appropriate symbols of the new profession in which you are about to embark. . . . It is no empty compliment, no formal act of courtesy—no enforced compliance with the fashion of the times that seeks this method to cover a heartless ceremony, but it is the warm expression of a hundred hearts that beat in proud sympathy with a step that evinces the noblest patriotism and the truest devotion to a sacred cause. . . . We do not forget that the name of Allen bears an historic glory, and a revolutionary memory that will never die, and may you emulate that sturdy patriotism and unflinching courage which make the name of Allen and Ticonderoga watchwords of victory. . . . You are now to exchange the gavel for the sword, and thereby discharge the duties you owe to the laws for which you live; keeping steadily in view the allegiance due to your country.

These spurs, too, are emblems of honor, suggestive of that open-eyed vigilance which is ever ready for the word of command, come when it may: requiring, as Napoleon used to term it, a sort of 'two o'clock in the morning' courage, and demanding great discipline and great enthusiasm to guard against surprise. It is said of Suwarrow that when in peace he always slept fully armed, boots and all, and when he was called to enjoy a very comfortable nap he used to take off one spur. Let this ready zeal be to you a lesson in fidelity." . . .

#### MR. ALLEN'S REPLY.

Mr. Allen replied as follows:

"Brother Senior Warden, and Brothers of Mount Vernon Lodge: There are moments when even the lips of eloquence are held mute by the emotions that struggle in the



heart. And if to such souls emotions are sometimes unmastering, how much more so must they now be to me, who can lay no claim to eloquence or even common language, to speak what I feel. I cannot talk. Our country is in peril, and for her sake, I have ventured to say I was ready to fight. But even here I am reminded that profession is more becoming him who putteth off his armor, than he who putteth it on. I will then strive not to abuse the confidence you have manifested by these splendid gifts. I will endeavor to use them manfully in protection of our country and her laws, and for them so appropriate in the position in which I stand, as well as expressing the confidence of the Lodge over which I have had the happiness and honor to preside, as well as for the eloquent and appropriate manner in which they have been conveyed, my whole soul centres in an expression of grateful thanks."

In closing Mr. Allen invited the Rev. T. J. Greenwood to speak for him, which he did, portraying Mr. Allen's willingness to sacrifice his life for his country "which all true Masons are bound to love, and cherish, and defend," and as a personal gift presented him with a bible "The Word of God"—"The Great Light of Freemasonry, which we are all taught to heed." District Deputy Grand Master J. K. Hall presented Mr. Allen with the Diploma of a Past Master, in acknowledgment of the faithful performance of the duties intrusted to him, with a poetical allusion to Washington for whom Mount Vernon Lodge was named, and to the sabre and bible:—

"And may its hilt be blessed by faith in God  
While you seek succor from his holy word:  
So shall you honor that masonic name  
Which he, our brother, cherished more than fame."

Reference was also made by the speaker to those shining lights in Freemasonry the patriots Warren and Lafayette.



LIST OF MEN RECRUITED BY LIEUT. GEO.  
D. ALLEN.

As stated on the Muster Out Roll, at Boston and  
Readville from September 16th to December 25th, 1861.

Chase, Thomas E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Doherty, Bernard ....	Readville, Mass.
Dickerman, Joseph C. ....	Readville, Mass.
Lull, Frederick A. ....	Boston, Mass.
Spear, Joseph E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Smith, Otis B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Simonds, Harrison O. ....	Boston, Mass.
Peacock, William H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Morrison, John W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Pattison, William B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Newhall, William B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Stiles, Charles F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Newton, Geo. L. ....	Boston, Mass.
Proctor, George O. ....	Boston, Mass.
Tucker, John C. ....	Boston, Mass.
Johnson, George H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Burkis, James M. ....	Boston, Mass.
Brown, Warren W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Blanchard, Amos ....	Boston, Mass.
Brown, Edward A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Baxter, William H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Barry, William ....	Boston, Mass.
Cox, Henry A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Estee, William E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Freeborn, Geo. H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Grows, David H. ....	Boston, Mass.
Gale, Mortier ....	Boston, Mass.
Knox, Joseph L. ....	Boston, Mass.
Leach, Geo. H. ....	Boston, Mass.



Lapham, Frederick A., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Mack, John F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Murray, John ....	Boston, Mass.
Phippen, Edward A., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Poole, Geo. W. ....	Boston, Mass.
Pattison, Louis E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Rice, Edward E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Stantial, Thomas B. ....	Boston, Mass.
Story, Benjamin F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Shaw, Horatio E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Waugh, William A. ....	Boston, Mass.
Whitcher, Joseph ....	Boston, Mass.
Gustine, Edward F. ....	Boston, Mass.
Parsons, Henry C. ....	Boston, Mass.
Platts, Edward M. ....	Boston, Mass.
Warren, William G. ....	Boston, Mass.
Lapham, William H. H. ....	Readville, Mass.
Morrison, Joseph J. ....	Boston, Mass.
Prescott, Francis A. ....	Readville, Mass.
Cook, John G., Jr. ....	Boston, Mass.
Skinner, Charles E. ....	Boston, Mass.
Simonds, Warren ....	Readville, Mass.

---

New Bedford *Mercury* October 29, 1861:—

"The company will today be provided with two 12 pound howitzers, two 6 pound smooth bore, and two rifled cannon.

There are twenty tents, including officers' quarters, those of the privates accommodating twelve men each. Since the Battery has been encamped, a park has been neatly laid out, and a Liberty pole erected in the centre. The company rations are satisfactory, and the Quartermaster is spoken of in the highest terms."

#### McCLELLAN COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

On the 31st of October, 1861, General Winfield Scott retired, and General George B. McClellan was made Commander-in-Chief of all the Armies of the United States.





## THANKSGIVING PROCLAMATION.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON,

General Order No. 28.

Nov. 3, 1861.

The soldiers who illustrate the fame of Massachusetts, and defend her cause with that of our Union and our National Flag, in military service remote from the homes where they have been wont to celebrate with their families the venerable and joyful New England Festival of Thanksgiving to God for the fruits of the season, and the bounty of His Providence, ought to be remembered and associated so far as may be in the celebration now at hand.

It is therefore ordered by the Commander-in-Chief that the Adjutant General cause copies of the Governor's recent Proclamation for a day of Public Thanksgiving and Praise to be sent to the colonels and chaplains of all the Massachusetts Regiments of Volunteers with the assurance of the grateful and sympathetic remembrance of them by the Government and people of Massachusetts, of their thankfulness for the many satisfactions and blessings with which even in war we are constantly attended, and of our fervent prayers for the welfare of our gallant and patriotic soldiers, and our undoubting faith in their fidelity and honor; and finally, with the expression of the hope that military duties may not be inconsistent with their observation in some fitting manner of the day annually set apart for the renewal and enlivening of the domestic affections, and for remembering the Giver of all mercies to the united consent of the people of our beloved Commonwealth.

Commanders of Regiments and Batteries of the Massachusetts Volunteers, will promulgate this Order in their respective commands.

By order of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM SCHOULER,

Adjutant General.

It was said that since the memory of the oldest inhabitant the country had not teemed with such abundant crops as the season of 1861.

## NOTE OF SERGEANT PEACOCK.

"CAMP SCHOULER.

LYNNFIELD NOV. 9, '61.

We move our camp to Camp Brigham, Readville, next



Wednesday, where there are stables for horses. Here we have none. We expect to remain there 6 weeks, certain. There has been any quantity of rain and wet weather, but we have very comfortable tents, so we keep dry and warm. There are three of us in a tent—the Sergt. Major, the Q. M. Sergeant, and myself, so we have plenty of room.”

It was said that this removal was in order to concentrate the forces remaining in the state, to the end that they might be more economically supported.

Nov. 11th the 23d Regt. Colonel Kurtz, left for the seat of war and Corporal Chase noted in his Diary: “5th Detachment of 5th Battery fired a salute of 6 guns on their departure.”

#### FIRST MARCHING ORDERS.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

HEAD QUARTERS, BOSTON.

Special Order No. 568.

Nov. 13, 1861.

Captain Max Eppendorff commanding Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers now in camp at Lynnfield, will proceed with his command tomorrow to Readville and encamp there, under direction of the Quartermaster General.

By command of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,

Governor and Commander-in-Chief.

WILLIAM BROWN,

Ass't. Adj. General.

The Battery marched from Lynnfield to Readville, a village then forming a part of Dedham, now of Hyde Park, about 8 miles from Boston, on the Providence railroad. Here there were two camps, “Massasoit” and “Brigham.” The Battery moved Nov. 14th and camped at Camp Massasoit. Nov. 18th, 1861, the following order was issued:—

Special Order No. 579.

Captain Eppendorff, commanding Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers, will report to and receive orders from Major Stevenson commanding Twenty-Fourth Regt. in camp at Readville.

By order of the Commander-in-Chief

WM. SCHOULER

Adj. Gen



Nov. 22d, Lieut. Robert A. Dillingham was presented with a full set of artillery equipments by Mayor Taber of New Bedford, on behalf of the Military committee.

"Nov. 25th. (Chase's Diary) Three inches of snow on the ground this morning. Very stormy day. No drill.

Nov. 30. Fired a salute of three guns on arrival of Co. I, 24th Regt. from Fort Warren."

### ORGANIZATION OF DETACHMENTS.

From Lieut. Phillips' Diary, Nov. 27, 1861.

- 42 Cannoneers, 7 in each Detachment.
- 36 Drivers, 6 in each Det.
- 6 Artificers, 1 in the 1st, 3d, 5th, & 6th Det. 2 in the 2d.
- 6 Cooks, 1 in each Det.
- 8 Wagoners, 1 in the 1st, 2d, 3d and 6th Det. 2 in the 4th and 5th.
- 2 Buglers, 1 in the 3d Det., 1 in the 6th.
- 2 Clerks, 1 in the 2d, 1 in the 4th Det.
- 22 Spare Men, 4 in the 1st, 2d, 3d & 4th Det., 3 in the 5th & 6th. Total 124.

### LETTER FROM ALDERMAN LADD.

NEW BEDFORD, MASS.

Dec. 13, 1861.

Friend Hyde.

Mr. Cowen [Conductor on the New Bedford and Boston R. R.] informs me that you leave on Monday next and that you would like to see me tomorrow. It would afford me much pleasure to come down were it possible, but we have a cargo of lumber at our wharf, which is to be discharged and loaded on to the cars, and I must remain to attend to it. I have persuaded Alderman Lewis to represent me on the occasion. I send by Mr. Lewis [Alderman Lewis] two hundred dollars [This was in gold] donated by your friends in this city, towards purchasing a horse and equipments which you will please accept with their kind regards for your future health, happiness, and success. We all take a deep interest in the Fifth (Mass.) Battery and shall watch its course with interest and with confidence that all, both officers and men, will be faithful to duty, and reflect credit and honor on themselves and on the city under whose auspices it was raised.



In relation to fares, you will please collect what you can of the men and hand it to Mr. Lewis, and the balance we will take care of.

In conclusion, allow me to utter an earnest prayer that yourself and all connected with you, may return, when this wicked rebellion shall have been utterly crushed out, in health and vigor, to your friends and families.

With respect,

Yours truly,

WARREN LADD.

### THE HORSE.

The horse which was bought in Washington, and was called "Black Charley," was coal black, with the exception of a white star in his forehead.

G. O. No. 108

HEAD QUARTERS OF THE ARMY.

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON D. C.

[Transfers]

Dec. 16, 1861.

General Orders

No. 108.

[Extract] III. The numerous applications for transfer of soldiers from one regiment or company to another, would, if complied with, cause confusion in the records, and be injurious to the future interests of the soldiers themselves. Such transfers will not henceforth be made.

By command of Major General McClellan.

L. THOMAS Adj't Gen'l.

That this order was wise in its intention, and would have been for the best interests of the soldiers if it had been carried out, has been amply proven by the confusion of many of the records in respect to the membership of different organizations.

The two old guns with which the Battery had been drilling were sent to Boston Dec. 17th. On the 20th the non-commissioned officers of the Fifth Battery went to Point Shirley in Boston Harbor to practice, and on the same day the Battery received orders to march.









From a letter of Lieut. Phillips to a little nephew written at the camp at Readville, Dec. 17, 1861:—

"The whole cavalry regiment rode out two or three miles today. There were about 700 men on horseback. Col. Williams and Lieut. Col. Sargent rode in front. Col. Williams rode a dark horse and Lt. Col. Sargent rode his own horse. . . . One company in the regiment have all black horses and look very well.

The paymaster came down the other day and paid off all the men. He had his money in tin plates on the table in front of him. One plate was full of coppers, one of five cent pieces, one of halves and quarters, one of gold dollars and another of three-dollar gold pieces. Besides he had a little pile of treasury notes."

ORDERED TO WASHINGTON.

HEAD QUARTERS,  
BOSTON Dec. 20, 1861.

Special Order No. 638.

Captain Max Eppendorff commanding the Fifth Battery of the Massachusetts Volunteers, is hereby ordered to proceed with his command on Tuesday next, to Washington D. C. and report for duty to Major Gen. McClellan U. S. A. Captain Eppendorff will apply to the U. S. Quarter Master in Boston, Captain McKim, (W. W. McKim Ass't Quartermaster U. S. A.) for transportation.

By command of His Excellency

JOHN A. ANDREW,  
Governor and Commander-in-Chief.  
WM. SCHOULER,  
Adj't. Gen'l.

"Tuesday next" was Dec. 25, 1861.

In the Adjutant General's Report for 1861, may be found the following relative to the equipment of the Battery:—

"This battery is the only one which has left the State without a full and complete equipment. Everything was furnished except the horses, which Quartermaster General Meigs U. S. A. preferred to supply at Washington. The company is well officered, and is composed of the very best material.



Captain Max Eppendorff, New Bedford, Sen. 1st Lieut. George D. Allen, Malden, Jun. 1st Lieut. John B. Hyde, New Bedford, Sen. 2d Lieut. Robert A. Dillingham, New Bedford, Jun. 2d Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, Salem."

## REPORT OF THE MASTER OF ORDNANCE.

Colonel Charles Amory, Master of Ordnance, reported:

"Dec. 26, 1861, there had been issued to the Fifth Battery 4 Bronze Field Guns, 6 pounders, rifled, 2 Bronze Field Howitzers, 12 pounders, 6 Gun carriages, complete with limbers, 6 caissons, complete, with limbers, 1 forge wagon complete, with tools and stores per U. S. Regulations, 1 Battery wagon, complete, with tools and stores per U. S. Regulations.

14 sets 6 Horse Artillery Harness, complete, 18 tarpaulins, large, 17 sets Horse equipments, complete, 17 non-commissioned officers sabres, 17 non-commissioned officers Sabre Belts and Plates, 44 artillery sabres, 44 artillery Sabre Belts and Plates, 90 artillery Short Swords, 92 Waist Belts and Plates with Shoulder Straps and Frogs, 1 Guidon, silk, with staff and socket, 1 national flag, silk, with staff and socket, 4 camp colors with staves, 4 Sponges and Rammers for 6 pounder Guns, 4 Bristle Sponges and Rammers for 6 pounder Guns, 4 Sponges and Rammers for 12 pounder Howitzers, 12 Sponge Covers, 4 Worms and Staves for 6 pounder Guns, 2 Worms and Staves for 12 pounder Howitzers, 18 Hand Spikes, 6 Prolongs, 6 Sponge Buckets, 12 Tar Buckets, 6 Gunners' Pincers, 18 Tow Hooks, 24 Thumb stalls, 12 Priming Wires, 12 Lanyards and Hooks, 6 Felling Axes with handles, 6 Shovels, long handled, 6 Pick Axes with handles, 3 Crow Bars, 2 Hammers, 2 Hatchets, 6 Tompions and straps, 6 Vent Covers, 12 Tube Pouches and Belts, 12 Gunners' Haversacks, 12 Screw Drivers, 6 Vent Punches, 6 Linstocks, 50 Slow Match—yards—, 3 Pole Yokes, spare, 4 Cannon Sights,—pairs,—36 Rubber Watering Buckets, 75 Feed Bags, 2 Bugles and Trumpets, 2 Sergeants Sashes, 1 Picket Rope,—coil—, 1 Picket Beetle, 2 Copper Scoops, 2 Copper Dippers, 2 Copper Tunnels, 20 Revolving Pistols with appurtenances, 2000 ball cartridges for pistols, 3000 percussion caps for pistols, 300 cartridges 1½ pounds powder each, 2000 Cartridge Bags, 2400 Friction Cannon Primers, 43 kegs Gun Powder, 300 Shot, 6 pounder Schenkle, 400 Shell 6 pounder Schenkle, 120 shell 12 pounder for Howitzers, 184 shell, 12 pounder Canister, for Howitzers, 4 Field Glasses, 25 pounds Twine, 105 pounds Tow in bags, 1 Emery Cloth,—ream—, 24 Chamois Skins, 12 Sheep Skins, 32 Linchpin Rings, 48 pairs Chest Straps."



## CHAPTER V.

### IN CAMP AT WASHINGTON, D. C., AND HALL'S HILL, VIRGINIA.

#### HOW THEY FARED. OFFICERS AND MEN.

"After we shall have made our last march, shall have answered our last roll call, then will some historian take in hand the story of the war and fashion it into a goodly tale to tell our offspring what we did from '61 to '65 . . . and what will his story be?"

CLARENCE F. COBB.

Orator of the Society of the Army of the Potomac,  
Niagara Falls, N. Y., 1898.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. C. A. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP DUNCAN

WASHINGTON, Dec. 29, '61.

Wednesday forenoon we struck our tents at Readville, and packed up. After standing round in the cold for two or three hours, we took the cars at 12½ and started for New York. At Groton we went on board the Commonwealth, the men occupying the lower cabin, while we occupied state rooms. Arriving at New York about six in the morning, we had some more waiting to do while our baggage was loading. During the course of the forenoon, we sent our baggage to Jersey City; Lieut. Hyde being charge of the baggage train.

At 9 or ten o'clock I marched the men into the ferry boat and across, and waited in the depot for the train. About 11 we started for Philadelphia, leaving a squad of men to the care of our baggage, which was to follow in the next train. We got to Philadelphia about two, and had a little more waiting to do. Our baggage got mixed with that of





the 10th N. J. Regt., got delayed, and did not get along till midnight. By this time the N. J. Regt. had arrived, so that we had some fellow travellers. During all this time our men were kept waiting in the depot, with nothing to do, and a guard placed at every door. The only redeeming feature in Philadelphia was the dinner which we got at the 'Union Volunteer Refreshment Saloon,' foot of Washington street. The whole Battery marched in and sat down,—that is, the officers sat down and the men stood up,—to a very good dinner of cold corned beef, coffee, bread and butter, pickles, and cheese.

About midnight we started for Baltimore and arrived there early the next morning: unloaded, and marched across the city to the neighborhood of the Camden St. depot, where we found an imitation of the Philadelphia arrangement, and rather a poor one at that. The breakfast was cold ham with considerable saltpetre, or something of the sort, bread, and coffee without any milk, and we had to wait about an hour to get this.

At three o'clock in the afternoon we started in a special train with the Jerseymen for Washington, and had a tedious time in finishing our journey. We stopped at every turnout to avoid a regular train, and succeeded in reaching Washington at 9 o'clock in the evening, without any accident, except that one member of the Jersey Regt., who had got off the train during one of our stoppages, was left by the train, and in running to catch up with it, refused to stop at the challenge of the sentinel, and was shot through the head. The sentinels are posted all along the road from Baltimore to Washington.

Arrived there we marched into the upper story of the 'Soldiers' Rest,'—a large, wooden building,—where we deposited our knapsacks. We then marched into the lower story, and had some supper of regular army rations, bread, meat, and coffee.



The men slept here all night, spreading their blankets on the floor, while the officers went up to the National. The next forenoon we unloaded our baggage and marched up here to camp."

### JOURNAL OF PRIVATE GROWS.

DEC. 25 TO DEC. 28, 1861.

"Wednesday morning Dec. 25, 1861. Camp Massasoit. Pleasant and very cold. Turned out at 5 o'clock, and begun to pack our things, and at 8 o'clock 'struck tents' and had them ready for packing in the cars. At 11 went and drew two days' rations, then built a large fire to keep warm by. At 12 got dinner. At half past 1 marched to the depot, took the cars for Groton, stopped at Providence at 4 o'clock for wood and water, then started for Groton, arrived there at 8 o'clock, and went on board the Steamer 'Commonwealth,' and started 10 o'clock for New York. I had the ill fortune to be put on guard over the bar room. . . Was relieved at 2 o'clock next morning. Turned in my berth No. 39, turned out at 5 o'clock in New York.

Thursday morning Dec. 26, was detailed for guard over the powder on the wharf. Stood till half past 8, then guarded the team with the powder till it was aboard the ferry boat for Jersey City. Left Jersey City for Philadelphia on the Camden and Amboy R. R., arrived at Camden, crossed the river in the cars on a ferry boat. The boat had three tracks with three cars and an engine. Arrived in Philadelphia at half past 2, and marched to the 'Volunteer Refreshment Saloon' and took dinner, and it was a big thing,—home made bread, coffee, meats, cheese, butter &c. We were honored by the presence of the Ladies of the Society. It is a great institution.

At half past 3 we marched to the Baltimore and Ohio R. R. and had to stay there till 11 that night, under strict



guard. I had the good fortune to get a 'pass,' so I took a look around the city. At 11 o'clock in the evening took the cars for Baltimore. It is of no use to try to sleep in the cars; some are singing, some talking, etc.

Friday morning Dec. 27, we marched through the street where the Massachusetts soldiers were fired upon. There are quite a number of 'secesh' here, but they have to keep quiet, because the city is under martial law. We marched to a place called the 'Soldiers Relief' where a scant lunch of bread and coffee was given to us. At 3 o'clock in the afternoon we were on our way to Washington, where we arrived about 5 minutes past 11. That night at 12 o'clock midnight got some supper, then went across from the depot to a large, wooden building called the 'Soldiers Retreat,' to spend the night.

At one o'clock Saturday morning we spread our blankets on the floor, and taking our knapsacks for pillows we turned in, and slept on the soft side of a pine board. I think I slept about 9 or 10 knots an hour. After breakfast got permission to see the Capitol building. It is a splendid edifice. Washington is not such a handsome city as I expected. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 1 'took knapsacks,' and took up line of march for our camp ground, which is at present on Pennsylvania avenue, about 8 or ten minutes walk from the Capitol. Arrived on our ground and without any dinner, commenced unloading teams, and at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3, to pitch tents. Had them all up and the park laid out at 7 o'clock, then had supper of hard bread and water.

Since leaving camp at Readville, we have passed through 8 different states: Mass., R. I., Conn., New York, New Jersey, Penn., Maryland, Delaware,—into the District of Columbia. There are a great many pickets thrown out at Newark, N. J. There are guards from there to Washington on the railroad, guarding bridges" (see p. 33).



## TO REPORT TO MUSTERING OFFICER.

OFFICE OF CHIEF OF ARTILLERY.

ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

WASHINGTON D. C.

Dec. 28, 1861.

CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

Company E, Mass. Art'y.

*Captain*

Major Chas. S. Wainwright 1st Regt. N. Y. Artillery, will muster your company on the 31st inst.

You will see that the muster roll of your company is properly made out, and in season, and will have your company duly paraded at the hour designated by the mustering officer.

I am, Capt. very respectfully

Yr. Obt. Servt.

WILLIAM F. BARRY,

Brig. Gen'l Chief of Artillery.

## FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS'

LETTER OF DEC. 29, 1861.

"By the way, I forgot to mention that yesterday, while we were pitching our tents we were inspected by General Barry, under whose command we are. The men were drawn up in line and inspected. He seemed to think they were very well, only they wanted their hair cut, and he told each of us that our posts were as responsible as that of a major of infantry, whereat we were much pleased, of course."

## THE FIRST SUNDAY.

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Dec. 29, 1861. . . . After service I took a walk around camp. There are 4 batteries encamped here besides ourselves. They are mostly Germans, and are attached to batteries of very heavy calibre, mostly 24s and 32ds.





This afternoon got a 'pass' to go to the city. I am disappointed a great deal about Washington. The soil is rather clayey and of a reddish color, a great many of the streets are not paved, and the buildings are miserable looking, some of them would be a disgrace to Boston.

Returned to camp at 4 o'clock. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 had supper of raw bacon and hard bread.

Monday Dec. 30th, dug a cellar in the tent, put a box down to keep my tobacco and loose stuff, such as shoes &c. in, then went to work on the tent. Went to dinner. Hard bread and water.

Tuesday Dec. 31: At 8 o'clock formed in line and marched  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles to a large building, and got a good breakfast of hot coffee, bread, and cold tongue. The reason of this was, the delay in receiving our provisions. Took up line of march to camp at 9, arrived there about 11. Fell into line for inspection of clothing and arms, were dismissed, went to dinner. In the afternoon our Guns came on the field. Went to work fixing carriages, and helped clean Gun. At 4 o'clock p. m. heavy firing heard across the River Potomac. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 roll call. Received a large loaf of bread to each man for three meals, also some coffee. Made our own coffee.

7 o'clock: Have got through supper, and the men are having a smoke and talking about home.

8 o'clock p. m.: Roll call is just through and we are talking about the firing across the river, which is still kept up. Lights are seen on the opposite side of the river, also signal fires along the river. Great excitement in camp. There goes the 'tattoo' for lights out, so I must turn in."

Chase's Diary. "Dec. 31, 1861. Received our guns: four rifled brass 6 pounders, and two brass twelve pound howitzers." (See p. 94 Ordnance Report.)

Notes of Sergt. Henry D. Scott: "Arriving in Washington we camped in the mud on Capitol Hill. Here we



heard the first guns in our experience, from the Rebel batteries at Aquia Creek, below Mount Vernon, on the Potomac."

### NEW YEAR'S DAY, 1862.

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Four o'clock a. m. (Wednesday Jan'y 1, 1862) was awakened by heavy firing across the river. We had a good breakfast of bread, meat, salt pork, and coffee. Some of the men have just got some milk. The men, most of them, are speaking of New Years gifts at home.

Thursday, January 2: Some of our horses for the baggage wagons have arrived. They do not look as nice as our northern horses, but they are very tough.

Friday Jan'y 3d: Detailed on the 2d Relief for guard from 11 a. m. to 1 p. m. Some of the men are cleaning their arms, some are asleep, some are writing, and two are playing cards. We detail two men every morning out of our tent to keep the tent supplied with wood and water for the day, next morning two other men take their places and so on. By doing this we have plenty of water to drink and to wash with, and wood to keep us warm.

7 o'clock p. m.: Have just come off from guard. It is hailing quite fast, and is very cold, but I am warm and comfortable, as I am provided with good and warm clothing. I had some hot coffee while on guard.

Saturday Jan'y 4th: The ground is just covered with snow, and it has frozen and it is quite slippery.

9 a. m.: It is snowing quite hard.

3 p. m.: About 30 more horses have just come in. We have now 46 horses in all.

Sunday Jan'y 5th: Got a 'pass' from  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 till 4 in the afternoon, to go to the city, the Sergeant and myself. First we went to the Treasury Building, a very large building of granite on Pennsylvania avenue. The celebrated



Washington monument is close to the building. It is about 175 or 200 feet high at the present time. Long Bridge is close to the monument. This part of the city is quite handsome. At every other corner on this avenue you will see mounted patrols, and on the sidewalks you will be stopped very often by the street patrol. If you have a 'pass' it is all right. If not you will be arrested and put to work white-washing or cutting wood, and you will be kept in prison until relieved by your Captain. Lieutenants have to have a 'pass' when they go out, just the same as privates. In the rear of the Treasury Building and bearing to the left, is the White House, a very handsome building. I had the pleasure of seeing 'Old Abe' (The President) a pleasant looking man. In front of the White House about 80 rods, is the celebrated equestrian statue of General Jackson, in bronze, as large as life. It is a splendid thing. I stopped about half an hour, looking at it. The parks here are nothing compared to our old Boston Common. At the upper end of Pennsylvania avenue there is another large statue, of Washington, on horseback. It is not so fine as that of Jackson. About every other person you meet in the streets are soldiers, you will not see many citizens. There are about 200,000 troops encamped around Washington, and it would seem to be impossible for the rebels to attempt to take the city. I went to Arlington Heights where Follett's (Afterwards Martin's Third Mass.) Battery is encamped. From there I visited the camp of the 18th Mass., the latter killed about 60 rebels 2 days ago. The rebels are a lean looking set. About 800 are in prison here. The 18th and other regiments and batteries expect to be home for good in a very short time. I hope so. The war cannot last much longer as the rebels are giving  $1\frac{1}{4}$  per cent on gold, that is, they give \$1.25 of scrip for \$1.00 in gold."



## LETTER OF SERG'T. PELEG W. BLAKE.

(The name of the Camp had been changed from "Duncan" to "Sumner.")

WASHINGTON D. C.

CAMP SUMNER.

5TH BATT. MASS. ART'Y.

CAPT. MAX EPPENDORFF.

January 5, 1862.

We are encamped about a quarter of a mile from the Capitol east. There are 20 batteries around us, three or four batteries from Fort Monroe, regulars, that I was acquainted with when I was out there last spring. The city of Washington is nothing very alarming, the Capitol looks very well, but the White House where the President lives-- I have seen a good many better looking houses than that is! I have seen the noted 'Uncle Abe,' and General Geo. B. McClellan. Last Monday I went down to the Provost Marshal's Office and got a 'pass' to go across the Potomac. I went through Georgetown, and then arrived at the river. I got stopped every few minutes by the patrols who I had to show my 'pass.' We went across the river on flat boats, had to pull myself across by lines extended across the river. I had to travel three miles to the river. After I got there I went about five miles further and arrived at Hall's Hill, where the 18th (Mass.) Reg't. was. The country was all lined with troops, all the way along. I stayed an hour and then I started back. I had to go about 17 miles. I think I sha'n't go again till we move over there. We have got a fine battery, and have drawn 50 horses, and are receiving horses every day."





FROM A LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE OF THE  
7TH IN RELATION TO SUNDAY JAN'Y 5TH  
1862:—

"Last Sunday six of us crossed the Potomac and visited the Mass. 9th, 18th, and 22d, and Follett's Battery. I saw several of my old Boston friends, with others James Vaughan Jr. with the 22d. . . They are shut in by guards, pickets, and patrols, on every side, and are just as much prisoners as though within the walls of a penitentiary. We of the 5th are not very aristocratic, in our way of living, but I think we have more privileges than the infantry have.

The troops at Hall's Hill make their quarters in this way, viz., they drive slabs of wood down endwise around a circle, which makes a fence about three feet high, then the crevices are plastered up with mud, so that it is quite tight. On top of this circular fence the tent is set just as it would set on the ground. By this arrangement much more room is gained, and instead of having a part of the tent open all the time, they have a small wooden door. All the furniture of the tent is painted as follows:—The *ground work* is a smoke color, then on this three different shades, viz. *dirty, more dirty, most dirty*. I do not say this of one company or reg't. alone for camp life is about the same with all of us, it cannot be otherwise. . . I wish I could write some news to you, but all I can write until we have a fight,—an awkward way of saying *never*,—are trifling things that the press will not notice. You get more war news than we do, for a Boston paper is better for news than any of the one-horse concerns here. Give my thanks to Mrs. T. and Fred for writing to me, and for the *mending materials*, which I find indispensable, especially the yarn."

He closes his letter with an expression which shows how little these very young men were inclined to engage, of



their own accord, in warlike pursuits:—"If this government should become a monarchy and your humble servant crowned King of it, I should not be more surprised than to have known a year and a half ago, that I was to be in the Army this year of our Lord, 1862."

Journal of D. H. Grows: "Monday, January 6th. There has been quite a snow storm during the night. When I went out to breakfast there was about two inches of snow on the ground. The air is quite warm. Our stove broke down in the night.

I am detailed for Guard on the 2d relief. I went on at 11 o'clock and came off at 1 o'clock, then 5 to 7, then 11 to 1 at night, 5 to 7 in the morning. The water we drink here makes a person sick.

Tuesday, January 7th. Fourteen more horses have come in this morning. I went this afternoon with the Captain's clerk to the Senate Chamber in the Capitol. Sixteen more horses have come. We have now about 70 horses. This forenoon I, with five others, went out on a foraging party. We went about 4 miles from camp. It was a splendid sight to see so many camps. There are about 30 batteries around here.

Thursday, Jan'y 9. Was awakened this morning about 5 o'clock by hearing it rain very hard, got up and found about an inch of water all over the bottom of the tent. It had run in by the door. We dug two large holes in the ground, and took out five pails full of water. Our beds were wet. I got my blankets dried and got some straw, and spread down in the tent, and it has dried up the mud considerably. The mud is from about 3 to 5 inches deep, and the travelling is very hard as the soil is clayey. The bugle will soon sound 'Lights out.'"

Private Grows went to Washington to send some money by Adams' Express, and being detained four minutes over the time, four o'clock, allowed by his "pass," he was arrested within a short distance of the Battery guard line



by the provost guard, a beardless youth, and sent to the Louisiana Avenue jail.

"I was taken," he writes, "into a large room, where there were about seventy men, some for desertion, drunkenness &c. I was immediately saluted with the cry of 'fresh fish, meaning I was a new comer. I was detained till morning, when I was called into the office and given a 'pass' for twenty-four hours, also a line to my Captain not to have me punished, for had he been on the street he would not have arrested me, when I was so near my camp, and such a short time over my 'pass' viz. four minutes. I was a green and fresh soldier, and it taught me a lesson, not to look at the man, but to notice the uniform he wore, and to respect that, if I did not the man."

Resuming the Journal. "Jan'y 10, 1862. Word has just been received in camp, of the sailing of the 'Burnside Secret Expedition.' If it is successful,—and we all hope it will be,—this war will be settled in a very short time. (See p. 116).

The Pensacola sailed yesterday to run the blockade (of rebel batteries) on the Potomac. There is considerable excitement here at present in regard to her success.

The Roll Call was called in the tents tonight, it was so muddy outside, and this pleased the men very much."

#### THE BLOCKADE OF THE POTOMAC.

Preparations for the blockade of the Lower Potomac were commenced previous to the Battle of Bull Run, July 21, 1861.

From Alexandria the Potomac runs almost directly south to the mouth of Acquia Creek, a distance of 30 miles; then it runs directly east for 15 miles where it rounds Matthias Point, a very prominent projection northward into the stream, and almost entirely separated from the main land by Gamble's Creek.

In a letter addressed to the Secretary of the Navy.



McClellan expressed his apprehension that the Potomac might be rendered impassible to Federal vessels, and recommended the strongest possible naval force to be stationed in that stream, but it was found that new batteries interfering with the navigation of the stream could be built as rapidly as the old ones were destroyed, and that nothing could effectually protect the navigation of the Potomac except the military occupation of its entire right bank by our army, and this did not form a part of the plan of operations.

---

Chase's Diary. "Jan'y 11, 1862. Fifth Detachment hitched up today for drill for the first time."

Grows' Journal Jan'y 12. "Was called at 1 o'clock this morning. Stationed over the guns. Relieved at 3 o'clock this morning."

#### FROM SEVERAL LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

##### DATE "CAMP SUMNER

Jan'y 12, 1862.

We have now 86 horses,—110 being our full number,—and shall get the rest this week. I have taken the horses out to exercise two or three times, and so far we have got along without accident, though a man occasionally gets thrown off and we have a loose horse to chase. We take our meals now in our tents, using a box cover for table. We bought a set of crockery &c. the other day, and now live in great style. We have roast beef, eggs, cranberry sauce, bread, crackers, coffee, with milk and sugar, cake &c. Our principal trouble is that we have no floors to our tents, and only a few loose boards to stand on, but then we have quite a field of grass growing inside, which is quite ornamental.





At present we have no stables, and the horses stand at the picket rope out of doors. . . We are living now in camp style. We have a boy to look after our things, and we i. e. the four lieutenants, take our meals in our tent. The Captain takes his meals with the officers of the Dutch batteries. . . Our carpenter is now busy making us a mess chest. . . encamped . . south of East Capitol street and east of North Carolina Avenue."

Grows' Journal "Jan'y 13, 1862. It is blowing quite hard, and the mud is almost dried up. At 9 o'clock this forenoon took all our bedding, carried it out of the tent and left it out till noon, so the clothes would have a good airing. We always make it a practice every Monday when it is pleasant to air our bedding and examine our clothes.

Tuesday Jan'y 14. Two inches of snow on the ground. 9 o'clock in the evening: Have just come off guard, went on at 7. It is now hailing, a perfect gale. It is very hard for the horses to be picketed out in such weather, but it cannot be helped until we get the other side of the river. One of the men got a quart of oysters, some milk and crackers, and I cooked them in a stew style, and we sat down and eat them. I must now turn in for I will be called at one o'clock tomorrow morning to go on guard till 3 o'clock. The gale has not abated any as yet, and it will be an awful night.

Wednesday Jan'y 15. Got up and dressed at 1 o'clock this morning, put my rubber blanket over my overcoat, and went out into the storm. It is not blowing quite as hard as it has been, but it is hailing very bad. I am provided with tip-top underclothing, so I do not care much for the storm. Was relieved at 3 o'clock, came into the tent, sat down on my bed and took a smoke, and while sitting in this way I fell asleep. It is cold in the tent for the men let the fire go out. I had a good breakfast this morning. I went to the cook house and asked one of the cooks to give me some beef. I cut off about two lbs. of steak, broiled it



and went into it with bread and coffee. Milk is so high that I seldom buy any, so I drink my coffee without it, but we have plenty of sugar. Milk is worth 10 cts. a qt., butter 28 to 30 cts. a lb., so we give up these luxuries. Three times a week we get potatoes, twice a week we get rice with molasses.

It is raining quite hard, five o'clock p. m. Our tent is afloat and we are digging holes to drain the water off. We will have a wet and muddy floor to lay on tonight.

9 o'clock p. m.: I am going to turn in. I went out and took some rails off a fence and have laid them down on the ground so I can lay my rubber blanket on them, and then my bedding, and by this means keep out of the mud. We have a good fire in the stove and hope to have the mud dried up by morning. It does not look much like home with good bed and bedding, but as it will not last long we make the best of it.

Thursday Jan'y 16, 1862. Got a 'pass' this forenoon to go down to the city, and visited the Patent Office. Among the curiosities we saw General Washington's tent, his suit of clothes he wore when he resigned his commission at Annapolis in 1783, and most of his camp utensils; also fifteen silk robes presented by the Emperor of Japan to President Buchanan.

The health of our camp is very good. I was never in better health. We have heard this afternoon of the arrival of Burnside's expedition at Fortress Monroe."

### FORTRESS MONROE.

The Fortress encloses 75 acres of ground. It had in 1861, two tiers of guns, casemates and barbettes, and it was thought there were over three hundred guns within its walls.

It is situated a mile and a half from the main land, and completely commands Hampton Roads and the



entrance to the James River. It is of great importance in a military point of view. The peninsula on which it stands is about 100 yards in width and is commanded by the guns of the Fortress. It is surrounded by an outside wall of granite. Between this wall and the walls of the fort is a moat twelve feet deep, and 125 feet in width.

The garrison of 300 men was increased to 1100 by the reinforcements conveyed from Massachusetts by the steamers "S. R. Spaulding" and "State of Maine."

Grows' Journal. "January 17, 1862. I am detailed on the quarter guard that is over the Powder Magazine. The mud is almost ankle deep. The horses for our Detachment were matched off this forenoon and the drivers took them out this afternoon for exercise. I turned in at 9 o'clock and was awakened at 10 o'clock by the heavy firing of cannon, which lasted till 12 o'clock. It sounded in the direction of the Potomac and we have supposed it was an engagement with one of the rebel batteries. We shall hear in the course of a few days what it was for.

Word was received here by one of our men, Mr. Estee of Malden Mass., by his brother who is in the Treasurer's Office in this city, that this Battery would be at home in a few months, as the trouble would be over in a short time.

The mud is awful, owing to the clay which is from two to four inches below the surface of the ground, and it stops the water from soaking down."

#### SIGNALS.

OFFICE OF CHIEF OF ARTILLERY,

ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

WASHINGTON D. C.

January 17, 1862.

COMMANDING OFFICER

BATTERY E. MASS. ART'Y.

Sir.

I am instructed by Brig. Gen'l Barry, to direct you to send to the office of the Signal Dept. of the U. S. Army, No. 158 F. st. between 19th and 20th streets, on Monday morning the 20th inst. at 11 o'clock, a



commissioned and a non-commissioned officer, for the purpose of receiving instruction in day and night signals.

I am, sir,

Very respectfully yr obt. serv't

ALEX. T. WEBB.

Maj. and ass't to Chief of Artillery.

---

Grows' Journal. "Jan'y 20, 1862, Monday: On guard at 7 o'clock p. m. and came off at 9. While on guard I felt hungry, so I went to the quartermaster's tent and got some potatoes, and dug a hole in the ashes of our camp fire and baked them. They tasted good although we eat them without salt or gravy.

Word was brought into camp this morning that the army on the other side of the river had made an advance today, and it was good news to us, for the sooner we advance the sooner the struggle will be over.

Turned in at half past nine but did not go to sleep on account of Joe Knox and D. McVey, for they commenced snoring, so I got up and took a piece of twine and tied their great toes together, for they sleep in the same bed. I then laid down and waited for the result. In about half an hour Knox went to turn over, when the twine on his toe brought him up, and then—they wanted to know who did it, but no one knew anything about it, for I had blown out the candle, and it was as dark as the grave. Some way they managed to get at the candle and light it and untie the twine. About half past ten I went to sleep to be called at 1 o'clock tomorrow morning."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP SUMNER Jan'y 21, 1862.

The arrival of the mail has already come to be an event in our life. Our Quartermaster Sergeant leaves here every morning, and gets back about two o'clock with the letters,





and the men are generally so impatient that he has to deliver the mail before he can get off his horse. . . We were troubled at first with the water running in, forming mud puddles, but we have found a remedy for that. We dug a hole in the lowest part of the tent, so that the water collects in this hole, and when it gets full we bail out and start again. . . The men are very much exposed, some of the tents are very wet, the water standing in puddles all over the floor. Then the government boots leak like a sponge so that they have wet feet constantly, but still they keep in good health and spirits. Our horses too are very much exposed, only protected by a hedge of cedars to keep off the wind. . . Lieut. Dillingham and I went out with them today and I had rather a gay time of it. I happened to get on a horse of rather high spirits, commonly known as the 'peacock,' a very good horse in his way, but having some unpleasant peculiarities. If I touched him with the spur he stood on his forelegs, if I checked him with the rein he stood on his hind legs, if I did both together he went off sideways in the most unaccountable style. I expected every five minutes to take a seat in the mud, but luckily I managed to keep on during the hour's ride and arrived home safely. I made a mental resolution, however, to try a different horse next time. Our stable duties have already got to be a little burdensome. There are three feed calls during the day, at each of which the officer of the day is expected to be at the stable to oversee the feeding; one feed call comes at six in the morning,—then the officer of the day is expected to visit the stable during the night after twelve o'clock—. . .

For a table we have a bureau with two drawers and an extension leaf. . . Milk is abundant and crowds of milkmen, women and boys visit us every day."

In this letter Phillips speaks of "a few cedar boughs in front of the door to wipe our feet on."

From Letter of January 22d.—"Visiting the stables is



rather the worst job, as the horses are kicking and splashing the mud round all the time. . . . The men have had great sport lately with the cows round the camp. Quite a number of these animals are straying round eating what they can get, and getting rather a scanty living. To their hungry appetites the hay which we have piled up for the horses presents quite an attraction, and our men have great difficulty in keeping it for our own use. So they think they might as well make something out of the cows in return, and most of them manage to have fresh milk for breakfast. Besides this they get a little amusement. Not content with horseback riding, they have taken to riding cows, and the result has been a series of ludicrous catastrophes.

The process is as follows: as soon as a cow is discovered in the vicinity, she is surrounded and captured by half a dozen men, some holding on to her horns and some on to her tail. Then somebody mounts the animal and off she goes; the length of time that her rider sticks on varying very much. The final result, however, is the same in all cases. The rider is pitched into the mud more or less summarily, and the animal leaves camp rapidly. . . . Every day we take the horses out and exercise for an hour or so. We generally go over to the parade ground which begins a short distance from our camp, and extends to the shores of the East Branch. The Parade contains 40 or 50 acres, and the troops, mostly artillery, are encamped all around it. Eight or nine batteries of the 1st N. Y. Artillery are encamped on our side. Close to us are 4 German batteries, then there are two or three regular batteries, and on the farther side near the cemetery there is a regiment of cavalry,—regulars I believe,—so you see we have quite a force in our vicinity, and besides what I have mentioned several regiments of infantry, 57th Penn. and 10th N. J. Among them, are encamped on the hills to the Northward. From our camp we can see our large encampment on the other shore, and several forts."



Grows' Journal "Jan'y 22, 1862. In conversation, one of the best informed officers we have on the grounds told me today that we could not be south long, for Massachusetts was the first to answer the call to arms, and therefore her troops will be sent home first. Word was received here today that as soon as the ground hardens up some, we will cross the river and go into winter quarters.

Friday Jan'y 24. Went to the Arsenal with the limber and caisson to have them filled with shot and shell. Was gone about three hours. It is now about 11 o'clock a. m., and I must stop to take an examination of the powder boxes, so I can report to the Commissary.

After dinner I was called into the Captain's quarters, and was shown how to cut the fuze of shell and spherical case shot, it being my place after doing the carpenter's work of fitting the boxes containing the shell and shot, to prepare them ready for the No. 5 man of the gun Detachment.

It is performed in this manner: On the outside of the shell there is a small dial about 2 inches in diameter, and marked from right to left (Like the dial of a clock) 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, for a five second shell. For instance, if you wish the shell to explode in three seconds after it leaves the gun, you take a small chisel and cut the thin lead covering off at the figure marked '3' and then remove all the covering to the right, but never cut to the left. Under this thin covering of lead is a deposit of fine meal powder which is ignited by the firing of the gun.

In a spherical case shot it is filled with musket balls and sulphur, and is used to fire into infantry and is capable of doing great execution. In a shell it is filled with powder, and the bursting of it causes the fragments to do a great deal of hurt. In a limber, that is the part to which the gun is attached, there are 39 rounds. In the left part are spherical case, in the centre are canister, and on the right are shell. In the caisson, that is the team that follows each gun, are three boxes, each one containing the same number



of rounds as there are in the limber. This kind of shot and shell is used only on the howitzers, as they can fire only shell and canister. We have two howitzers and four rifled guns. The rifle guns can only use rifle and solid shot. A part of the solid shot is composed of twine and grease so to fill the grooves in the gun, and they are capable of going a great distance.

There has been a change in the War Department in regard to artificers. They now only allow two regular ones, the blacksmith and harnessmaker, their pay is \$15 a month, and they must work about all the time. The carpenter and wheelwright receive \$13 a month for their regular pay, and every day they work they receive extra pay, so I shall do better than the two who get \$15 a month. This month so far I have not had anything of importance to do, but will soon have enough, I think.

Saturday Jan'y 25. After dinner I was called by the Captain to take charge of a gun Detachment and go to the Navy Yard and get the caisson and limber loaded, but as the shot was not ready we came back. Will have to go down Monday again. While waiting at the yard I met Sergt. Wright of Porter's Battery. (First Mass.) After coming back to camp we had to report to the officer, and then we commenced digging around our tent, for the sun had softened the mud considerably, and we needed a channel to drain it off. After this we went to roll call where we were addressed by General Schouler of Boston, Mass. He informed us that we would not be here long."

#### NOTES OF CAPTAIN MAX EPPENDORFF.

PERSONAL REMEMBRANCE FROM OCT. 23, '61 TO JAN'y  
25, '62.

"On October 24th. 1861, I took charge of the Battery then in camp at Lynnfield.

There were present in camp 2 First Lieutenants Geo. D.





Allen and John B. Hyde, and 1 Second Lieutenant Rob. Dillingham.

The 2d Second Lieutenant Charles A. Phillips joined the Battery beginning of November. Next to these commissioned officers there was a full complement of non-commissioned officers and men.

Let me first say a few words about them. I cannot say too much in their favor. Of course there were some 'black sheep' among them, but they were soon transferred to other Batteries or regiments lacking men. The great majority of the men hailed from New England, and they were above the common standard of volunteers in regard to intelligence as well as morals. You soon could notice that these men had left their homes, not for any selfish purpose, but for the high cause for which each one of them was willing to sacrifice his life. It was a pleasure as well as an honor, to command them! In the early part of November the camp was moved from Lynnfield to more suitable grounds at Readville, near Boston, which afforded plenty of room for foot-drill, the then only possible way to keep the men in useful activity, their outfit being limited to side arms.

Some time in early December '61, General Burnside prepared his expedition against certain forts along the coasts of Maryland and Virginia recently erected by the rebels, and which were opposing the advance of the federal army toward Richmond. To manage the guns on board the ships attacking these forts from the sea, the 5th Battery was ordered to report to General Burnside. The little article here annexed, cut from a New Bedford paper, gives a correct statement of my doings after receiving the Order. Had I not succeeded in persuading Gov. Andrew, as well as General Burnside to have the order countermanded, the 5th Battery, Mass. Light Artillery might have been wiped out of existence."



## NEWSPAPER EXTRACT.

"The 5th Artillery, Capt. Eppendorff, is still in camp at Readville. It is under orders to join Burnside's expedition, but has not been provided with horses, and has had no drill in artillery movements. Capt. Eppendorff is too much of an officer to desire to take green men aboard a ship with green horses, to make an artillery company of after reaching some far off Southern point, where immediate action may be necessary. He has laid the case before the Governor, and the Governor has written a statement of the facts to Gen. McClellan, that he may decide upon them. Capt. Eppendorff only asks a fair chance, and then he will do credit to the state and to the army."

Notes of Captain Eppendorff continued:—"My desire to obtain the horses for the 6 rifled field pieces from New England remount, could not be granted by Governor Andrew, as he had been informed by the War Department in Washington, that there were for such purposes plenty of horses,—nearly 4000,—in Government stables at Georgetown, which in course of time had been returned from the front.

On the 25th of December, 1861, the Battery broke camp at Readville, and went by rail to Washington, where it went into camp on Capitol Hill to the East of the Capitol. Soon after Gen. Barry, commander-in-chief of Artillery in Gen. McClellan's Army of the Peninsula, sent the order to make out my requisition for horses needed for the Battery, informing me at the same time that I should take my pick from those horses returned from the front, as stated above. With two of my men, whom I knew to be good judges of horseflesh,—one of them either James A. or Charles M. Tripp,—I went to Georgetown, where we found the horses in half-open sheds, tied to the manger by leather straps or ropes, without litter, and so close packed together as to make it impossible for them to lie down.

At the end of a few days I had to report to Gen. Barry that I had not found a single horse among the 4000, which I could conscientiously consider fit for artillery service. Laughingly he ordered me to make out my requisition, to



select the horses from the Remount, which was daily brought in by the farmers.

It was rather slow work, since I had to make an arrangement with a cavalry officer who had come there for the same purpose, to have the first pick of the fresh horses every other day. However, after a time I had the satisfaction of having an excellent collection of horses on the picket lines, —so excellent, indeed, that General McClellan sent his adjutant twice to pick horses for his private use from my stock.

This duty of completing the number of horses needed, requiring my chief attention and time, I ordered Lt. Phillips to draw from the Arsenal of the Navy Yard in Washington the ammunition for the Battery, which consisted exclusively of the Schenke shell with Percussion and Time fuzes, which had recently been adopted by the War Department.

Unfortunately, before the Battery was fully equipped, my health broke down, and I had to resign. When I bade the boys farewell, it seemed to me as if many of them showed that they did not like the parting.

Some time in Winter '62, I met my old Q. M. Tim Terry. If he reported to me correctly that Gen. McClellan had declared the 5th Mass. Battery to be one of the best equipped, best mounted, and best disciplined in his Army, I was fully rewarded for what I had been able to do in the short 3 months of my activity, to bring it to that high standard. But I could not have accomplished it without the assistance of my men!

I cannot close my communication without referring to a pleasant incident in connection with one of the privates of the Battery, Patrick W. . . . He belonged originally to the 'black sheep' mentioned above. For some reason or other he was spared the fate of the others to be transferred, although he had to be punished repeatedly and severely for not leaving liquor alone.—One evening whilst the Battery



was in camp at Washington, the Orderly Johnson with,— if I recollect well,— Sergeant Morgridge, entered my tent and said:—

'Captain! What shall we do with W. He got drunk again, and is in the prison-tent handcuffed. He sits on an empty box, pounding with his heels against it, and laughing at every word I say to him.'

In spite of their remonstrances, I went to see W. alone, the sergeants remaining outside the tent. I found W. as Johnson had said, sitting on a high box, pounding furiously against it and grinning at me.

After looking at him a few seconds I called out in rather a harsh tone:—

'W. . . . .! Attention!'

He jumped down and stood before me, straight, not moving a muscle. Then I began to speak to him. What I said I do not remember, but soon he was on his knees before me, seizing my hand, and with the hot tears running down his cheeks, calling out with a solemn oath that he would change his life and never touch a drop of liquor again.

To my question 'Is that true, W.?' he called out, 'Captain, as true as we both are living!'

I made him rise, had the hand-cuffs taken off, and sent him to his tent.

When I saw Terry in winter he told me that W. . . . was one of the best men in the Battery. I was much pleased to see by the 'Soldiers Memorial' that W. was promoted March 1, 1863 to be corporal.

After the close of the War, during a visit at New Bedford, in walking up County street, I saw a heavy wagon with flour coming towards me, the driver sitting on top of it. When the wagon came up to me, the driver reined in his horses, jumped down, ran up to me, and seizing my hand, called out: 'Captain! I have kept my word!' It was Pat. W. and we both of us felt happy to have met again. If he is still living and should read this little incident, he





would be pleased to see that his old Captain is still kindly remembering him—and if he is dead, it might not be out of the way to have the facts made known in order to honor the memory of a brave man.

MAX EPPENDORFF.

September 17th 1900."

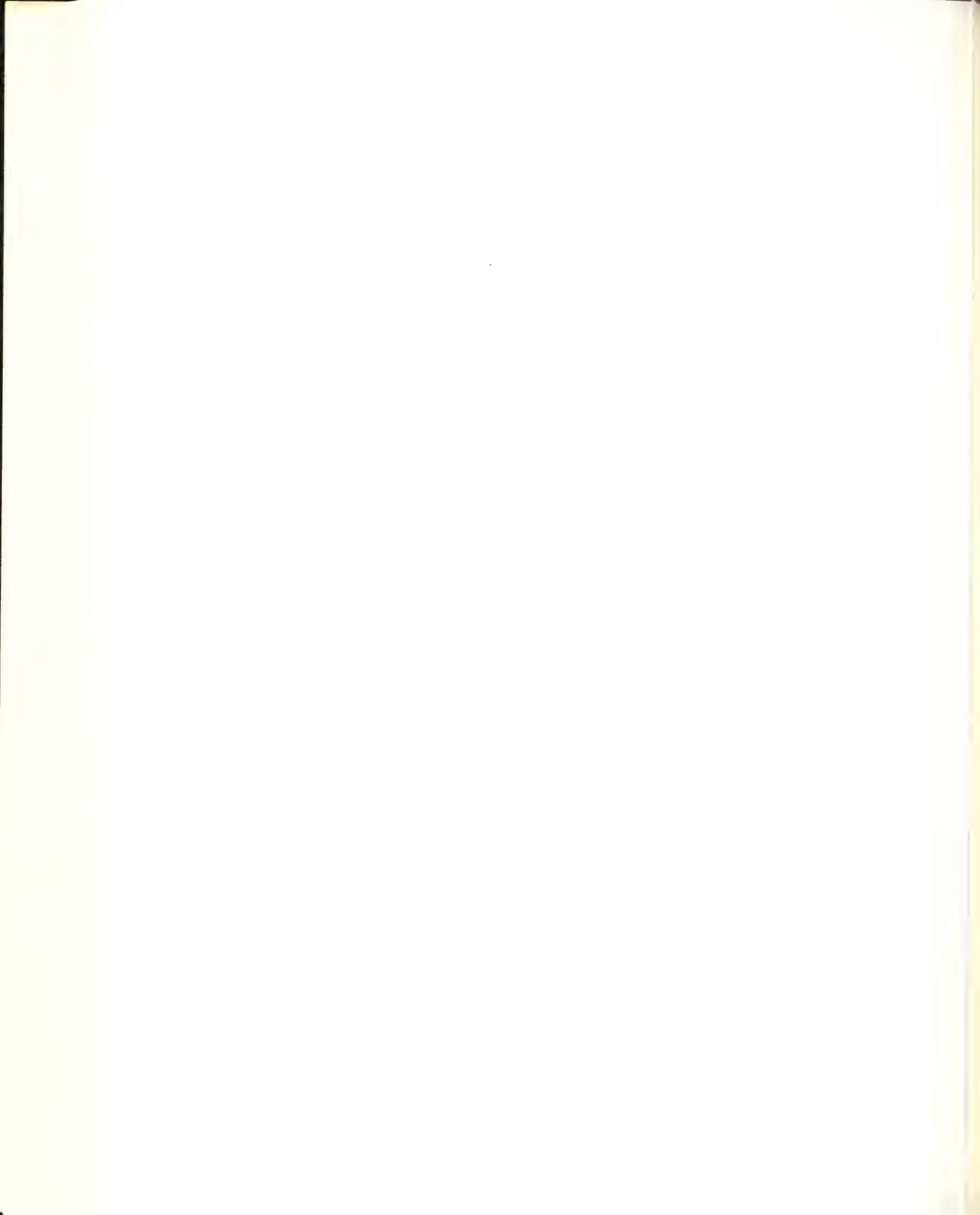
#### ROANOKE ISLAND.

Roanoke Island N. C. was the key to all the rear defences of Norfolk, and commanded the seaboard from Oregon Inlet to Cape Henry. It commanded the only entrance to Albemarle Sound, which connects with Pamlico by means of Croatan and Roanoke Sounds, on either side of the island.

With relation to the expedition of General Ambrose E. Burnside to the coasts of Maryland and Virginia referred to by Captain Eppendorff, official records show that on the 6th of September, 1861, General McClellan had requested the Secretary of War "to organize two brigades of five regiments each, of New England men, for the general service, but particularly adapted to coast service." The expedition commanded by General Burnside, whose destination had been changed from the Chesapeake Bay and the Potomac to the coast of North Carolina, was not ready until the new year, and on January 7, 1862, after meeting with the fleet at Fortress Monroe under Flag-officer Louis M. Goldsborough, it was ordered to Roanoke Island. There were seven gunboats connected with Burnside's Division. The expedition sailed out of Hampton Roads January 11, 1862. (See p. 106.)

#### VISIT OF ADJUTANT GENERAL SCHOULER.

The chief of staff of His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief of the militia of the State of Massachusetts, was Adjutant General William Schouler, and January 25th, 1862,



he made an official visit to Camp Sumner on Capitol Hill. The object of this visit was to ascertain the condition of the troops, and to verify Descriptive Rolls. In a letter to the Governor, he says:—

“Upon my arrival at Washington I ascertained that Captain Eppendorff of the Fifth Battery had resigned. I visited the camp and found the men in good health and anxious to have their guns.

By an order the Battery had been attached to General (William B.) Franklin's Division. For reasons not necessary to detail, they desired to be placed in General Fitz John Porter's command. Their case was presented to General William F. Barry, Chief of Artillery, by Hon. Messrs. (Thomas D.) Eliot (of New Bedford) and (Daniel W.) Gooch (of Melrose) congressmen in whose districts the Battery was raised, and by myself, and he consented to the desired change, if General Fitz John Porter, whose quarters were near Hall's Hill, Va., could find use for them. Subsequently, I had an interview with General Porter at his headquarters, and he asked me to say to General Barry, that he would be pleased to receive as many Massachusetts batteries as would be sent him, although he did not wish to interfere with any previous arrangements of the War Department. The result is that the order was changed, and the Battery is over the river in General Porter's Division. With a few weeks' drilling it will be very efficient.”

There is no date to this letter and the closing lines are a little in advance of the notes of the members of the Battery as arranged chronologically.

Grows' Journal "Jan'y 26, 1862. As it was a glorious morning we took our bedding and all our equipments, and carried them out into the park to give them an airing. It was a pretty, but odd sight, to see each man's bedding laying in front of his tent, with his knapsack, sword, canteen and haversack, on top.

#### THOUGHTS ON GUARD.

In the hours of the night, when you and my sweet child are in sweet slumbers, I am walking my 'beat' while on guard. I have often walked over my beat almost an hour at a time, and when I came to myself it would seem that I was just awakened from a dream.



Joseph Hall called in to the tent this evening. He has got his discharge. He was unfit for service when he enlisted. A more honest man never walked, but an oversight has caused him all this. He is only 23 years old.

A man in the 'Rocket Battery' was killed yesterday by a horse, he was kicked in the head. His body will receive a military escort to the Depot, to then be sent to New York where he belongs.

Monday Jan'y 27th. Went out and helped clean the Gun, after which I was ordered to look after the packing of some shot and shell. Was occupied till 12 o'clock. The escort of the man who was killed, passed by us this afternoon. He was in a walnut coffin, and it was placed on the carriage of the Gun to which he belonged. The coffin was covered with the American flag.

At the 5 o'clock Roll this afternoon: The Captain of our Battery goes home to New Bedford tomorrow. Lieut. Allen takes command till a new Captain is appointed. In all probability it will be Allen. We all want him very much."

Chase's Diary "Jan'y 27, 1862. Capt. Eppendorff informed the Battery, that his resignation had been accepted. First Lieut. G. D. Allen left in command until a captain is appointed."

This was at that important period when General McClellan was engaged in perfecting the organization of the Army of the Potomac and on this day, January 27th, President Lincoln issued his General War Order No. 1, directing a general movement of the land and naval forces.

Chase's Diary "January 28th. Captain Eppendorff left camp."

Grow's Journal "Jan'y 28. Tuesday. On account of new regulations we were called at 6 this morning, and at a quarter past 6 was Roll Call, and half past 6 was Feed Call, for the drivers to attend to their horses. At 7 was Water Call for the horses. At 8 o'clock we had breakfast.



I am very glad of this change for it is better for the men. We had dinner at one o'clock instead of 12."

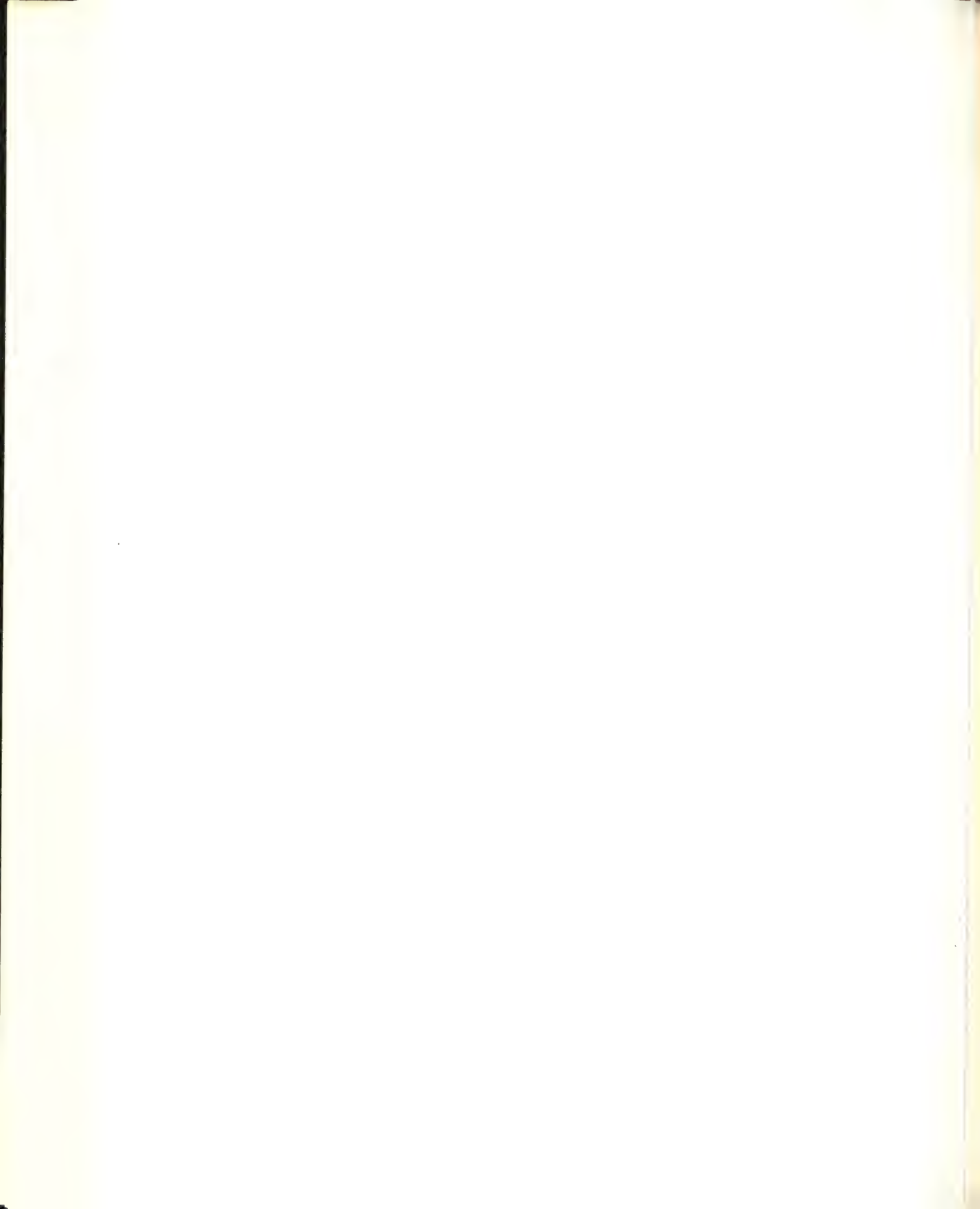
The Officer of the Day attended the Roll Call. The drivers fell in at Stable or Feed Call with "nose bags" to be filled with grain. The Officer of the Day rode a horse bareback at Water Call to superintend the driving of the horses to water.

Grows' Journal "Jan'y 29, 1862. Tonight for supper we had tea, the first I have tasted since I have been here.

Friday January 31st. Had a drill on the Gun this afternoon.

Saturday, Feb. 1. After breakfast went out to see the horses, found one with a broken leg. He was kicked in the night by one of the horses and had his leg broken. He was killed by being knocked in the head. One Battery has been disbanded near to us, they were a New York company. One of our men was at the Capitol today, and the subject in the Senate Chamber was to have some of the batteries discharged. We will hear more about it soon.

Sunday, Feb. 2d, the 'drivers' turned out at 9 to clean their horses and harnesses, and the cannoneers to clean up their quarters &c. &c. I was detailed for guard at 11 o'clock to be on till 1 o'clock p. m. At 12 o'clock we were visited by Colonel Amory of Boston,—he is Master of Ordnance at the State House,—and also Colonel (T. Bigelow) Lawrence. The men were drawn up in line and were addressed by them. They were sent down here by Governor Andrew to see how the men were used, and if they were comfortable. They examined our quarters and our horses and guns &c. &c. and appeared highly pleased with the deportment of the men. They left us about ½ past one o'clock. At 2 o'clock there was divine service in the camp, and the men's voices singing did sound splendid while I was lying down in my tent. I did not have to go out into the line for I was on the guard list. Went on guard again at 5 o'clock p. m.





## BOX FROM HOME.

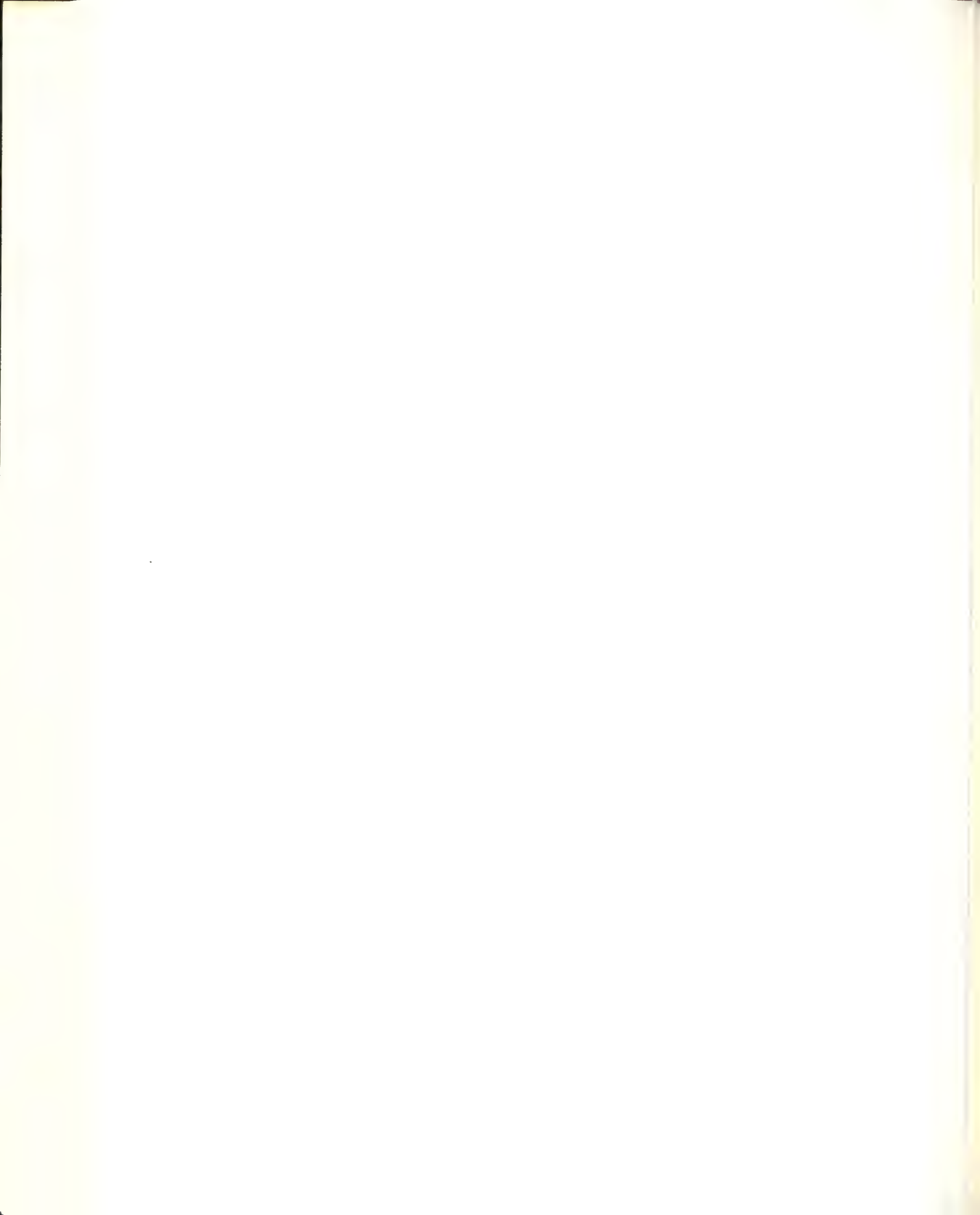
Monday Feb. 3, 1862. At 12 o'clock word came into the tent that the team had come with boxes from the express office. Went out and found Harry Simonds with the Detachment. He showed me the box. I carried it to his quarters and opened it. I received four immense pies, two splendid cakes, tea, coffee, sugar, pop corn, papers etc.

Wednesday Feb. 5th. Most of the Detachments had a drill on their guns. The order was in the morning, 'Empty beds!' In the afternoon the straw came, but it was wet and damp, so I could not fill my bed, and I had to turn in on the ground.

Thursday Feb. 6. Went out at  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 6 to Roll Call. Before we were dismissed to our quarters we were ordered to appear at 10 o'clock in full uniform with side arms; horses hitched in and cannoneers mounted, but a hail storm came up at 8 o'clock, and it has continued to rain, snow, and hail about all day.

Friday Feb. 7. All of the men besides myself except one, filled their beds with the damp straw, the consequence was they all got cold, while Carsley and myself are well. After breakfast we were ordered to appear at 10 o'clock in full uniform with side arms, for the Review. The drivers hitched in their horses at 10, and at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past the cannoneers were on the boxes. It was a splendid sight. Went through the drill of 'Mounting and Dismounting,' and at 11 o'clock, the gun Detachments were dismissed to their quarters, and the drivers had to turn out for Riding drill. They returned at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 12, looking muddy enough.

Sunday, Feb. 9, 1862. The men were called into line at 11 o'clock for divine service. After singing two or three tunes, and reading a chapter in the Bible,—Matthew 4th chapter,—we were dismissed.



Monday Feb. 10th, got a pass to go to the city. Went into the Capitol to see the new painting of General (Winfield) Scott. It is a large and splendid thing. Saw the large paintings in the gallery viz., 'The Surrender of Lord Cornwallis,' 'The Resignation of Washington at Annapolis in 1783,' 'The Embarkation of the Pilgrims,' 'The Landing of Columbus,' 'The Discovery of the Mississippi River by De Soto,' 'The Baptism of Pocahontas,' 'The Declaration of Independence,' and 'The Surrender of Burgoyne.'"

Chase's Diary "Feb. 10, 1862. Hitched up and took guns from the park first time.

Feb. 11, 1862. 5th and 6th Detachments hitched up and drilled 'In Battery' under Lieut. C. A. Phillips, first time."

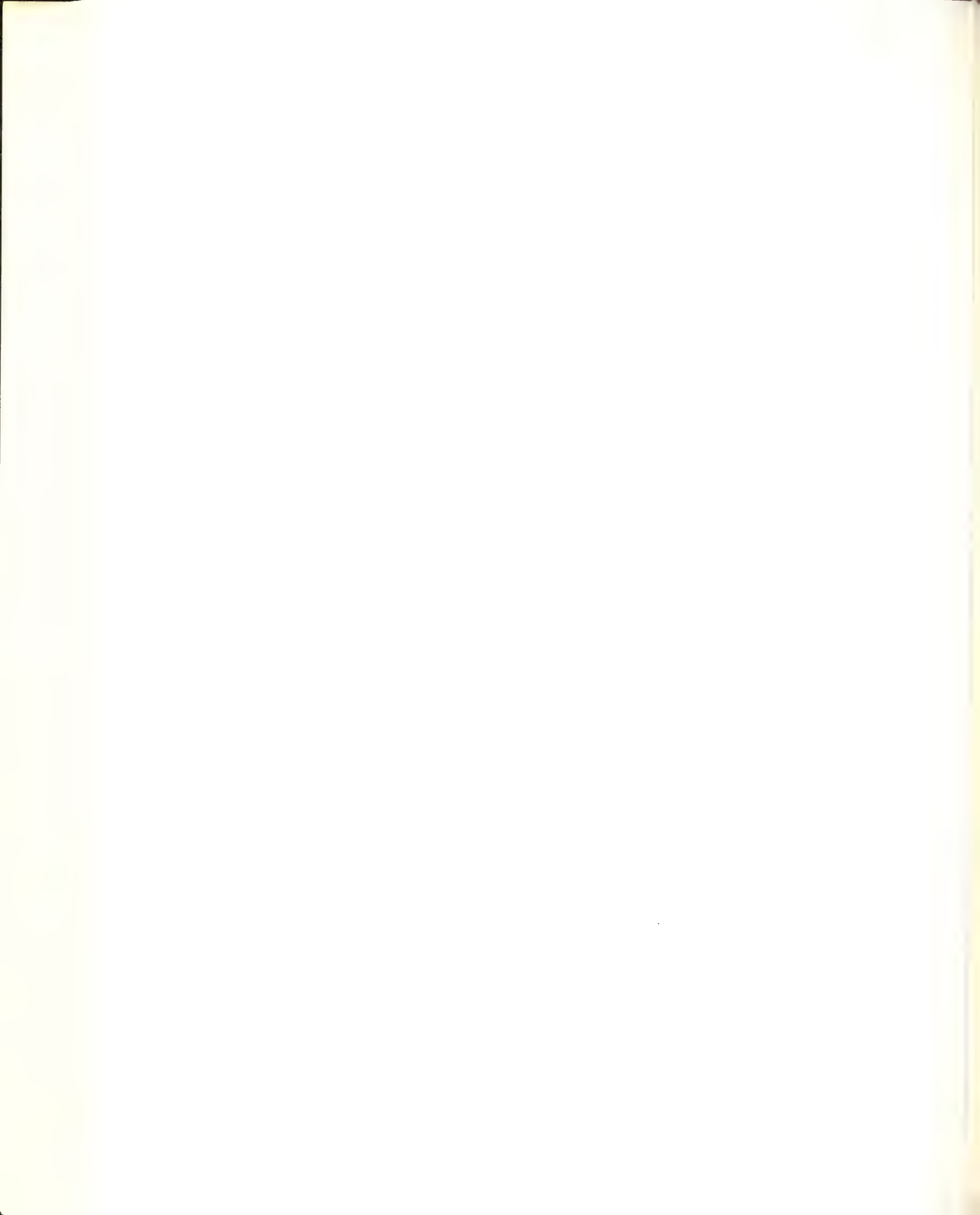
Grows' Journal "Feb. 11th. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning and went on guard. There is a circle around the moon. I think we shall soon have a storm. Am feeling tired and sleepy but I must keep my eyes open, and keep a sharp lookout. One of our horses is back of my tent dying with the Lung Fever and Horse Ail. He will die in a short time. It looks hard to see him suffer, and not be allowed to kill him and put him out of his misery, but that is military rule, unless a horse has a broken leg—then you are allowed to kill him."

Chase's Diary "Feb. 12, 1862. Exchanged our 6 pounder guns for 10 pounder rifled Rodman guns."

### GUNS AND PROJECTILES.

Our guns were exchanged for six three-inch rifled guns. The three-inch gun adopted in our field service, was made of wrought iron, having 7 grooves, .84 in. wide and .075 in. depth. The twist was uniform, and made one turn in 11 feet.

The Schenke projectile was used almost entirely; composed of a cast iron body, the posterior portion of which



terminated in a cone. The expanding portion was a *papier mache* wad, which being forced forward on to the cone, was expanded into the rifling of the bore. On issuing from the bore, the wad is blown to pieces, leaving the projectile entirely unincumbered in its flight through the air.

Occasionally the Hotchkiss projectile was used. This was a compound shot consisting of two parts of cast iron, with the rear cap fitting over the forward portion. Around the joint was placed a band of lead so locked into both parts of the shot as to prevent its flying off after it leaves the piece. The explosion of the charge forces the rear part forward, expanding the lead, forcing it into the grooves, and cutting off windage. The amount of expansion is limited by the distance the cap is allowed to move, and the strain upon the gun is thus reduced to the smallest amount required to give the necessary expansion. The shot is the same as the shell, but left solid.

The 12 pounder Napoleon was of bronze, smooth bore, and muzzle loading. It was officially known as the "light twelve" to distinguish it from the old regulation 12 pounder, which was longer and heavier, though of the same calibre. Its principal dimensions were as follows:

Length over all, 6 feet.

Length of bore 5 ft.  $3\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

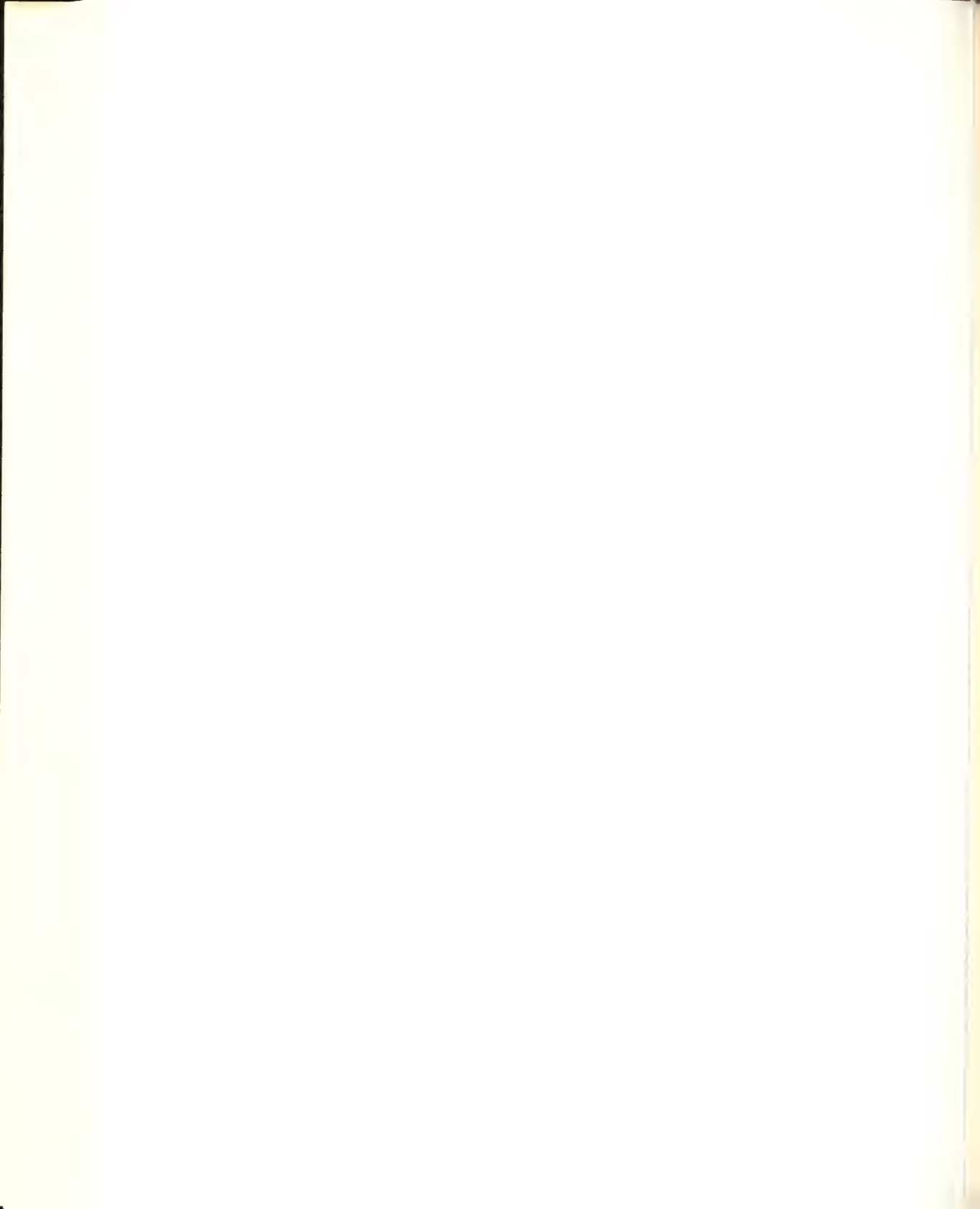
Diameter at breech 11 inches.

Diameter at muzzle  $8\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

Diameter of bore  $4\frac{5}{8}$  inches.

Weight of gun 1,220 pounds.

The round solid shot for this gun weighed 12 pounds. The common shell, with bursting charge [8 ounces] and fuze, weighed nine and one-half pounds. The shrapnel or spherical case, which was a thin shell filled with musket balls and a bursting charge, weighed with its "sabot" 12½ pounds. The canister, which was a tin can of the size of the bore and six inches long, filled with cast iron shot about an inch in diameter, weighed 14 pounds. The "sabot" was



a piece of wood turned to fit the bore, and was placed between the powder and the projectile, instead of the wads. It was used only in smooth bore guns firing spherical projectiles.

The rifled guns, which fired conical projectiles, did not use the "sabot."

By regulation the powder charges for shot, shell and case, were two and one half pounds, and for canister two pounds. The fuze at that time used for round shell and case shot was a metal disk one and one-half inches in diameter. Its outer surface was of lead, or an alloy of lead, soft enough to cut easily. Underneath this metal surface was a ring of "meal powder" or igniting composition. The exterior of the metal disk was marked like the dial of a clock,—three-quarters, one, one and one-quarter, one and one-half, one and three-quarters, two, and so on up to five. These figures indicated in seconds and fractions thereof the time at which the shell would explode after leaving the muzzle if the soft metal was cut out immediately over the desired figure on the dial, so as to expose the composition at that point to the flames of the powder charge (see p. 114. Grows.)

The carriage of the light 12 pounder complete weighed 2,600 pounds, which, with the gun made a total weight of 3,800 pounds, or nearly two tons.

The pattern of caisson remains now substantially as it was then.

The equipment of the rifle batteries was in general the same as that of the 12 pounders except in the matter of ammunition.

The 10 pounder Parrott was scant three inches in caliber, and was made of cast iron, with a wrought iron band shrunk on over the breech.

The three-inch Rodman was of wrought iron, forged solid, and then bored and rifled. Both these types of guns used conical projectiles, weighing, for solid shot, 10





pounds; common shell about eight pounds, and shrapnel about 10½ pounds.

They also had a special canister made for them.

The three-inch wrought iron rifle was generally considered superior to the 10 pounder Parrott, in consequence of the liability of the latter to blow up or break off between the fore-end of the reinforce and the trunnions. But so long as the Parrott gun held together it was as good as any muzzle-loading rifle.

The Parrott ammunition could be used in the three-inch guns if necessary, but the three-inch projectile could not be used in the 10 pdr. Parrotts, because the latter were one-tenth of an inch smaller caliber.

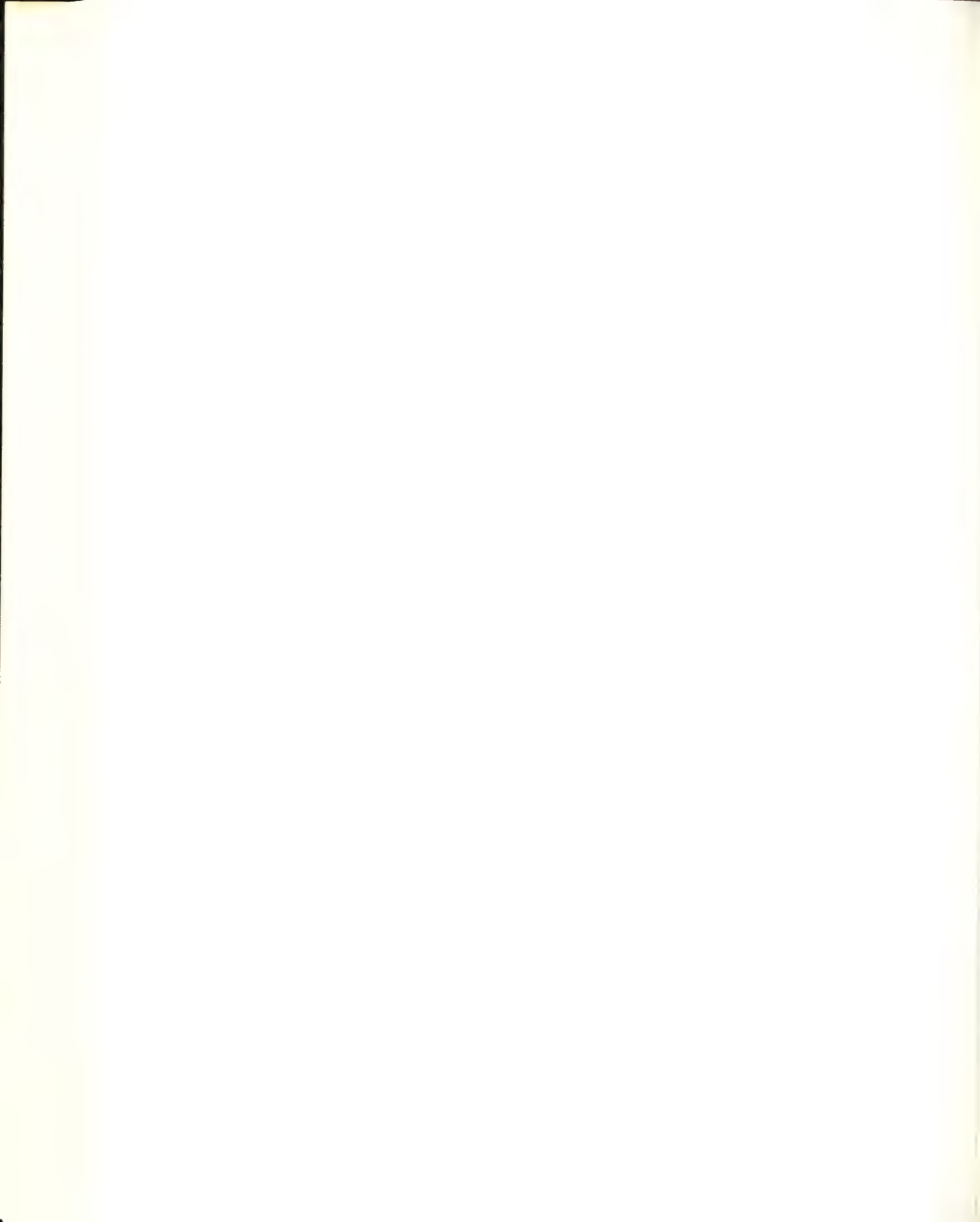
### ARTILLERY HORSES.

A letter from Fortress Monroe to the *New York Commercial Advertiser* in July, 1861, no name signed, thus described the trained horses of the Artillery:—

"It requires considerable time to mount the guns proper for an advancing army, to supply them with trained horses, and especially the right kind of harness. The horse must become accustomed to the gleam of arms, the roll of drums, the flaunting of banners, the dash and the smoke and the roll of cannon. When the war horse is drilled and disciplined, without a sign from man he wheels, advances, and retreats, with almost miraculous rapidity, often compelling riders and gunners to spring to keep their saddles, or escape his lightning like movements. They are made familiar with the guns by having their nostrils placed so close to their muzzles as to feel the heat and inhale the powder."

### BREAKING CAMP.

It was on February 13, 1862, Thursday, that the Fifth Mass. Battery was ordered to report to General Fitz John

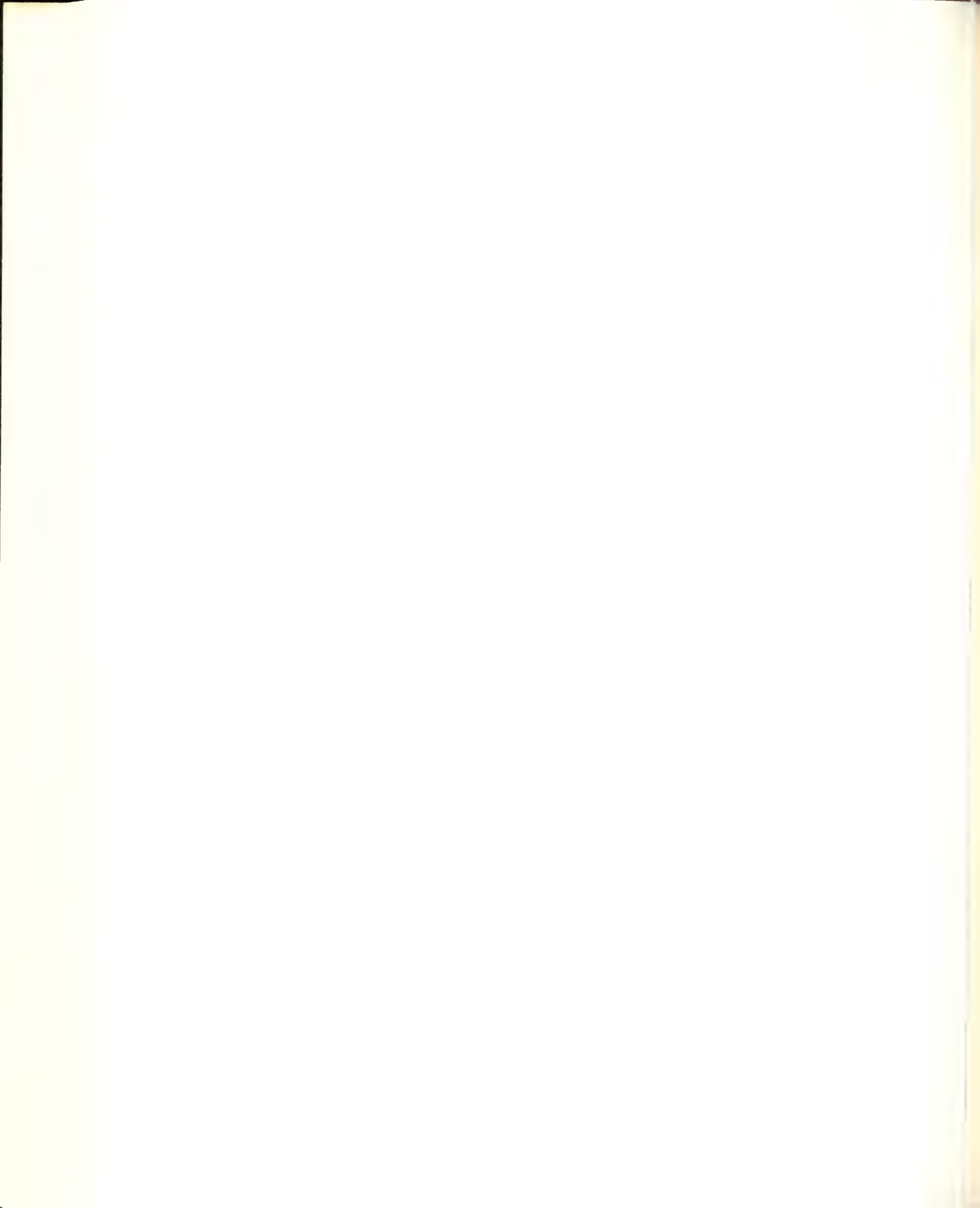


Porter, commanding the First Division, Army of the Potomac.

Chase's Diary of that date has the entry:—"Reveille at 2 a. m. Broke camp and left camp at 7 a. m. for Hall's Hill, Va., and arrived at our new camp about 2 p. m. Battery now attached to General Butterfield's Brigade of General Fitz John Porter's Division, Army of the Potomac."

Grows' Journal has the following:—"Reveille" was sounded at 2 o'clock in the morning, at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 2 the 'Assembly' was sounded. We were then drawn up in line, and told to prepare to 'break camp.' At 6 o'clock in the morning every tent was down and packed away, our uniforms on, knapsacks lashed to the spare wheel, and our rations in our haversacks, and all were ready to start. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 7 the bugle sounded 'Forward,' and we took up our line of march. It was a most glorious morning, and the sun was very warm. We went through the city, the baggage and mule train bringing up the rear. We passed through Georgetown to the Aqueduct. After passing the bridge the order was 'Cannoneers Dismount.' On account of the mud, in some places it was almost over boots, we had to go this way for 4 miles when we arrived at our camp ground, and it is a nice place, with a large stream close by and woods in our rear which will protect us from the winds. There are about 6000 to 8000 men encamped around here. The 18th Mass., the 22d Mass., a Kentucky and a Michigan Regt., the 9th Mass. Regt., and Follett's Battery (Third Mass.). We arrived on this ground at 3 o'clock in the afternoon. Took a rest of about one hour, and then went to work pitching our tents, which we had up in good season. On our march we passed several forts and concealed batteries built by our troops.

This (Hall's) hill is so fortified that it is impossible for the rebels to get to Washington. After our tents were up



I took a walk around the camp. Saw a large body of cavalry coming, bringing 'secesh' prisoners. They go out scouting every morning, returning at night. We are encamped only about 8 miles from the rebels, who are at Fairfax Court House. Our pickets are thrown out for from four to five miles. In about two weeks there will be a grand advance made by our troops."

#### FORT CORCORAN, ARLINGTON HEIGHTS.

Forts Runyon and Corcoran commanded the Long Bridge and the Aqueduct. Fort Albany commanded the Columbia and the Aqueduct and Alexandria roads. After General McClellan assumed command of the Army of the Potomac the interval between Fort Corcoran at Arlington Heights and Fort Albany near Alexandria was filled by a series of works within supporting distance of each other.

#### THE REMOVAL, BY LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The morning was clear and bright and the moon had not set. By seven o'clock everything was ready and we started. Passing through Pennsylvania Avenue we kept on to Georgetown and crossed the Aqueduct. On the other side of that the Battery halted and one by one the pieces prepared to ford their passage. As the First piece went ahead I remained in the rear, and soon loud shouts of laughter from the surrounding soldiers informed me that something had occurred. At first I was afraid the piece was stuck, but I found afterwards that it was one of our men who was stuck in the mud, and who in being pulled out had left both his boots behind. The Second piece followed the First, and as it disappeared I ordered my section forward and on we went up the end of the bridge, then to the left and over a ditch on the right into the mud, and such mud! However, the horses pulled bravely, and on we went. A



little ahead came the hardest tug, up a little ascent, but we got well over it. The mules followed with the baggage teams, and though they stuck a little we all got through without any accident. Just after crossing the Aqueduct the road passes through an intrenchment for infantry, and then keeps on round Fort Corcoran."

Fort Corcoran he describes as a square, bastion fort three sides mounted with heavy guns, and the side toward the Aqueduct merely a stockade, loop holed for musketry, and defended by small swivel guns. "Beyond Fort Corcoran," he continues, "the road passes through another breastwork for artillery and infantry, and then keeps on through the mud and the camp of the 3d Penn. Cavalry. Passing through this we turned to the right down a new corduroy road which carries us straight to camp."

The engineers built the "corduroy" by felling trees and laying them across the road.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"VICINITY OF HALL'S HILL.

Feb. 14, 1862.

We are just this side of Hall's Hill proper, on a little hill close by a large house. Our camp is on the right going from Washington, and our parade ground,—an excellent one,—on the left. . . .

We arrived at our camp at noon, and had everything fixed before dark. Everything is as good as can be. The ground is quite dry comparatively speaking. We have good water at the foot of the hill behind the stables, and wood growing in abundance all round. Two regiments of cavalry passed us this morning on a scouting expedition. We have not yet named our camp."

In another letter Lieut. Phillips thus describes scenes in camp:—





"This morning we had an inspection of blankets, harnesses, brushes, curry-combs, whips &c., and while we were at this Gen. Porter rode up accompanied by Lieut. S. M. Weld of his staff. I went up to Lieut. Weld's quarters the other night, and found him quite comfortably located. . . . Our camp ground is now quite dry . . . all the men have built bunks to sleep in. . . . We are very lucky in having quite a little forest behind us, which supplies us with as much wood as we want. Our stables are down in the woods and are floored with trunks of small trees, so that the horses keep very dry. Some of the camps round here are placed in very exposed situations. The 22d Mass. right on top of Hall's Hill, gets all the wind that blows, and it blows pretty hard here occasionally. Two nights last week we had a perfect hurricane, which tried the strength of our tents pretty effectually. Several went down, and for a time I was in doubt whether ours was going to stand up or not. However, we managed to keep the pole up, and the pins down, but could not succeed in keeping the wind out, so in spite of our fire we had to go to bed early to keep warm. Our tent has suffered a little from the perils of war. The top got burnt a little one day, and as if this were not sufficient for ventilating purposes, Lieut. Scott's horse put his foot through it yesterday afternoon. As we are getting to look at things in a philosophical light we do not trouble ourselves with small trifles. I have forgotten how to take cold or get sick."

---

Grows' Journal. "Friday morning Feb. 14, 1862. Orders were given that after breakfast all of the men clean up the Park. After eating we all went at it, and in about two hours there was not a large stone to be seen on the camp ground. Then we dressed our pieces and caissons and covered them, then went to our quarters. After dinner dressed up and went out. The men were drawn up in line to receive



Captain Griffin and Aide. (Captain Charles Griffin, Battery D, 5th U. S.) He is the man who lost a portion of his battery at Bull Run. He is a stern looking man, but a splendid artilleryman. He will be our drill master. We were marched to our pieces and had a slight drill. We have now four three in. dia. long guns of iron, and two brass howitzers, twelve pounders. They are saucy looking dogs. After this we went to our tents. About 11 boxes have come this afternoon for men in the company, and they are very glad. We are encamped on the grounds once occupied by President William Henry Harrison. His mansion is very near us. It is now used for a Small Pox Hospital. There are now there six or seven cases. A slaughter house is on our camp ground where they kill cattle for the soldiers, so we have fresh beef quite often.

Saturday Feb. 15. Snowing. After breakfast I was detailed with Harry Simonds and others, to cut down some trees for a stable. Got the stable built and went to dinner, had fresh beef and bread and water. After dinner was detailed with three others to get water for the cooks, after which I went into my tent and had a smoke. Was called at 4 o'clock to fix some shovels for the snow which is now about 3 in. deep. It is snowing very hard. The guard were called out to salute General Barry and staff as they passed the camp."

## FORM OF PASS.

DIVISION HEAD QUARTERS

HALL'S HILL VA. Feb. 15. 1862.

Pass Lieut. Allen Mass. Art'y. to Washington and return on important private business.

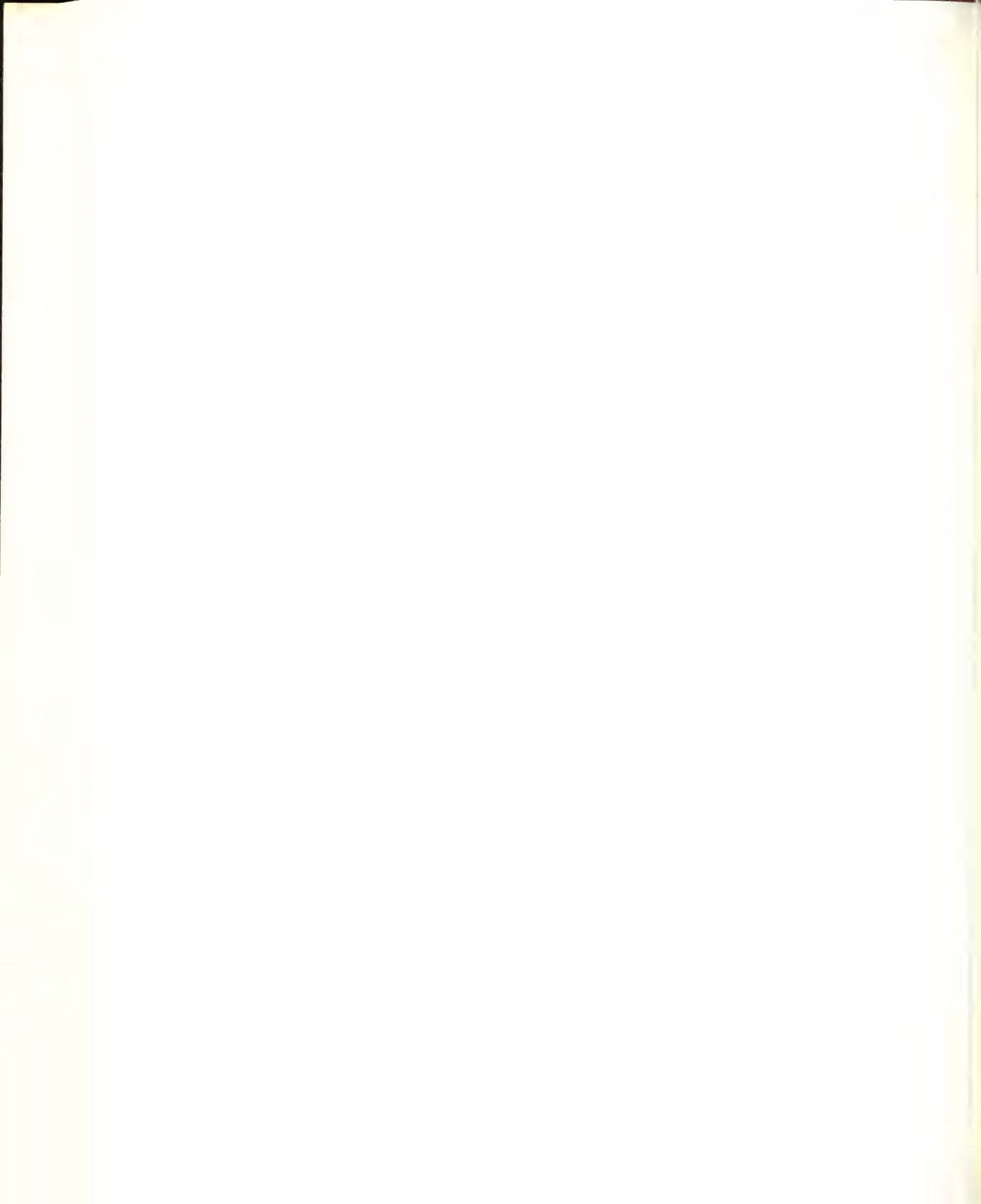
By com. of

BRIG. GEN'L PORTER

G. MONTEITH.

Lt. &amp; A. D. C.

The signature "by com. of" &c. is in red ink, the remainder in black ink, plain and clear after forty years.



## THE ROLL AT HALL'S HILL.

NOTES OF JOSEPH L. KNOX, SEPT. 25, 1899.

"You will find a list of the men as near as I can remember them, and I think that it is just as it was called at Hall's Hill in 1861."

Allen	Flynn	Manchester
Agen	Freeborn	Nield
Alden	Groves	Newhall
Alton 1	Greeley	Newton
Almy	Grows	Olin
Alton 2	Gunning	Pinder
Burt	Gale	Poole
Butler	Gardner	Platt
Brown	Gustine	Parsons
Barry	Gilbert	Proctor
Burkis	Hart	Rice
Barnard	Hayden	Ray
Blanchard	Hall	Saxon
Clark 1	Hewitt	Shaw 1
Canty	Hathaway 1	Stantial
Cook	Hathaway 2	Shaw 2
Caswell	Jordan	Stiles
Carsley	Jav	Shaw 3
Chase	Kay	Tucker
Crapo	Knox	Townsend
Clark 2	Kanuse	Terry
Dunham	King	Tripp 1
Dyer	Leach	Tripp 2
Drew	Lapham	Whitcher
Dickerman	Mitchell	Washburn 1
Doherty	Murray	West 1
Estee	Morrison	Washburn 2
Fitzsimmons	Mack	West 2
	McVey	

---

"Sunday Feb. 16, 1862. (Grows' Journal.) Got up at the usual time feeling awfully stiff with the rheumatism.



The 9th Mass. Regt. and a Regiment of Cavalry went to Fairfax to disperse some rebels. They marched to Vienna but did not see anything. Five more 'Secesh' were brought in today. They were examined and sent to the Prison at Washington. I must stop now to cut up a chicken for one of the men, also some pies and cake which he had sent to him in a box. I have made some tea and shall have a glorious supper. So much like home. . . . After having a smoke we told stories, sang a little, went to Roll Call at 8, and turned in at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8."

Chase's Diary. "Feb. 17, 1862, Lieut. Allen announced to the Company that he had been commissioned as Captain, and the other lieutenants were promoted. Serg't. H. D. Scott promoted to 4th Lieut. Company called in line and the great victory of Fort Donelson announced by orders from Head Quarters. Hearty cheers for the great victory and new officers."

Forts Henry and Donelson were the centre of the Confederate line in Tennessee.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"HALL'S HILL Feb. 18, 1862.

While I had my section out this morning, Captain Griffin rode up and drilled us a little. Our men do first rate considering what opportunities we have had. Captain Griffin says we have 'the finest set of men that ever were got together on the face of the earth!' Lieut. Henry W. Kingsbury of Captain Griffin's Battery has been assigned to this Battery as instructor, as General Porter wishes to push us forward as fast as possible, so that we shall not be much behind the rest of the Division.

The following changes have been announced to the Battery:—

Junior 2d Lt. Henry D. Scott.

Sergeant H. O. Simonds vice Scott promoted.





Corporal C. H. Macomber *vice* Simonds promoted.

Yesterday we received circular orders from General Porter announcing the glorious news from Fort Donelson, followed by permission to issue a ration of whiskey to the men, and an order to fire a national salute. As we are a temperance battery we did nothing about the whiskey, and having no blank cartridges we had to send to Captain Martin's (Third Mass.) Battery to get them. By the time we got ready it was dark, and we postponed the salute till this morning, when it was fired in good style."

Chase's Diary. "Feb. 18, 1862. A salute of 34 guns fired by Serg'ts Lull and Smith's Detachments."

Grows' Journal "Feb. 18, 1862. Tuesday. The assembly was sounded at 10. We all turned out in line and were informed that my friend Harry Simonds was to be the sergeant of the 6th Detachment. The men were very glad, for he is well liked both by men and officers. At 11 we went out to drill under the Drill Captain,—Griffin. He is very strict about drill. At 2 we went to drill again. I had to take No. 1's place on account of his being on guard. It is a rather hard berth, but if it is understood it is one of the best berths there is on the piece. Drill was over at 3 when we went to our quarters.

Wednesday Feb. 19, 1862. The rain held up a little this afternoon, and the Detachment went out to drill on the guns, for word has come that we must move in fifteen days with the Division. We expect to go to Manassas Junction. I want to go on with the Division and see what is to be seen, and not be kept up here in camp like a prisoner.

Thursday Feb. 20, 1862. A splendid morning. About 1 o'clock Lieut. R. A. Dillingham ordered me to build some feed boxes for the horses, so I went to work on them. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 2 Lieut. Kingsbury of the Regulars came over to drill the men, and he did 'put them through a course of sprouts' they never saw before. Knocked off work at 5 and went to Roll Call, had 8 boxes made 16 ft. long. Had supper at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 5 of bread and coffee; the coffee was fair, but the bread was black and very hard.



A change has been made in the hours of the day in regard to drill. The preparatory call is at 10 minutes of 6 in the morning, the Reveille at 6, giving the men 10 minutes to dress and be out in line. After Roll, breakfast call, at  $\frac{1}{4}$  to 7 stable call, at 7 the 'Sick Call.' At this last call all that are sick fall into line, and are marched to the Hospital.

It is a good idea, for the men cannot play off sick.

Instead of mounting guard at 9 in the morning as usual, it is now at 5 in the afternoon."

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Feb. 20, 1862: The officers, commissioned and non-commissioned have daily recitations in Artillery Tactics, and Lieut. Kingsbury has the general oversight of the drill and interior economy of the Battery. This morning he took charge of the drill on the guns, and this afternoon he introduced several changes in the working of the Battery. He is a gentleman, and a well drilled officer, and a brother-in-law of General Buckner,—lately captured,—who married his sister. Captain Griffin has been here several times. Gen. McClellan and staff rode by here this forenoon on a tour of inspection. Our guard was turned out, sabres presented, and the General touched his cap.

We exchange our two howitzers in a few days for two three inch rifled guns, so that my section will be like the rest. Our ammunition will come in a few days, and we shall commence target-shooting."

Grows' Journal: "Friday Feb. 21st. At 9, went to see about some pickets being cut for the feed troughs to be put on for the horses to eat out of. Worked till dinner time. A new rule has been made: the guard of one day will do the police duty of the camp the following day. Today I was stationed over the quartermaster store tent, and I did not want for good things to eat."



## WASHINGTON'S BIRTHDAY 1862.—A NOTABLE ANNIVERSARY.

By General Orders No. 16. Head Quarters of the Army, Washington, Feb. 18, 1862, in compliance with concurrent resolutions of Congress that the President should direct that Orders be issued, copious extracts from the Farewell Address of George Washington were read to the troops by command of Major General McClellan simultaneously with the performance of a similar ceremony before the two branches of Congress in joint session assembled.

In these extracts were emphatic utterances in regard to the unity of government, which might have been spoken in the light of actual events by the orator had he been still at the head of the Army of the United States:—

"But as it is easy to foresee that from different causes, and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, many artifices employed, to weaken in your minds the conviction of this truth,—as this is the point in your political fortress against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively,—though often covertly and insidiously,—directed, it is of infinite moment that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national union to your collective and individual happiness; that you should cherish a cordial, habitual, and immovable attachment to it: accustoming yourselves to think and to speak of it as a palladium of your political safety and prosperity, watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety: discountenancing whatever may suggest even a suspicion that it can in any event be abandoned: and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt to alienate any portion of our country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties which now link together the various parts."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 22, 1862. Gun drill in the afternoon under Lieut. Kingsbury of the Regular Art'y, in the presence of Gen'l Porter. First and Second Detachments hitched up and practised with shells, and a misdirected one went through a house occupied by a family; shell burst, but no one hurt."



AN ACCOUNT OF THE TARGET SHOOTING BY  
LIEUT. PHILLIPS, IN A LETTER DATED

Feb. 23, 1862:—"Lieut. Kingsbury has not yet fairly commenced operations. He has drilled us once or twice. Tomorrow, however, he will pitch his tent and move into camp. The terms upon which we consented to have him come here were that he should act as instructor 'until such time as we were able to take the field alone'; Captain Griffin's own words." But I do not know whether Lt. K. quite understands this. He talks of commanding the Battery, and of taking us into the first action, but he can hardly do this against the consent of Captain Allen, his ranking officer. The conclusion I come to is that we can dispense with his instructions whenever we choose. However, I am very glad to have him here as we all need to learn a good deal. He has assigned lessons in the 'Instruction for Field Artillery' to the commissioned and non commissioned officers and has had two recitations. Hyde, Dillingham, Scott and I recited together, and I believe I came out best, not having yet got out of my college practice.

Lieut. K., without troubling himself about the lesson assigned, skipped all over the book from Battery manoeuvres to harnessing a horse, but did not succeed in catching me, so I think I am all right in that quarter.

Yesterday afternoon Captain Griffin and Lieut. Kingsbury came here and ordered out the Right section for target shooting, so taking 40 rounds of ammunition, we started across the country, taking two fences, and a man's back yard on the way, till we got to the top of a hill, and came into battery.

The mark was a stump on an opposite hill, distance 800 or 1,000 yards, as we afterwards ascertained. The day being foggy and misty, Captain G. and Lt. K. who directed the firing, put the pieces at an elevation of 3 and 4 degrees, corresponding to a range of 1300 and 1600 yds. With these





elevations changing to  $2^{\circ}$  and  $4\frac{1}{2}^{\circ}$ , we fired about 20 shots, some percussion fuzes and some time fuzes, but could not see where any of them burst.

At first Captain G. laid this to the fuzes, but finally we tried an elevation of  $1\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$  and landed a shell half way between the stump and the top of the hill, so we came to the conclusion that we must have been firing over the top of the hill.

Finally, disgusted, and without hitting the mark, we limbered up and returned. On our way to camp we met two men on horseback, looking rather frightened, who informed us that we had been shelling their houses. Lt. Scott went over with them to the scene of operations, and found half a mile beyond the hill a bunch of houses where most of our shell had burst, and he picked up quite a number of fragments lying round. One shell went through the door of a house, knocked out the underpinning on the other side and was picked up in the mud. Another whistled close by a woman's head, and some of the shrapnel scattered bullets among some children playing round. As soon as the shells began to whistle round the house the inhabitants cleared out, and when Scott got there he found only two dogs left. Altogether it was a pretty narrow escape, and we feel thankful that nobody was hurt. We told the man that we knew nothing about the country, but the shooting was under the direction of Captain Griffin, and General Porter was present, and we supposed that they knew what was in range of our guns."

Carefully preserved in Lieut. Phillips' desk (see p. 441) is a brass instrument for sighting a Gun, showing elevation &c., length  $9\frac{1}{2}$  inches.

#### LIEUT. SCOTT'S VERSION.

Lieut. Henry D. Scott remarks relative to the drill in tactics at this time, and the target shooting episode:--



"Kingsbury was a gentleman, and treated us very handsomely. He was afterwards killed at Antietam while making a charge with the 10th Conn. as its colonel. While the Battery remained here it was ordered out for target practice. It was supposed that the principal object was to try the efficiency of the men with rifled guns. The Battery was placed in position on a hill some distance away from Hall's Hill, on our right towards Chain Bridge up the Potomac, an open valley in front, with a wooded hill some 12 to 15 hundred yards distant.

No house was in sight, and the trunk of a large, dead tree on top of the hill was to be the target.

All the general officers of the 5th Corps with staffs were present to witness the practice. After several shots had been fired in which all seemed to have something to say, the target was not hit, nor could any one tell where the shots struck or went. In fact no one of the Battery had ever fired the guns before, and could not have acquired the experience which came to them afterwards in which some fine practice was done.

The firing was kept up, slowly, until towards night, when a citizen rode into the company, his horse all of a white foam, and said: 'Stop firing. You are shelling the village beyond the woods!'

I had only been a spectator up to this time. Of course the practice was ended, and I was ordered to go with the citizen and report the damage, if any had been done. Following the rider a roundabout way of two miles or more, we struck the scene of the excitement in the town of Union. It was a collection of pretty houses, well kept and painted, with one street running parallel to the direction in which the shots had come, and which had been well ploughed by the shots from the Battery. I saw no one at first, but the people soon came out of cellars and other hiding places, and were soon quieted. They were told that the commander of the Battery could not have known of the village or its nearness, but



he had sent me to inquire into and report any damage to life or property. It was found that several shots had struck one house, one passing through a door and lodging in a cellar; another passing through a kitchen. However, no great damage had been done. They claimed to be union citizens, and I saw nothing that led me to suppose to the contrary. They certainly could not be blamed for being frightened out of their wits. Returning to camp alone in the darkness, I reported what the result of the firing had been and nothing more was heard about it. It was singular that no one knew of the close proximity of the village. It must have been outside the picket line."

THE DAY IN CAMP.—ANOTHER SHOOTING EPI-  
SODE. THEY KNEW HOW IT WAS  
THEMSELVES.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, Feb. 22, 1862. Washington's Birth Day. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on guard. Went out to my post and found I had more duty to do. I had to look after six teams loaded with powder and fixed ammunition. I had to see that there were no lights or smoking, within fifty feet of them. Was relieved at 3 this morning, went to my tent and turned in on my bed, for I now have a bedstead. Yesterday four of us cut some trees and built us some bedsteads. They are tip top, but they are not feather beds by any means. After turning in I had some hot coffee, which one of the men made for me while I was out. It warmed me up first rate. Called again at 7 in the morning. It began to rain like fury but I did not mind that, for I had a good post, where I could keep clear of the rain. The Quartermaster gave me some rice and sugar. Relieved at 9 and went to my quarters. At 12 . . . cooked my rice and had a tip top dinner. At 1 o'clock I went on guard. In a few minutes after I was surprised by seeing James Tuttle of Boston. He is in the 22d Mass. Regt. He looks well. He stayed a short time and left for his camp.



Shortly after we were visited by General Porter, Captain Griffin, and their aides. They ordered two of our pieces to be taken out for target practice. They went off over the hill, and were soon out of sight. I was relieved at 3, and went to my tent. Stayed in about one hour, when I went out to see Harry Simonds and C. C. Allen take a ride on horseback. Harry took the lead, and Allen after him on a slow trot. He had not gone more than thirty feet, when Allen's horse slipped on a stone, and broke his nigh hind leg short off in the thigh. Word was immediately sent to the Captain:—he was off with the pieces on practice,—about the horse, for we are not allowed to kill a horse, unless it is done in the presence of two commissioned officers. He did not come till most 6 o'clock, and that poor horse lay there all that time, in awful agony. When Captain Allen came, the horse was instantly killed, dragged off, and buried. It was one of the best horses we had.

During the time the men were out on practice two of the shells went into a house of a Union man and one exploded in the yard. The house was over  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from where the firing was. The poor man thought the rebels were coming, and taking his wife and six children he came into our camp almost frightened to death. They were informed that it was an accident, and they went to their home, happy enough. It was a great wonder that some of them were not killed.

A Minie ball passed through our cook house close to the head of one of our men. Some of the infantry were firing at a target, when, it is supposed, some one carelessly pointed his gun in the direction of our camp. They are bad things to trifle with.

Sunday Feb. 23d. At 4 this afternoon, we were all called into line, to have the Articles of War read to us, it being the duty of the commander of any Reg't. or Battery in the service of the United States to read them to the men under





their command once in three months. We were dismissed to our quarters at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4."

### THE ARTICLES OF WAR.

The Articles of War were rules and articles by which the Armies of the United States were governed. They were established by Act of Congress, and were one hundred in number. They embraced every department of the service in every part of the country, and provided for the regulation of the conduct of officers and soldiers in every contingency and capacity, from the rulings of courts martial to the destruction of private property.

### THE OATH OF ALLEGIANCE.

In Article 10 is the Oath of Allegiance:—

"I, A. B., do solemnly swear or affirm (as the case may be) that I will bear true allegiance to the United States of America, and that I will serve them honestly and faithfully against all their enemies or opposers whatsoever; and observe and obey the orders of the President of the United States, and the orders of the officers appointed over me, according to the Rules and Articles for the government of the armies of the United States."

The words "So help me God" are not added to the oath of the non-commissioned officer or soldier as given in this Article, but they appear in the Articles devoted to the members of the courts martial, as part of the oath. The Act which contained these Articles of War was approved April 10, 1806.

---

Grows' Journal: "Feb. 24, 1862, (About 9 a. m.) it began to blow a gale. In a short time the next tent to ours was blown down, then the one opposite. We jumped up



and hung on to our tent pole. In a short time our stove pipe was blown down, and the lashings of our doors were torn off, but we made out to save our tent. Trees were torn up, and chimneys blown down and there is considerable damage done. After considerable work we got our tent secured, our stove up again, and a fire going. It is an awful cold evening and I expect it will be a howling night. The mud has dried up considerably in consequence of the wind blowing so hard all day. It is now freezing quite hard."

Chase's Diary: "Feb. 25, 1862, the Third and Fourth Detachments went to the Washington Arsenal, and exchanged the two Howitzers for two 3 inch ten pounder Rodman guns."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, Feb. 26, 1862, ½ past 8, went out to drill for one hour. After drill got permission to go over to the 4th Michigan Regt. to change some bread for tobacco, for I was getting short of the weed. All the bread we have left over we sell to them for five cents a loaf, and get sugar, molasses, cheese, butter, and other articles. I had twelve spare loaves, so I got twelve heads of tobacco, which will last me some time. At 10 o'clock the drivers were called out to drill on the pieces, and it was amusing to see how awkward they were, for they never handled a sponge staff before, and we could see by *their* actions how green we looked the first time we began to drill. They will have to drill, as well as the cannoneers, so that in case of action men should be killed on the gun, they will be able to fill their places.

At 1 o'clock I went out to work on the pickets, and worked till 5. At 3 in the afternoon the Battery was called out for drill, and stayed out till ½ past 4, when they returned to camp; the 18th Mass. and 44th New York were also out on drill. They made a splendid sight. A sergeant from Captain Griffin's battery has come over to drill the drivers in regard to harnessing and hitching out horses. He will probably remain with us for a week or ten days."



Letter of Lieut. Phillips, Feb. 27, 1862:—"This afternoon the Left section went off target shooting, and did rather better than the last time we went. The Right and Centre sections went out in Battery drill under Captain Martin, and had a first rate drill. The 18th Regiment and Captain Martin's Battery are expecting marching orders tonight to go up the river to reinforce General Banks. Tattoo has just sounded, and we can hear a great cheering from their camp, so I suppose the orders have come. They leave their tents and carry 7 days' rations. I hear postal communication is stopped."

Grows' Journal: "Feb. 27, 1862. After dinner was called out to go with a piece and act No 6 to cut the fuze. Took out two pieces with ten rounds of fuze shell and ten rounds of percussion shell in each limber box. Went out under the charge of Lieut. Kingsbury of Captain Griffin's regular battery, to Martin's Battery formerly Follett's (Third Mass.) and fired at a tree one and a half miles off. It being the first time I ever had an opportunity of seeing the effect of shell I took great interest in watching it. When they struck the ground they tore up large furrows in the dirt. The tree was struck two or three times, which stove it up considerable. After firing all our ammunition we started for home, most of us feeling rather tired, for the cannoneers had to walk both ways. It was some six miles to and from our camp. Got back to our quarters about 14 to 5. After supper sent five spare loaves of bread over to the sutlers (He was eating rice instead of bread.) and got sugar for it. They charge 15 cts. a lb. for it so we got almost two lbs. of sugar.

Friday Feb. 28. After breakfast an order was given to be ready at 8 o'clock to go, all hands, with the horses harnessed in, the guns all ready, to Captain Griffin's Battery, to see if our names on the Pay Roll were all right, so we can be paid off.

We left camp at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8, cannoneers dismounted, and



we had to walk all the way, about six miles. On our way we passed Martin's Battery. It is a splendid battery. They have a new battery of six heavy guns of brass. Also passed through the 18th Mass., the 44th New York, 22d Mass., and the 9th Mass., Col. Cass's. After we arrived on the ground we were drawn up in line, and our names called off, upon which each man stepped three paces to the front. After the Roll was through we formed columns and, thank heaven, the order was given soon, 'Cannoneers Mount!' but those six miles were rough riding. I shall remember it for some time. At 3 in the afternoon went out for a mounted drill, stayed out one hour, then came in feeling awfully cold. It blows a perfect gale, and has for two days. A report in the camp that Gen. McClellan has the telegraph under his control so no news from the North can reach the South. (It had been the report until corrected, that letters could not go or come from the North for a week.) The mud is now most all dried up so in all probability there will be an advance made soon.

Saturday March 1. After breakfast went into the woods and cut some poles for a cook house, was called in at 9, and got ready for drill. After getting in the ranks I was informed that I must not turn out for I had been to work. This pleased me very much. It is quite cozy inside, but outside it blows a gale.

A news boy has just passed through the camp crying out: 'Another Fight! General Banks' Division Cut to Pieces!'—It went through me like a shudder, but I hope it is not true. . . . Now see how we are deceived. One of our men bought a paper, and in it was stated that the rebels were not within twenty-five miles of General Banks's pickets. So the boy made a good thing out of his papers, sold them for five cents a piece, and then left the camp.

I saw for the first time since we have been on this side, a white woman. Lieut. Kingsbury with his wife and two





other ladies, passed through our camp. They were all on horseback and looked splendid.

Got through working on the pickets about 4 in the afternoon. The men came in from drill about half an hour after. They were drilled by Captain Martin. We have lost another horse this day by lung fever."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "March 2, 1862. Orderly G. H. Johnson resigned. . . . Sergt. F. A. Lull promoted Orderly *vice* Johnson. W. H. Peacock promoted Chief of Piece *vice* Lull., Geo. H. Johnson appointed wagoner *vice* Peacock. Corp. M. W. Page promoted Sergt. *vice* Pattison. Corp. J. E. Spear promoted Gunner *vice* Page. Private C. C. Allen promoted Chief of Caissons *vice* Spear."

The Battery had four sergeants capable of handling it, viz., Johnson, Lull, Wm. B. Pattison, and O. B. Smith; they having served in the First Mass. Battery see p. 56 with the three months' men, and when the Battery commenced drilling under the tutelage of Lieut. Kingsbury and Sergt. Thomas Broderick, there was naturally a good deal of adverse criticism among the non-commissioned officers and many officers, see p. 528 where Captain Phillips appoints new privates. Non-commissioned officers are appointed by com-sergeants and corporals, and as a punishment they may be reduced to the ranks. In this case, for criticising the appointment of drill officers, Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison and Orderly Serg't. Geo. H. Johnson were reduced to the ranks.

February 9th, 1863. Wm. B. Pattison was again made sergeant in the place of Serg't O. B. Smith, promoted to Orderly Sergeant, and at Gettysburg, see p. 639. was in charge of No. 1. gun of the Right section commanded by Lieut. Scott.

Grows' Journal: "March 2, 1862, at 10 o'clock turned out for inspection of clothing. After the drivers' articles were examined viz. two red blankets, one curry comb, brush, sponge, watering bucket, bridle and halter, next came the cannoneers' turn.



After waiting an hour General Porter passed through the camp. Then we were dismissed to our quarters, and we were glad, for it had commenced to snow. After dinner orders came to clean up our tents, for they will be inspected tomorrow forenoon by the Captain. I expect it will be rough on account of the mud. We could not very well go out on account of the storm, so we all sat down around the fire, smoking and talking about different things, home, etc.

Monday March 3d. It is raining and hailing at times, making the travelling bad. Our wood being out we started for the woods and took some rails from a fence, broke them up, and they make a very hot fire. For the first time for a great while sat down to a game of euchre; played about an hour then went to work darning stockings. It was the first time I ever attempted it and I did make a dreadful job, but there is the first time for everything, so I took courage and on the second pair I did better than on the first; still they were sorrowful looking stockings, but we must put up with anything in war times!

After supper a box came for one of the men in the tent. In it were pies, cake, meats, &c., and, my goodness, how we put into them, and had a most glorious time. The pies were immense, and the cakes huge.

It is raining outside in torrents and it will be an awful night.

At Roll Call this afternoon at 5 o'clock, we were informed that our gunner Mason W. Page is appointed sergeant of the 3d. Detachment, Corporal Spear will take the place of Page, and C. C. Allen standard bearer of the 6th, will take the place of Spear. On account of its being so stormy there was no 8 o'clock Roll Call, and we were glad enough, for our tent began to leak awfully: so we pinned up our rubber blankets over our heads to keep from getting wet, and then we turned in. There is about an inch of water in our tent, but as most of our beds are built up from the ground we shall get along very well. Those who lie on



the ground will have rather wet quarters. There is a great difference between having a good roof over our heads as we have at home, and the thin covering of canvas which we have here. After all there is no place like home, no matter how humble."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips, March 4, 1862: "My section went out target shooting today. The guns were placed on the top of Hall's Hill, right in front of Captain Martin's camp, and we shot a little to the right of Falls Church.

This village consists of 8 or ten houses, and a little white meeting-house. We fired 77 shots at trees and stumps, at distances of 500, 700, 1700, and 2000 yards. Most of the shots were very good."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday March 4th. Splendid morning. Ground frozen solid. Nice travelling. Called out at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 9 for drill on gun. Stayed out one hour. Orders came after dinner for the drivers and cannoneers to turn out for a mounted drill. Went out and drilled one hour, and came in. The sun is out quite powerful and has started the mud so the travelling is quite bad, as the mud is about three inches deep and in some places it is a great deal worse.

We received orders this afternoon to prepare ourselves for a start inside of five days.

Wednesday March 5th. After breakfast I got a box and packed all my loose things that I did not need, and gave the box to the teamster to carry into the city, to be sent by Harnden's Express. We have had orders to have all the stuff that we cannot carry in our knapsacks sent home. We expect to make an advance to Budd's ferry to shell out two rebel batteries that are there.

A portion of the cannoneers were detailed to pack their ammunition chests, to be prepared so to turn out for drill. Was visited by John Mann the Hospital Warden of the Mass. 9th Regt. Had a pleasant time talking over our school-boy days. He stopped and took dinner with us of fresh beef and soup.



We were ordered out for drill at  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3, with 10 rounds of blank cartridges in our chests. After we were mounted it began to blow and snow like fury and continued for about half an hour, then the clouds broke away, and the air began to be quite sharp. Went out on to the field and began to fire. Had considerable trouble with the horses on account of most of them never having been under fire before, but before we had fired all our rounds they began to cool down to their work considerable.

Came in at 4 o'clock. Helped the drivers unhitch, and then went to quarters. Sent ten loaves of spare bread over to the sutler, and received one pound of butter and five heads of tobacco. Had a good supper of bread and butter and coffee.

Two of the Detachments will go on to Vienna tomorrow or next day, for the purpose of protecting the Rail Road, which is being built. The rebels ripped up the track and built a large fire, and then heated the rails and bent them out of shape. The 9th Mass. Reg't. are out there on the same errand."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips, March 6, 1862:—

"We had a drill with the horses in the forenoon and afternoon, making considerable progress in artillery tactics. This afternoon while we were out drilling, General (John H.) Martindale's Brigade were drilling in the next field, making quite a show. They finally formed each regiment in a square with two guns.—Captain Martin's 12 pdrs.—in the intervals, and began shooting with blank cartridges in our direction. It struck me at the time that they looked very much as the enemy will when they begin shooting at that distance—1200 yards.

We fire with blank cartridges nearly every day, and the horses are getting used to the sound, though they jumped and kicked a great deal, when they first had to face the music. We have a few balky horses, that give us a little trouble once in a while, but they are gradually breaking in,





as they have to go along with four horses ahead of them, and it is of no use trying to break an artillery harness by kicking round. We get the news here in a very irregular manner. Some days we buy the New York papers at 5 cts. of some persevering newsman who makes a tour through the camp, but most of the time we have to trust to what is sent to us."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday March 6, 1862. Went to Roll Call at the usual hour. Am detailed for Rider on the Caissons, the swing team. Fed and watered the horses soon after. Went out to drill at 9, on the gun. After drilling one hour we were ordered to grease up and be ready for a start out. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 we were all harnessed, the cannoneers mounted, and the drivers standing 'To horse.' The order was given 'Mount'! and I did, and out we went for drill. As it has been some time since I was in a saddle, it seemed quite odd. Came in at 12. After dinner order was turn out for drill at 2 o'clock, so I got ready to turn out again. At 2 we started, and instead of being the swing team I was put on the lead of the caisson.

The off horse being a dangerous one I had to look out for him. After drilling about an hour, we began to fire blank cartridges. My team stood well. We limbered up, and in a short time the off horse began his airs, which means rearing up and throwing himself on the rear horse and by this means he can throw the Rider out of the saddle. On account of his actions I changed then into the swing team, in which he worked a great deal better. We then stayed out till 4, when we came in. On carrying our horses into the quarters, we found one of our horses dead. Had him opened, and found it was disease of the heart.

Harry Simonds was detailed to take some men and bury him.

Went to supper, and found that I was detailed for guard on the first relief, to go on immediately after the 5 o'clock



Roll. Went on my post, came off at 7, and turned in to sleep till 11 when I shall be called again.

Friday March 7th. Was called this morning at 5 to go on guard. At 6 the bugle sounded for the men to dress and come out for Roll. The time slipped away quite rapidly till 7 when I was relieved. By the new order that has been made, those that are detailed for guard are clear from all drill or other duty. So I pulled down my bed and turned in.

Saturday March 8th. The Battery went out for drill this forenoon, and came in at half past eleven. The men are rapidly improving in drill and the horses are becoming more used to the firing. Our pickets were driven in last night, and the 18th Mass. have gone out today. They expect to have a brush. We have heard today that we will have to move from here in a few days, but we cannot put much dependence on what we hear in camp."

Letter of Lieut. Phillips:—

"March 9, 1862: This has been the pleasantest day we have seen so far, warm and bright like a May day in Massachusetts. Under foot there is a little mud, though this is slowly drying up. In the forenoon we had an inspection of the Battery teams hitched, knapsacks packed, &c. The whole of General Martindale's Brigade are encamped on the top of Hall's Hill, in the following order:—

22d Mass. on the right, 2d Maine in the centre. 18th Mass. on the left, 3d Mass. Battery on the left of the 18th." . . .

#### A RIDE TO FALLS CHURCH.

"After this visit [a call on Captain Lewis E. Wentworth of the Sharpshooters attached to the 22d Reg't.] Hyde, Dillingham, and I started off on a ride to Falls Church, striking into a cart path in front of Captain Martin's Battery. After a long and crooked journey we struck into the Alexandria and Leesburg turnpike, just beyond the village



of Falls Church. This road we found in excellent condition, so we indulged our horses with a gallop through the village.

Falls Church, on our right, is a large square brick church, without steeple or anything to denote its character. There is also a little white church built just as they build them in New England. The village itself is quite a pleasant little place, particularly from its contrast with the fenceless, treeless, desolate region round our camp, and is the nearest approach to civilization we have seen for some time. After leaving the village we kept on over Upton's Hill, passing Mr. Upton's house on our left: on our right was a redoubt armed with some heavy siege guns, and some field pieces.

The 20th N. Y. S. M. are encamped around Mr. Upton's house.

From here we struck across country and soon came to what had once been a house but now nothing was left but the cellar. From appearances there must have been quite a place here once. We could still trace the bounds of the orchard and garden with walks and borders, flowers still growing, but all tangled and overgrown with weeds.

The well was choked with stumps as if somebody had played the part of the dog in the manger. After moralizing a little while on this, we kept on our way towards Hall's Hill, where we arrived in time to witness the Dress Parade of the 18th Mass."

Grows' Journal: "March 9th. A glorious morning. After breakfast took a walk around the stables. Found one of the horses dead, this making six we have lost since we have been here. Had 'inspection drill' with our knapsacks, canteens, and haversacks, and we got enough of it for about two hours. When we went into park we were dismissed for service. Had some singing and reading from the 8th chapter of Matthew.

When we were dismissed I immediately got a 'pass' to leave camp, and went to the 18th Mass., the 22d Mass.,



and the Irish Reg't. the 9th. Visited the spot where some soldiers were buried, took portions of the head stones and brought them along with me to camp.

Turned in at the usual hour, was called at 10 o'clock, and we were informed that we must get ready to make an advance in the morning. So we began to pack our knapsacks, fill our canteens, and clean up our 'boarding knives.' The cooks began to cook our rations for three days. The men all seemed anxious to go."





## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ADVANCE UPON RICHMOND.

"The despatches of a general . . . the safest sources from which the historian of a campaign can draw."

—GEORGE MERLON.

"Military despatches are often excellent reading—their very dryness and literalness in dealing with life and death, give them a special place in our literature."

—*Illustrated London Notes.*

It was expected that when the Division made a forward movement the Battery would go with it, but instead of that, Captain Allen received the following order:—

HEAD QUARTERS PORTER'S DIVISION  
HALL'S HILL VA.

March 10, 1862.

CAPT. ALLEN

Comd'g Battery E.  
Mass. Artillery.

*Captain.*

The commanding General directs me to inform you that your Battery will not move with the Division, but will be held in readiness to move at a moment's notice.

Very respectfully

Yr Obt. Serv't

FRED T. LOCKE  
ass't adj. Gen'l.

Notes of Lieut. Scott:—"About the 9th of March the Army moved on to Manassas. The Fifth Mass. Battery was not ordered out on this movement. The men of the Battery were in an excited condition. The Battery was of no account, would never see any fighting, might as well go



home. The commander, Captain Geo. D. Allen called the men into line, and said he would show them what to do, and they would get all the fighting they wanted before they were out of it."

Grows' Journal:—"Monday morning March 10, 1862, a report came into camp for us to unpack our things, for we would not go with this advance. Oh how mad the men were! There were our horses all ready, bedding done up, and tents ready to strike the first thing in the morning. So, we unpacked our things and made up our beds again. I laid down, but could not sleep on account of the passing of baggage teams, cavalry, and regiments of infantry by our camp; gathering together so as to start early in the morning. There will be a smart fight when they meet the rebels. After breakfast went on to the hill to see the regiments and batteries start. It soon began to rain like fury, but the brave men did not heed it and cheer after cheer went up, as they passed.

Poor fellows! all of them will not return.

In a short time John Mann of the 9th came on horseback through our camp, on his way to Arlington for some ambulances for the wounded and sick. It now rains in torrents, the boys will have a hard day to march in, and when they get to their destination, which is supposed to be Manassas, if the rebels stand they will have a hard time there.

After dinner took rations in our haversacks, packed our knapsacks with one shirt, 1 pair drawers, 1 pair socks, a blanket—on the outside my rubber and other woolen blanket.

At precisely 2 o'clock the 'Assembly' sounded, and we turned out with knapsacks and equipments, marched to our pieces and lashed them on. The drivers hitched in and we stood 'cannoneers to posts,' and the drivers 'to horse,' and in this way we waited for three long hours for the order



to advance on Manassas, but the order did not come, so we were all dismissed to our quarters.

After supper went to the ammunition chests to see if they were packed right. Found everything in its place. Was told to get all the sleep I could, not knowing at what time I might be called, and to sleep with my arms, and what I had to carry, handy. The men all feel anxious to start.

Thursday, March 11. Found out that we would not be wanted to-day. At 8 o'clock we were called out for one hour's drill on the piece. Came in at half past 9. At 2 o'clock we hitched out and started out for drill. Stayed out till 5 o'clock, and the men were "put through a course of sprouts" that was astonishing to some of them, but it showed the men and officers that they had a great deal to learn. Artillery drill cannot be learnt in a month, or three months. The drivers have to understand their horses, the men on the piece their part, and the horses have to get accustomed to the firing, which some never get used to.

After supper news came into camp that our troops found Manassas evacuated. If this is true we will all be home in about a month."

#### THE PRESIDENT'S ORDER:

EXECUTIVE MANSION

WASHINGTON, March 11, 1862.

PRESIDENT'S WAR ORDER

No 3.

Major General McClellan having personally taken the field at the head of the Army of the Potomac until otherwise ordered, he is relieved from the command of the other military departments, he retaining command of the Department of the Potomac.

Ordered, That all the commanders of Departments, after the receipt of this order by them, respectively report severally and directly to the Secretary of War, and that prompt, full, and frequent reports will be expected of all and each of them.

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

By Order of the Secretary of War,

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.



The next day General Porter telegraphed the following advice:—

UNITED STATES MILITARY TELEGRAPH

Received March 12, 1862.

FROM F (FAIRFAX) COURT HOUSE.

To Capt. Allen.

Improve every moment for instruction of your company. I expect soon to call for it. Get your supplies of Capt. Cole, at Ft. Corcoran, who is ordered to provide you.

F. J. PORTER

B. G.

### LETTER FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"HALL'S HILL March 12, 1862.

Last Monday morning the Army of the Potomac commenced its grand progress to Richmond, and at last accounts has passed over 25 miles or so of its journey. For some unexplained reason, but in obedience to orders, the Fifth (Mass.) Battery remained behind and are now supreme on Hall's Hill. The tents are all left standing, and but for the unusual quiet we would suppose the army still here. The stillness which pervaded the air after the first bustle of departure, was quite startling, but at the same time quite pleasant. Yesterday was very warm and pleasant, the frogs and bluebirds have commenced to sing, and it looks as if spring had come at last.

Porter's Division are now occupying Fairfax Court House, and expect,—so the postmaster of the 2d Maine told me,—to be ordered back.

The first to occupy Manassas, as I hear, were the 3d and 5th Penn. Cavalry who have been encamped between us and Fort Corcoran.

The latest rumor is that General Porter's Division is to join General Burnside. Our Quartermaster reports a number of gunboats and passenger steamboats at the Arsenal in the City, so that it looks as if this were the case. The rebels have done pretty well at Norfolk. The attack of the





Merrimac shows more dash than I had given them credit for, though I do not see why they did not make a dash for the open sea where they could have done so much more harm."

---

Grows' Journal: "March 12, 1862. After breakfast I re-packed the shot and shell in the ammunition chests, and found that everything about the Gun was all right, then went to quarters. In about an hour went out to drill on the piece. Came in about 11 o'clock. Laid back for a smoke and a read. At 2 o'clock the call for the Battery to turn out was sounded, and as I thought a horse-back ride would do me good, I took a pair and went out, but I had to dismount and take my place on the Gun on account of the off horse being ugly. He is a condemned one and will be changed soon. Came into camp at 5 o'clock. After supper we were ordered to be ready at a minute's notice to go on to Fairfax to guard it, as it has been taken from the rebels. Five prisoners passed through our camp today on the way to Washington. They were taken yesterday. They were a sorrowful looking set. Our men are all in good spirits and first rate health. Two of the men were put on guard for three days for disobeying orders by laughing and talking after lights were out, it being the rule of the camp to have no noise in camp after the 'Taps.'

Thursday March 13, 1862: After dinner all the men turned out and cleaned up the Park. Had a good time collecting the brush and loose stuff together in large piles and setting fire to them. Stayed out about two hours."

---

The first formation of the Army of the Potomac was by "Divisions," under an order of October 15, 1861, but before active movements began in the spring of 1862, it was divided into Army Corps in accordance with the following General Order:—



## HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

FAIRFAX C. H. VA. March 13, 1862.

## General Order

No. 101

In compliance with the President's War Order No. 2 of March 8, 1862, the active portion of the Army of the Potomac is formed into Army Corps as follows:

- 1st Corps. Major General Irvin McDowell to consist for the present, of the Divisions of Franklin, McCall and King.
- 2d Corps. Brig. Gen. E. V. Sumner, Divisions Richardson, Blenker and Sedgwick.
- 3d Corps. Brig. Gen. S. P. Heintzelman. Divisions E. J. Porter, Hooker, and Hamilton.
- 4th Corps. Brig. Gen. E. D. Keyes, Divisions Couch, Smith and Casey.
- 5th Corps. Maj. Gen. N. P. Banks, Divisions Williams and Shields.

By command of

MAJOR GEN. McCLELLAN.

A. V. COLLURN,

A. A. G.

March 13, 1862, a council composed of Corps Commanders McDowell, Sumner, Heintzelman and Keyes, determined upon adopting Fortress Monroe as the base of operations for the movement upon Richmond. General Fitz John Porter's command was assigned to the Third Army Corps, and placed first in the order of Divisions.

The artillery attached to this Division was Battery D, 5th U. S. Captain Charles Griffin, Third Mass. Battery, Captain Augustus P. Martin, Battery C, 1st R. I. Captain William B. Weeden, Fifth Mass. Battery, Captain Geo. D. Allen.

Lt. Col. Wm. H. Powell says in his history of the Fifth Corps:—"Captains Weeden, Martin and Allen were able pupils and co-workers under such a chief as Griffin," and 2d Lt. Charles A. Phillips said at the time that Rhode Island shared with Massachusetts pre-eminence in Volunteer Artillery.



## THE GUNS.

Captain Griffin had six 10 pdr. Parrotts.

Captain Martin had six Light 12 pdrs.

Captain Weeden had six 3 in. Rifled Iron Guns.

Captain Allen had six 3 in. Rifled Iron Guns.

Each Division had the same artillery.

In the organization of the Army of the Potomac the Regiment was the unit. Four Regiments constituted a Brigade, and three Brigades a Division. Each Division had four batteries, three served by volunteers and one by regulars; the captain of the latter commanding the entire artillery of the Division. The regulars were not distributed, but were kept together in Divisions by themselves.

It has been said that in the constitution of this Army McClellan's intimate acquaintance with European tactics became of very great value and assistance: General Wm. F. Barry in his report states that the whole of the field artillery of the Division of the Potomac July 25th, 1861, when General McClellan was appointed to the command, was comprised in nine imperfectly equipped batteries of 30 guns, 650 men, and 400 horses. In March 1862, after an interval of seven months it consisted of 92 batteries, 520 guns, 12,500 men and 10,000 horses. Of the whole force 62 batteries belonged to the Volunteer service.

## McCLELLAN'S ADDRESS TO THE ARMY.

HEADQUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC  
FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE, VA.

March 14, 1862.

*Soldiers of the Army of the Potomac:*

For a long time I have kept you inactive, but not without a purpose. You were to be disciplined, armed, and instructed. The formidable artillery you now have had to be created. Other armies were to move and accomplish certain results. I have held you back that you might give the death-blow to the rebellion that has distracted our once happy country. The patience you have shown, and your confidence in you



General, are worth a dozen victories. These preliminary results are now accomplished. I feel that the patient labors of many months have produced their fruits. The Army of the Potomac is now a real Army, —magnificent in materiel, admirable in discipline and instruction, excellently equipped and armed. Your commanders are all that I could wish. The moment for action has arrived, and I know that I can trust in you to save our country. As I ride through your ranks I see in your faces the sure presage of victory: I feel that you will do whatever I ask of you. The period of inaction is passed. I will bring you now face to face with the rebels and only pray that God may defend the right. In whatever direction you may move, however strange my actions may appear to you, ever bear in mind that my fate is linked with yours and that all I do, is to bring you where I know you wish to be, —on the decisive battle field. It is my business to place you there. I am to watch over you as a parent over his children, and you know that your General loves you from the depths of his heart. It shall be my care, as it has ever been, to gain success with the least possible loss, but I know that if it is necessary, you will willingly follow me to our graves, for our righteous cause.

God smiles upon us, victory attends us. Yet I would not have you think that our aim is to be attained without a manly struggle. I will not disguise it from you. You have brave foes to encounter, foemen well worthy of the steel that you will use so well. I shall demand of you great, heroic exertions, rapid and long marches, desperate combats, privations, perhaps. We will share all these together; and when this sad war is over, we will all return to our homes, and feel that we can ask no higher honor than the proud consciousness that we belonged to the Army of the Potomac.

GEO. B. McCLELLAN,  
Major General Commanding.

### THE PENINSULA OF VIRGINIA.

The Peninsula of Virginia lies between the James and York Rivers; which, running nearly parallel from the northwest, empty into Chesapeake Bay.

Fortress Monroe occupies the extremity of the Peninsula, and is connected with the main portion only by a narrow sand beach. See p. 109. The extreme length, from the fort to a line drawn between Richmond and West Point, is about 60 miles, the average breadth about 12. At Yorktown, twenty miles up the river it is narrowed to 8 miles, which width remains the same as far as Williamsburg where the





rivers begin to diverge. The land is flat and low, covered with swampy forests.

Yorktown was a dilapidated village of about 50 houses. The only tavern in the place, situated on a bluff, the highest point of land on the Peninsula below Richmond, was called the Nelson House and was originally owned by Governor Thomas Nelson. The bulk of the Confederate force lay at and near Centreville and Manassas, drawing its supplies mainly from Richmond by way of the Orange and Alexandria railroad. On hearing of the order for the Federal forces to move upon Richmond by the way of the Peninsula, the Confederate general Beauregard called back his corps of observation, who occupied the works at Centreville, destroyed the bridges over Bull Run, and falling back on Manassas which he evacuated on the 10th of March, burned everything which he could not carry away.

The Army of the Potomac commenced its march on the 10th as stated, but they went no farther than Centreville. General McClellan with his escort fording Bull Run and riding on to Manassas, found it as anticipated an abandoned ruin.

### THE PLAN OF CAMPAIGN.

In the plan of the Peninsula campaign, Richmond was to be reached by the way of Yorktown and West Point. The first object was to capture Yorktown by a combined naval and military attack, then to establish West Point, about 25 miles from Richmond, as the new base.

Centreville was a village of a few straggling houses built along a ridge at the confluence of the Warrenton turnpike, which runs west and crosses Bull Run at the Stone Bridge, and another southwest crossing Bull Run at Blackburn's Ford, leading direct to Manassas Junction three miles beyond Bull Run, and connecting by cross-roads with the different fords above and below.



The works at Centreville and Manassas were laid out by the Confederate general Beauregard. At Centreville they consisted of two lines. One faced east, a mile and three-quarters long, the other, two miles long, faced north. In both were 13 distinct forts connected by "infantry parapets," double caponnières (covered lodgements) and "redans" (portions of the fortification included in single salient angles). There were embrasures for 71 guns. On a high hill commanding the rear of both lines, was a large "redoubt" (an isolated fort defensible on all sides) with 10 embrasures. Manassas was defended in all directions by a system of detached works, with platforms for heavy guns, arranged for massive carriages and connected by "infantry parapets"; the system being rendered complete by a very large work with 16 embrasures commanding the highest of the other works by about 50 feet. The works at Manassas had been mounted with guns. Those at Centreville had been merely laid out; but no heavy artillery had been placed in them, and for weeks they had been occupied only by a corps of observation ready to fall back upon any alarm.

#### MANASSAS JUNCTION.

The Orange and Alexandria Railroad runs southwest through the flat Potomac region for 27 miles, when it meets the Manassas Gap Railroad which runs west for 50 miles to Strasburg in the valley of the Shenandoah River, then south for 20 miles down the valley. The place where these two roads, the Orange and Alexandria and the Manassas Gap Railroad meet is high ground, and is called Manassas Junction. There was a station, merely, with a few scattering houses. From Manassas which was considered the key of the direct route to the south, the distance to Washington was about 30 miles.

Southwest of Manassas Junction at Warrenton Junction



a branch road run to Warrenton. At Rappahannock Station the train crossed the Rappahannock River on the way to Culpeper Court House, passed over the Rapidan River to Orange Court House and still farther southwest to Lynchburg via Gordonsville and Charlottesville.

Grows' Journal: "Friday March 14, 1862. At ½ past 8 went out for drill. Came in at 10, and then went to work packing ammunition chests, so if we are called we will be all ready to start. I do not think we will go until we are better drilled. If we do it will be to guard the place. Had dinner of 'Duff' and molasses with water to drink. It tasted first rate, but there was not enough of it, so we have been promised some for dinner tomorrow. At 2 o'clock we went out for drill, the men on the guns dismounted. Had a good drill. A slight accident happened to Harry Simonds. While we were firing his horse reared up and fell over on him, jamming his side, but in a short time he was able to mount his horse again, and take care of his Detachment.

Came in after drilling about two hours. We fired 17 rounds of blank cartridges. The men are improving in drill very fast. Am detailed for guard tonight on the 3d relief the worst one there is to be on. Laid down to get some rest but could not sleep there was so much noise. Was called at 9 o'clock to go on guard. It began to rain. It is a rough night. While on guard about 8000 cavalry passed our camp. It was a splendid sight. They were returning from Manassas and Centreville. The rebels have left the place in a hurry. They had wooden guns mounted in place of cannon, to deceive our troops. Came in at 11 from guard, made a fire in the tent and turned in."

#### MARCHING ORDERS.

Friday night at 12 o'clock March 14, 1862, the Fifth Mass. Battery received their orders.

"We are ordered to move on Sunday, tomorrow," wrote



Lieut. Phillips on the 15th, "to Cloud's Mills, near Alexandria, with three days' cooked rations. We shall have two wagons and as little baggage as possible. One tent is allowed for the officers, the men sleeping under the tarpaulins which cover the guns and caissons. I saw Adjutant Sherwin [Thomas Sherwin Jr.] of the 22d Mass. last night, and he said that they were breaking up camp and expecting to move this morning. Part of their baggage is on the steamboat at Alexandria. Sherwin reports that the whole of Porter's Division embark at Alexandria for some unknown destination perhaps to reinforce Burnside. A long train of wagons went by here last night bound to Washington. All the sick have been sent to Washington. The two Pennsylvania Cavalry regiments which were the first to enter Manassas returned to their camp last night, and expect to leave soon in some other direction. After receiving our marching orders it set in for the hardest rain storm of the season, and we have been making our preparations with a most dismal prospect ahead. Rations were cooked, knapsacks packed, tents, camp equipage &c. invoiced and turned over to the U. S. Quartermaster at Fort Corcoran.

I sent my trunk home, packed my knapsack and saddlebags, hung my feed bag on my saddle, and made all my preparations.

In the mean time the rain continued, the park was all afloat, and our tent nearly so. Somehow the water found an entrance at our front door, and soon we had a small brook running across the floor, and out at the back door. To prevent this making it too muddy, we confined it to a narrow channel, and Scott and I by way of variety whittled out some water wheels which were soon running merrily. Meanwhile both night and rain were falling, and the rations were all cooked, and their delivery commenced. Before this was completed, however, up rode an orderly with new orders to delay our departure till further orders, as the roads were impassable." At the close of this letter Phillips





a branch road run to Warrenton. At Rappahannock Station the train crossed the Rappahannock River on the way to Culpeper Court House, passed over the Rapidan River to Orange Court House and still farther southwest to Lynchburg via Gordonsville and Charlottesville.

Grows' Journal: "Friday March 14, 1862. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8 went out for drill. Came in at 10, and then went to work packing ammunition chests, so if we are called we will be all ready to start. I do not think we will go until we are better drilled. If we do it will be to guard the place. Had dinner of 'Duff' and molasses with water to drink. It tasted first rate, but there was not enough of it, so we have been promised some for dinner tomorrow. At 2 o'clock we went out for drill, the men on the guns dismounted. Had a good drill. A slight accident happened to Harry Simonds. While we were firing his horse reared up and fell over on him, jamming his side, but in a short time he was able to mount his horse again, and take care of his Detachment.

Came in after drilling about two hours. We fired 17 rounds of blank cartridges. The men are improving in drill very fast. Am detailed for guard tonight on the 3d relief the worst one there is to be on. Laid down to get some rest but could not sleep there was so much noise. Was called at 9 o'clock to go on guard. It began to rain. It is a rough night. While on guard about 8000 cavalry passed our camp. It was a splendid sight. They were returning from Manassas and Centreville. The rebels have left the place in a hurry. They had wooden guns mounted in place of cannon, to deceive our troops. Came in at 11 from guard, made a fire in the tent and turned in."

#### MARCHING ORDERS.

Friday night at 12 o'clock March 14, 1862, the Fifth Mass. Battery received their orders.

"We are ordered to move on Sunday, tomorrow," wrote



Lieut. Phillips on the 15th, "to Cloud's Mills, near Alexandria, with three days' cooked rations. We shall have two wagons and as little baggage as possible. One tent is allowed for the officers, the men sleeping under the tarpaulins which cover the guns and caissons. I saw Adjutant Sherwin [Thomas Sherwin Jr.] of the 22d Mass. last night, and he said that they were breaking up camp and expecting to move this morning. Part of their baggage is on the steamboat at Alexandria. Sherwin reports that the whole of Porter's Division embark at Alexandria for some unknown destination perhaps to reinforce Burnside. A long train of wagons went by here last night bound to Washington. All the sick have been sent to Washington. The two Pennsylvania Cavalry regiments which were the first to enter Manassas returned to their camp last night, and expect to leave soon in some other direction. After receiving our marching orders it set in for the hardest rain storm of the season, and we have been making our preparations with a most dismal prospect ahead. Rations were cooked, knapsacks packed, tents, camp equipage &c. invoiced and turned over to the U. S. Quartermaster at Fort Corcoran.

I sent my trunk home, packed my knapsack and saddlebags, hung my feed bag on my saddle, and made all my preparations.

In the mean time the rain continued, the park was all afloat, and our tent nearly so. Somehow the water found an entrance at our front door, and soon we had a small brook running across the floor, and out at the back door. To prevent this making it too muddy, we confined it to a narrow channel, and Scott and I by way of variety whittled out some water wheels which were soon running merrily. Meanwhile both night and rain were falling, and the rations were all cooked, and their delivery commenced. Before this was completed, however, up rode an orderly with new orders to delay our departure till further orders, as the roads were impassable." At the close of this letter Phillips



refers to being "the other day out target shooting" with his "revolver."

---

Grows' Journal: "Saturday March 15, 1862. Was called at 3 this morning to go on guard. Made out after a fashion to worry out the two hours till 5 o'clock when I was relieved and went to my quarters and laid down, but could not sleep, as the Bugle sounded at 6 the 'Reveille.' Went on again at 9, was relieved at 11 o'clock. At 3, was called to go on my beat. I stayed on about an hour, and then I had to knock under and go to my tent. Stayed in and packed my knapsack, for we have been ordered to break camp at 4 tomorrow morning, to start for Alexandria. . . . The men were called into line soon after and told to have their knapsacks ready and fill our haversacks with two days' rations, and fill our canteens with water. We had just got all our things ready when word came that we would not start tomorrow on account of the rain. We were pleased, for it would be a rather disagreeable march in the rain, but we expect to go Monday or Tuesday. After putting our things away, we began to see how we could fix our beds so that we could sleep. About three inches of water in our tent and the canvas leaks like fury. We pinned our rubber blankets up over the beds, made them up, turned in, and then laid rubber blankets over them, and in this way we went to bed, the rain pouring in torrents on our beds.

Sunday March 16. We now think we will not start before Tuesday. We expect to go to Sewall's Point off Fortress Monroe. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 a message came, informing us that we will not start tomorrow. About 5 the Battery were called together for Sunday services. The singing sounded splendid. The Captain (Allen) read the 9th chapter of Matthew and then closed the service.

Monday, March 17th. Our Orderly Sergeant went at 4 o'clock this morning to Fairfax Court House to receive



some orders, but as yet we do not know what they are. At Roll Call at 5 o'clock we were informed that we would break camp in the morning to proceed to Alexandria and there take boats to go somewhere, but where we do not know."

### THE EMBARKATION.

On March 17th, 1862, the Army of the Potomac commenced the embarkation, leaving 70,000 men for the defense of Washington.

On the 18th, the Fifth Mass. Battery left camp at Hall's Hill, and marched to join Porter's Division which after making its advance on Manassas had turned back to Alexandria Heights.

They marched via Ball's and Bailey's Cross Roads, and arrived about 2 p. m. at "Camp California," near Alexandria, Va., and midway between Fairfax Seminary and Fort Ellsworth. Here they pitched their camp with only one tent, all outside of that depending for shelter upon rubber blankets, and prepared for embarking, destination unknown. Troops were all around them and Griffin's and Martin's Batteries were close by. The 83d. Penn., which was next to them at Hall's Hill was next them there.

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday March 18, 1862. A fine feeling morning. Had a light breakfast of coffee and bread, then lashed our knapsacks on the pieces, leaving our tents, and other articles such as stoves, behind, for we cannot carry them.

At 9 o'clock this morning the order was given, 'Forward!' and the first step was taken in the march, for we had to walk all the way, 9 miles. We took the road to Alexandria, and by mistake went some four miles out of the way.

On the way we had in some places to build up parts of the road where it had been washed away. The roads here are in a very bad state, but are a great deal better than they





have been. At 3 in the afternoon we struck the ground where we are to stop tonight, about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from the city of Alexandria.

After eating a little, and getting cleaned up, for we were very dusty, we began to make some preparations for sleeping, but as we have no tents, we stuck one covering of the gun up on poles, crawled in under, laid on the ground, and soon got to sleep.

Wednesday, March 19. Got up feeling quite sore and stiff. As we had nothing to eat, I went over to Martin's Battery and got some fried potatoes, some good white bread and about a quart of nice, hot coffee. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 9 our quartermaster got some coffee for the men. Soon after we were called out to drill. Stayed out about an hour, and then we had to wash the carriages and pieces, which took us till dinner time. Had dinner of hard bread and water. This afternoon began fixing for a place to sleep; arranged a bed for a fellow named Joe Knox and myself. Had supper of hot coffee and hard bread. Was put on guard to take care of one of our drivers' horses."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The hills and valleys are covered with camps, most of them, like our own, supplied with very scant equipage. We have one tent for the officers, which at the present moment contains all five, getting along very comfortably. Scott is writing a letter on the same box as I, and the Captain (Allen) is cutting a quill preparatory to doing the same thing. The men have pitched the tarpaulins between the carriages, making three tents to hold fifty apiece, so that they get along as well as we do. We expect to embark within two days for some great expedition. General Sumner's Division went down today, and several more are waiting to go. Where we shall bring up I do not know, but



from the preparations going on the expedition must be intended to finish the Rebellion.

Large quantities of provisions have been sent lately to Fortress Monroe, which would look like an attack upon Richmond up the James or York River, or we may be going to join Burnside.

Last night we went on a serenading excursion. The 44th N. Y. [Ellsworth Avengers] to which we have been assigned for hospital purposes, have taken great interest in our Battery. The hospital is in a house close to our camp owned by a Mr. Osborne. In the evening we got together the musical crowd, and went up to the house with a band of an accordeon and a banjo. We were invited in and got some apples and cakes. Then we had a little music and adjourned to the kitchen for a clog dance by Mr. Joseph Clark, banjo player and clog dancer for the Battery.

After a few jigs and breakdowns we went home and went to bed.

Mr. Osborne is quite a brick, a very strong union man. At one time the rebel pickets occupied the bushes across the road in front of his house, and used to blaze away at him at every opportunity. He offered to sell his hay to the government, but they thought it too dangerous to send wagons after it, so he carted it himself, exposed all the while to the rebel fire. His wagon was hit several times but he escaped.

Thursday evening March 20, 1862, Alexandria Heights: The 3d Michigan moved up close by us yesterday being ordered to get as near Alexandria as possible. Fort Ellsworth, as near as I can make out, is a square bastioned fort like Fort Corcoran, rather larger, constructed strictly according to theoretical rules.

We are encamped on a little hill, the one tent being pitched on the summit. For this purpose we picked out the tightest tent in camp, the one which I have always had, and inside of this are the jolliest crowd of officers that can be found. Our baggage is limited, but we get on without.



Captain Allen occupies the back of the tent on a bedstead which we have managed to bring so far, Hyde and Dillingham make up their bed on one side, while Scott and I make up ours on the other.

Two rubber blankets constitute the foundations, then come our bed sacks filled with hay, and our blankets finish off. We get along first rate though we pull off the blankets a great deal. The principal article of furniture is the company desk which was put in here as there was no other tent to put it in: coats, sabres, haversacks, canteens, dishes, valises, knapsacks, boxes, saddles, opera glasses, &c &c. On the whole we are pretty full. The men have quite a variety of substitutes for tents. Some take the tarpaulins which cover the guns: each of which is large enough to accommodate 10 or 15 men: some use their rubber ponchos [rubber blankets with holes in the middle] which make a very good pleasant weather tent. Each poncho is about 5 ft. by 4, and four of them make a tent large enough to hold four men lying or sitting. This is the prevalent style of tent round here: the 83d Penn. between us and the Fort, are quartered in them, also the 3d Michigan on the other side of us. The 17th New York are encamped just beyond the 83d Penn., with the same accommodations. We received yesterday the news of the capture of Newberne.

Lt. Kingsbury seems to have left us. When the advance was made last week he was ordered to join his Battery and has been with them ever since. When we came here he was over here for about five minutes and that is all. It rained all last night and all today, and the General Commanding has authorized us to issue a ration of whiskey to the men, which has accordingly been done, without any bad effects as far as I have seen.

Martin's Battery have been encamped with Martindale's brigade, Weeden's with Morell's, and we have had most to do with the 44th N. Y. (Ellsworth's Avengers) a fine regiment who led the advance at Manassas.



Captain Griffin has been appointed Chief of Artillery for the Division. I hear that Porter's Battery [First Mass. Lt. Art'y] in Franklin's Division, and McDowell's Corps (1st) are to embark today, and the General Order No. 101, ordered the whole of a corps to be kept together, so at least two corps are going on the proposed expedition. The number of troops right round here is estimated anywhere from 20,000 to 150,000.

At present we are living not very luxuriously, making up our beds on the ground, and eating hard tack and salt pork."

---

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, March 20, 1862. Was awakened by the rain this morning. Found my hair quite wet from the rain falling on my head during the night. Some of the men had to sit up all night on account of the rain, for all the tents we have is a piece of canvas laid upon two poles, and the water runs under like a sluiceway. Had dinner of fresh beef and potatoes, after which I went to Porter's Battery."

About 8 a. m. of Friday, March 21st they marched to Alexandria Va., and waited in the street until 3 p. m. for the Fourth R. I. Battery to embark, then commenced putting their guns on board the same propeller, the "A. H. Bowman." About six p. m. they were ready to load the horses on the schooners "Louisa Reed" and "Ida De la Torre." This was accomplished about 10 o'clock and after taking on some of the horses they were to have from the 18th Mass. Regt. to complete their number, they found quarters for themselves on board a canal boat which was loaded with the baggage of the two batteries.

Grows' Journal: "Friday March 21, 1862. Were called at 6 and ordered to pack our knapsacks and be ready to start at 8 o'clock. Went to work on empty stomachs. Got two days' rations in our haversacks. Marched on foot 9





miles to that nest of secession Alexandria. Waited till 2 in the afternoon before we got aboard. While here I visited the Marshall House, where Ellsworth was killed by Jackson. This is a hard looking place. Our Battery was joined by Griffin's, Martin's and the Rhode Island Fourth. We all got aboard and I turned in under one of the guns, using the sponge staff for a pillow, and the deck for a bed. Was called at 11 o'clock to go on guard on the barge which had all our stores on. How it did rain! Stood up against the mast. On account of the corporal being sick I called my man at 1 o'clock."

## THE SAILING OF THE FLEET.

### NOTES OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"March 22, 1862, at 4 a. m., Scott and I had to get up and look after some new horses which we have received from the 18th Mass. Regt. By daylight we got them all on board, and with the rest of the fleet dropped into the stream.

Captain Allen and Lt. Hyde went on the propeller, Lt. Dillingham on the 'Ida De la Torre,' Scott on the canal boat, and I on the 'Louisa Reed.'

After a good deal of backing and filling the fleet got ready to start. There are some 96 vessels in all. About 12 o'clock we started, the flagship 'Daniel Webster' leading the way.

We had been assigned a place near the head of the column, but the 'A. H. Bowman' being unable to keep it, soon fell behind. The 'Bowman' towed the two schooners, the 'Ida De la Torre' on the starboard, the 'Louisa Reed' on the larboard side. The 'Hero' took the canal boat, with our baggage, and went out of sight in a very short time. Dillingham has charge of one schooner and I of the other, Captain Allen and Lt. Hyde look after the steamer, and Scott has gone off in the canal boat. The 'Bowman' is so



slow that we have dropped behind everything. I quarter in the captain's state room and the men sleep on the hay in the hold. The fare on board is good and we have a jolly time.

At night we anchored in the Potomac river. The next day all went well, beautiful weather and the whole fleet ahead of us.

Before daylight on the 24th we anchored off Fortress Monroe. While waiting to disembark I took the schooner's boat and rowed round the Monitor. As soon as we came in sight of the fort I commenced looking for the Monitor, and pretty soon I espied a puff of smoke, and a box on a raft, lying up in the Roads among the fleet.

We rowed round close to her, and I counted some 20 shot marks all over her, five or six in the turret, some of them very near the portholes, and the rest along her sides. The one which had made the most impression struck about three feet from the bows near the upper edge of the side, and dented in the side plate about two inches, started the rivets and knocked up the deck plate. The other shots had made more or less impression: those which struck the middle of the plates merely denting them an inch or so, and those which struck near the edges, driving in the plates and starting the rivets, breaking the heads off. However, no serious damage was done.

About noon we had our Battery landed and took up our line of march. Passing by Fortress Monroe we kept on over the bridge to the main land, and on through what was once the main street of Hampton, but now only a road between ruined houses. For half a mile the road was lined with walls and chimneys, but only two whole houses were in sight. Just beyond the village we came to General Porter's Head Quarters; then we passed the camp of General Porter's and Hamilton's Divisions. Still on we kept, till we came to Captain Martin's battery encamped in a large field on the right of the road. Here we turned in and pitched our camp. A deserted and ruined house furnished



us with firewood and flooring and soon our camp fires were blazing merrily.

Nims Battery, (Ormand F. Nims) Mass. Art'y, is two miles back, but nobody is in front of us, save a few pickets. We start again tomorrow, to fight or not, who knows?

Captain-Griffin's Battery arrived soon after we did, and Captain Weeden's has just come. We have a pleasant camping ground, level as a barn floor. The camp fires and the variety of tents give quite a picturesque appearance to the scene. The rest of the Division is a mile back of us."

The little village of Hampton referred to by Lieut. Phillips, was burned by Magruder, on seeing in a northern newspaper that the Federal forces contemplated occupying the town as winter quarters, to prevent its falling into the hands of General Benjamin F. Butler.

From his Head Quarters on the Back River road he designated four companies, two of infantry and two of cavalry, to proceed there at night. Each company fired one-quarter of the town as divided at the cross streets, and it soon became one mass of flames.

The Monitor was launched on the 30th of January 1862, and was lost in a gale off Cape Hatteras the 30th day of December, just eleven months after she was launched.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday March 22, 1862. Went into the wheel house and tried to get a little sleep but could not, the roof leaked like a sieve. I was about wet through. At last daylight came and I was very hungry. I went aboard a barge alongside and got the cook to give me a cup of coffee, which put new life into me. At 9 in the forenoon we were under way. The men were on the steamer 'A. H. Bowman' having two schooners with the horses aboard in tow. They lead the way. Myself and 8 others were left to guard the barge as all the provisions are on this boat. So I shall live well enough.

It was a sight to see. Thirty-thousand men embarked and sailed down the river together. The 'Nellie Baker' of



Boston, is one of the boats carrying troops. As soon as we got well under way we began to look around for something to eat. I got some sugar, bread, coffee, and beans, and we had a glorious time, 8 of us, sitting down to a breakfast of stewed beans, hot coffee, bread and butter.

I went down between decks, and made up a splendid place to sleep when night came.

On the trip down the river we passed several old rebel batteries, also Mount Vernon the home of Washington. The view on the Potomac is splendid. Also passed Fort Washington and were loudly cheered by the men. . . . The freight boats were the 'Herald' one barge and schooner in tow, 'Savage' one schooner, 'Hero,' one boat, one barge, 'Propeller' two schooners, 'Curlew' one schooner and one barge, 'A. H. Bowman' two schooners in tow. Four U. S. gunboats and one tug accompanied the expedition.

Sunday, March 23d. We are anchored in Hampton Roads in sight of Fortress Monroe. The celebrated iron steamer 'Monitor' is near us. She is being repaired. She was some hurt in the conflict with the 'Merrimac.' Had hot coffee and hard bread and 'scouse' for breakfast. We can see with a glass the rebel flag on the other side. Had hot biscuit, flap-jacks, and hot coffee for supper.

Monday, March 24th. About 9 this morning, our men in the steamer began to land. Some of them came aboard, and they told us that they were about starved. Made some coffee for them, and got some raw salt pork, and, my lord! how they did eat. Three more boat loads came alongside and we fed them.

Some of us took a boat and went alongside of the 'Monitor.' She is a very peculiar looking craft being only 15 inches out of water but drawing 9 feet of water. She is cased with steel plates five inches thick. She carries two guns, 184 pounders, in a revolving tower on deck. There are several more vessels of the same kind under way and will soon be completed.





At half past one I landed on the wharf at Fortress Monroe, and began to help unload the guns. At 3 o'clock the Bugle sounded 'Forward!' and we began our march for our camp ground for the night. Passed through the once flourishing place of Hampton. There is nothing left now but blackened walls and ruins. . . . Some of the ruins left show marks of once being splendid buildings. We are quite near the enemy, and our orders are to advance to Yorktown. The Division I am in consists of 125,000 men. Arrived at our camp ground about sundown, and began to make and pitch our tents for the night. We take two 'poncho' rubber blankets and put them together, and make a tent large enough for two to sleep in; Joe Knox and myself sleeping together.

Tuesday morning March 25th. About  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 8 the order came to advance. Struck our little tents, and at 9 were ready to start, but had to wait for 5,000 infantry to pass. At half past 10 we began our march forward, and arrived at our destination in about an hour. We are now stationed to guard the bridge connecting Hampton and Newmarket. This bridge has been the bone of contention between the rebels and our troops for some time. In case our troops are driven back we can shell the enemy back. There are now five rebel Regiments within  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles of us. We have received orders not to leave our camp ground, but be on the lookout all the time, for on the sight of any armed men coming down the road, we are to fire on them. Our pieces are all loaded, and when we turn in at night, we are allowed to take off only our jackets and boots, so we can be ready, in case of an alarm in the night. One of our men left camp this afternoon, and was fired upon by one of our pickets for crossing the line; the way he came into camp was a caution. Have heard considerable firing during the day. It has been a glorious day. Have had to throw off jackets and go around in our shirt sleeves, it has been so warm. Went to Roll Call at 8, and a more splendid sight



I never saw than the camp was, lit up with large fires. We have plenty of wood and water. There was a large 'Secesh' house near by when we arrived here this morning, but to-night there is nothing left but the chimney. The men and officers have used the lumber for tent floors and fuel."

#### LETTERS OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

Of the fleet and the march Chase wrote at Hampton, Va., in letters of March 25th and 26th 1862:

"The scene on the river on Saturday morning was a grand spectacle; to see such a *monstrous* fleet of steamers and transports, all laden with troops and munitions of war is a rare sight. Guns of every calibre were snugly stowed on board, whole deck loads of horses packed together as snug as they could stand, and thousands of infantry and cavalry were crowded together on the decks, and in every nook and corner of the vessels. When I used to go down to the end of Liverpool wharf to see the trim little 'Nelly Baker,' and the 'Nantasket,' crowded with passengers on a pleasant excursion, little did I think that I should ever see them steaming down the Potomac loaded with soldiers bound for active service, and your humble servant Tom in the same fix; but it was so, and she looked as gay and trim as ever. We passed the deserted fortifications of the rebels on the Potomac, but saw no one except a few men from Hooker's Division who now occupy the forts. On our way to camp, we passed through the town of Hampton, which was burned by the rebels last summer, and truly it is a sad sight, to see nothing but the chimneys and charred ruins of a large and well built town. All, or nearly all, the houses were built of brick, and the town has the appearance of a small city, I should think nearly as large as Haverhill, Mass. I have read and heard of the destruction of property that this war has caused, but never realized it before. Here we see it. This morning we were ordered to pack up and



prepare for a march with the Division. We all packed up and wrote home, and expected to meet the rebels. We did not go more than half a mile, when we were ordered to 'Battery' near a turn in the road, and but a few rods from the Newmarket Bridge. Our guns command the road and bridge, and we are to guard it until further orders. Captain Allen told us that we might remain here only three hours, or we might stop here three days, and possibly three weeks. We are to await further orders whether sooner or later. The weather is delightful here. Some of the plants and the peach trees are in bloom, and the trees and shrubbery are fast leafing out, the spring birds have come, and 'the voice of the turtle is heard in the land.' Every move that we now make gains new comforts for us. There are a number of secesh houses which we have kindly volunteered to 'clean out,' and all our tents have good board floors. We have this day torn down and carried away a whole house. Of course it had been deserted, and it did not take us but a few hours to confiscate it: 150 soldiers make short work of tearing down a secesh house. A part of our supper was cooked tonight over the burning remains of the house that we commenced on in the morning, and every tent has a separate fire-place made of the brick thereof. . . . They are putting up a new line of telegraph as fast as the Army moves. (26th) We are ordered to pack up again this morning. . . . What a way to live! not to know one day where we are to 'board' the next, and only 'take rooms' for one night, but when the weather is fine I rather like it, it is not so monotonous as lying in camp in a mud hole, with nothing to do. Now we have to build and furnish a new house every day. . . . I hope you will excuse my bad writing and paper, for I have been in every position, while writing, except standing on my head, but I am going to practice at that."



## FROM THE DIARY OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Tuesday March 25th, 1862: In front of the enemy at last. About nine o'clock Captain Weeden's Battery and ours advanced half a mile to the edge of the river. Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades are encamped close around us.

Our guns are 'in Battery' commanding Newmarket Bridge. I went over the bridge this forenoon. Our outside pickets are between our Battery and the river, about 30 yards in front of our guns."

## PICKET DUTY.

It was one of the prescribed rules to be strictly observed, that an army in camp or on the march should always throw between itself and the supposed position of the enemy an advanced guard for the purpose of observing his movements and position, as well as keeping him in ignorance of the state of our own forces.

General Order No. 69, Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, dated Washington Feb. 25, 1862, has the following sketch of duties in camp:

"Each Brigade will furnish daily the guard for its own front, connecting with the guards of the Brigades on its right and left. Each guard will be under the direction of a Field Officer of the Day, to be detailed at Brigade Headquarters. Senior Captains may be added to the roster of field officers for field officers of the day when necessity requires.

The guards of each Division will be under the direction of a General Officer of the Day, who shall receive his orders directly from the Division Commander. Colonels will be added to the roster of General Officers for this duty.

Brigade commanders may be excused from serving on this detail.

## SUPPORTS AND RESERVES.

Each guard shall consist of a line of sentinels called Pickets, of a line of Supports, from which the sentinels are furnished for the front





of the Brigade, and of a Reserve, posted in the following manner:— The Reserve will occupy a commanding position, and be stationed about a mile or a mile and a half in front of the main body of the Brigade.

The Supports, two or more, as the nature of the ground and the length of the lines may require, will be thrown about one mile further to the front. They will be placed in such positions as easily to communicate with each other and with the Reserves, and as near the avenues of approach from the front as practicable.

From these Supports the line of Pickets is thrown out about two hundred yards to the front.

As, upon the position of this line, and the manner in which the Pickets perform their duty, the safety of the entire Army depends, no pains must be spared to ensure their being properly posted and instructed in their duties: and the utmost vigilance must be observed to enforce a proper performance of them.

The line will be formed by posting groups of three men each: these groups to be not more than 150 yards apart, and much closer when the nature of the ground or the attitude of the enemy requires. These groups will keep up constant communication with each other: which will be readily accomplished by one man of each group walking half way to the group on his left: another half way to the group on his right, thus always leaving one of the three at the original station. None of the men stationed on this line will be allowed to sit or lie down on their post, nor will they quit their arms, or relax the vigilance of faithful sentinels, by day or night. These Pickets will be relieved every two hours, and being furnished by the Supports, the latter will be divided into three reliefs for this purpose. The Supports will be relieved from the Reserve every six hours.

The Reserve will also furnish a line of sentinels to communicate with the Supports, as well as a line communicating with the Headquarters of the Brigade. The sentinels on these lines will be posted within easy call of each other, so that intelligence may be passed from the Pickets to the Camp with the utmost celerity. They are to be relieved every two hours, and while on post must keep constantly on the alert, never being allowed to sit or lie down.

The duties of the Pickets are to keep a vigilant watch over the country in front, and over the movements of the enemy, if in sight: to prevent all unauthorized persons from passing in or out of the lines, and to arrest all suspicious individuals. In case of an attack, they will act as a line of skirmishers, and hold their ground to the last moment. If forced to retire, they will slowly close their intervals, and fall back upon their Supports.

The Supports, being placed in strong positions, will hold themselves in readiness to receive the Pickets, and repel an attack, retiring in good order upon the Reserve, when unable any longer to hold their ground.



One relief of the Supports will be allowed to sleep. One must constantly be on the alert. One commissioned officer must also be up and awake at all hours.

No fires will be allowed on the line of Supports, or outside the line of Reserves. Any fires found burning will be promptly extinguished.

The Reserves, stationed in a strong position, and one which commands, as far as practicable, all approaches to the camp, shall be of sufficient strength to check the advance of the enemy, thus affording the main body of the Army ample time to form and prepare for attack. It will give a rallying point for the Pickets and their Supports, if driven in, and, being reinforced by them, will hold its ground until ordered by the Division Commander to retire. At least one commissioned officer and one-third of the men of the Reserve must be on the alert at all hours. Fires may be built on this line in such places as are screened from the view in front by the nature of the ground. The position of the Reserve should be strengthened by the use of all such defences as the country affords. When near the enemy abatis should be constructed whenever practicable. The Reserve shall, in addition to the lines of sentinels already mentioned, send out patrols between the lines and a short distance to the front of the line of Pickets, to examine such portions of the country as are not fully in view of the Pickets.

A detachment of Cavalry shall be attached to each Reserve, which shall send several mounted men to remain with each of the Supports, to act as messengers in case of necessity. These men shall be relieved every six hours, and while on duty with the Support shall keep their horses saddled and bridled. The detachment with the Reserve shall keep one half of their horses saddled and bridled, prepared to mount at the command. This Cavalry is to be used for mounted patrols, and such other duty in connection with the guard as the Field Officer of the Day may direct.

Field Artillery may sometimes be used to strengthen the position of the Reserves whenever the nature of the ground gives it an effective range. In all cases when artillery forms a portion of the guard, it will be constantly in readiness for immediate use. The horses will never be unhitched, and their drivers will remain within reach of them.

As a general rule, the Advanced Guard will consist of about one-tenth of the effective strength of the command. But this, of course, varies with circumstances. The Reserve,—with the sentinels and patrols it furnishes,—will comprise two-thirds of the entire guard. The other third being subdivided for the Supports and their Pickets. The positions of Pickets, Supports, and Reserves, will be designated by the Field Officers of the Day for each Brigade, under the supervision and control of the General Officer of the Day for the Division.

Each Commander of Division will have an understanding with the Commander on his right and left, as to where they are to unite with the adjoining Guards.



On arriving at the position to be occupied by the Reserve, the Commander of the Guard will advance with and station the Supports and point out the position of the line of Pickets. The Commander of the Supports will, accompanied by the non-commissioned officers of the reliefs, post the Pickets of the first relief, and explain to them their duties. They will be careful to observe that the whole ground is covered; and that perfect connection is made with the lines on their right and left. After the Pickets are posted, the Commander of the Guard, will himself visit them, see that they understand their duties and occupy proper positions, and connect with the lines to the right and left. Should the position of the Pickets be changed, the order must pass through the Commander of the Supports to which they belong.

The Commander of the Guard will make himself thoroughly acquainted with the ground which his Guard occupies, with the approaches and communications. He will keep up constant communication from front to rear and from right to left by means of lines of sentinels and patrols. In case of alarm he will promptly investigate the cause, and be careful not to exaggerate the danger. Should the enemy advance, he will, by personal observation, endeavor to discover whether they are in force, and *beware of causing unnecessary alarm*. He will communicate all important intelligence to the Field Officer of the Day, who will report the same to the General Officer of the Day, and if the case be urgent, directly to Division and Brigade Headquarters. He will see that all the duties of his Guard are performed in a prompt and soldierly manner, and enforce the strictest discipline. The Field Officer of the Day will visit the Reserves, Supports and Pickets soon after they are posted, and at least once during the night. . . . At nightfall the line should be drawn somewhat closer to the Supports, and should pass through the lower ground, and just within the front of any timber or brush. . . .

All sentinels of Advanced Guards must be given the countersign [see p. 97 April 2, 1861] *before sunset*, and commence challenging immediately thereafter. At night care and vigilance must be redoubled by officers and men of the Guard."

## GREAT BETHEL.

The bridge having been repaired on March 26, 1862, the 22d Mass. Infantry, went over on a reconnoissance marching to within a mile of Great Bethel. After a seven mile march they only saw a few pickets.

The Fifth Mass. Battery were ordered to hold themselves in readiness to support the 22d if attacked. During the night the lieutenant of the picket was shot at. It was proposed to take possession of Great Bethel on the 27th and



about seven o'clock our troops began to march past in the following order :

Griffin's Battery, Hancock's Brigade, Smith's Division.

1st N. Y. Battery, Butterfield's Brigade, Porter's Division.

Martin's Battery, Ayres' Battery, Brooks' Brigade, Smith's Division.

Morell's Brigade, Porter's Division.

3d N. Y. Battery, Davidson's Brigade, Smith's Division.

In all about 15,000 men; 30 guns.

Martindale's Brigade was held in reserve.

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday March 26, 1862. Turned out for drill. Came in, in about an hour. About 10 o'clock we hitched up, and were ordered to cover the rear of the 22d. Mass. Remained 'in Battery' about an hour, and seeing no signs of the rebels we went to our quarters. Was much pleased by seeing a number of men from Nims' (Second Mass.) Battery. They are ordered to leave tomorrow for Ship Island at the mouth of the Mississippi River. We are waiting for an advance to be made. There is a rebel for whose capture \$300 will be paid at the Fort. He is a great shot, and has killed off several of the infantry pickets. There is a house near by and we have received orders to shell it out this afternoon. Spies have been lurking around our camp today. Arrested one of them and sent him to the Fort. It has been a glorious day and as warm as it is at home in the summer, but the nights are heavy with dew, and if we are out we have to wear our overcoats.

Thursday, March 27th. The same old drill and such like."

Lt. Phillips in his letter of March 27th 1862, Thursday evening, wrote:—"We were ordered to report to General Martindale as soon as we heard firing, so we waited with horses harnessed ready to start at a moment's notice, but as the day passed on we gave up all hopes of an engagement.





Once or twice we heard the report of a field piece, but no orders came and we unharnessed.

Pretty soon a cloud of dust appeared on the road, and back came Griffin's Battery all covered with dust and dirt, but his sponges as clean as if they had never sponged a gun. Then came infantry, General Porter and his staff and Martin's Battery. They had been 5 miles beyond Great Bethel and seen hardly a rebel

Smith's Division remained behind, and it is very likely that we shall push on tomorrow.

The remainder of the Division was encamped along the left hand road. Until today the pickets were on outside picket, and as the brook is not more than 100 yards in front of our guns, we were pretty well up to the front. Last night the officer of the picket was fired at while at the fire in front of our park 30 yards off. The bullet whistled near enough to be uncomfortable. The first day we came there was quite an excitement firing at somebody in the old house 900 yards off. After he disappeared a lot of pigs made their appearance, and the pickets kept popping at them all day. They did not hit any and strict orders had been given to allow no one near the old house. Today, however, as the advance of our forces had removed all risk, Hyde and Scott took their revolvers and went foraging round the house, and succeeded after an exciting chase in bringing home two pigs. Martin's Battery brought home six pigs, one on each caisson. We have also gained a colt,—secesh of course,—which by some means or other strayed into our camp, and was forthwith caught and appropriated. We fare rather better than most of the troops round us, owing to the superior cuteness of our quartermaster. Our Battery is in first rate order; good horses, guns and carriages well kept, and men in good health. We have received a good many compliments on our appearance, and venture to hope that it is not entirely undeserved. Our



drill is now quite good and I think we shall do pretty well in a fight.

The 'Vanderbilt' and another large steamer are now in the Roads; and it is proposed to run them full tilt at the rebel steamer. Probably it would settle the Vanderbilt, but the Merrimac would be likely to go down too.

Friday morning March 28. I see the campaign is opening as I expected; General (Nathaniel P.) Banks advancing up the Shenandoah, and the rebels falling back on the Rappahannock. Is Burnside going to take Weldon?"

Grows' Journal: "Friday, March 28, 1862. After breakfast went and sat down by the side of the road, which is very near my tent, and stayed there till  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10, looking at the regiments of infantry, batteries of artillery, and squadrons of cavalry pass by on their way to capture Great Bethel. There was a vast number of men and horses with teams, and in the rear the mournful looking ambulances for the wounded if there should be any. We soon received orders in case we heard heavy firing, to advance as soon as we could, but we did not hear any, so we still remain in the same place. . . .

About 4 this afternoon a large portion of the troops that went out this morning, came back, and will make a still farther advance in a few days. They told us that the rebels left in a great hurry when they saw our troops coming on to them at Great Bethel, in some cases leaving their dinner on the table, and leaving all their goods behind. Only four 'Secesh' were killed. Our troops came back well laden with hams, eggs, dead hogs and live turkeys. I do not blame them, poor fellows. Had some 'Secesh' curiosities given me, such as a fan, some buttons &c."

March 29th the rebels held Great Bethel and our pickets extended only half a mile beyond Newmarket Bridge. Mr. Whittemore of the *New York Times* dined with the officers of the Fifth Mass. Battery on fried pork, bread, and tea. General Porter had been heard to say that they would have



some fighting soon, that the Battery would be in the front, and he hoped it would be the first to open fire on the enemy.

Sunday March 30th the men had a good dinner of *baked* beans which were cooked in an oven that they built themselves.

#### LETTER OF LT. PHILLIPS.

"NEWMARKET BRIDGE,

Sunday Morning, March 30, 1862.

If marching 20,000 men ten miles and back again constitutes a great general, we have talented commanders round here. Twenty thousand men marched out to Great Bethel with flying colors, and, as I supposed, left some few behind to occupy the place, but in this I was mistaken, for I have since ascertained that all returned. Why on earth a reconnoissance in such force could not have ended in a real advance I do not know. The Army of the Potomac waits till the rebels have evacuated Manassas, and then advances with a grand hullabaloo to occupy deserted intrenchments, and this is military strategy!

The army at Fortress Monroe advances to Great Bethel to find it deserted and march back again, and this is military strategy!

Dillingham and I rode down to Newport News Friday afternoon, and passed through Smith's Division on our way. The regiments were camped close together, and the camp fires cast a brilliant light on the road. Fences and woods are rapidly disappearing before the Army of the Potomac, and the country will soon be stripped as bare as the hills round Alexandria.

At Newport News I found a redoubt on a hill armed with heavy guns, and outside of this an intrenchment defended by two or three field and siege guns. The space inside of the intrenchment is filled with barracks, offices, and all sorts of log and frame houses.



Dillingham found a friend of his in the commissary department, who showed us round.

The 'Cumberland' was lying close in shore, her hull below water, but her masts and rigging all standing.

A few burnt sticks farther down was all that was left of the 'Congress.' Holes in the buildings showed where the Merrimac's shot had struck, and the only wonder is that a single building was left standing. The Merrimac lay within point blank range, and either her practice was very bad or her ammunition poor. Most of her shells did not burst, which looks as if the trouble was in the ammunition. . . .

Having the countersign and parole we had no difficulty in getting outside of the lines: but in the darkness took a different road from the one we came, but as luck would have it, a shorter one.

Pretty soon rang out in front of us—'Halt! who comes there?' 'Friends with the countersign.'

'Advance! one with the countersign.'

So Dillingham trotted ahead, and I could hear a short conversation with the sentry. Pretty soon Dillingham told me to come on, and I found we had arrived at a place where the countersign was different. (See p. 797 Countersign.) So the sentry passed us on to the next, and so on till we came to the officer of the day on his rounds.

It seems we had come to Couch's Division, which had just landed and had the countersign which was put on by General McClellan on the Potomac. So he took us in charge and passed us along for about two miles, till we reached the last picket. We could not understand this great display of caution till the officer told us that his Division lay outside of everything. We concluded that he was laboring under a slight mistake, as some 30,000 men lay between him and Great Bethel.

March 31, 1862. Our Battery is at present in position commanding Newmarket Bridge. . . . Hamilton's Division 3d Corps and Casey's Division Keyes's Corps, are here.





The Naval Brigade Colonel (David W.) Wardrop, the Dutch Brigade our neighbors on Capitol Hill, and others of the Artillery Reserve, are strung along between Hampton and Fortress Monroe. On the whole I think you may set the effective force here at 75,000 infantry, 150 pieces of artillery, and a lot of cavalry; enough to do something when they get started. It is said that General McClellan arrived here yesterday. A salute of 13 guns was fired from the Fort yesterday. Two squadrons of cavalry and 400 or 500 infantry, rode by here today over the bridge on a reconnaissance.

Our cat, imported from Massachusetts, has taken up her quarters with us. (in the tent) as being the warmest to be found. The country here is quite different from the banks of the Potomac, the soil is sandy so that we are not troubled with mud, and the ground is very level, with here and there a brook and wood. A better field for infantry to manœuvre in could not be found. The Division parades are all large enough to review the whole Division, and 100,000 men can be handled here easier than 25,000 on the Potomac. Our artillery is splendid, and Porter's Division is equal to any in this respect. Griffin's Battery (D, 5th U. S.) is equal to any regular battery; Martin's (Third Mass.) is as good a battery as Massachusetts has sent.

We also come from Massachusetts, and Weeden's (Fourth R. I.) is a Rhode Island battery, which state shares with Massachusetts the pre-eminence in volunteer artillery. Captain (Stephen) Thomas of the Mass. 18th dined here yesterday on fried pork and tea. Colonel Wardrop was up here when we were lucky enough to have fresh meat. To-day we have made a ten strike and got hold of some fresh meat, potatoes, dried apples, and sugar. Milk we have given up for a long time."

Lieut. Phillips thus describes a shell thrown from the Merrimac:—"6 inches diam., 12 inches long, weighing filled about 60 lbs. The packing, of some soft metal, was



all stripped off, and it looked as if there had been a cap on the rear end. The fuze was percussion."

---

Tuesday, April 1, 1862, was observed as April Fool's Day. Grows notes in his journal being awakened by one of the men informing him that an acquaintance from Boston was on the ground from the 20th Regt. and wished to see him. Grows began dressing, but before he went out thought what day it was, and told him to tell the man to come into the tent. He did not come. At 'Reveille' many were the jokes played upon both officers and men.

Grows' Journal of the 1st: "After dinner about fifty of us went into the woods near by to catch some rabbits. They are very plentiful here. Came in about an hour after with five large ones. If we had had guns we could have had more, all we had were clubs and stones. Cooked them for our supper. Went this afternoon with the team about two miles from camp to help get a load of rails for our fires. Got back into camp about 5 this afternoon, feeling tiptop. Went to Roll, then had supper and a small piece of rabbit. The air is quite cool this evening, so we all sit around our fires with overcoats on."

That the men made the best of what they had is shown by Grows' Journal where he refers to making rice cakes for his supper. He says, "Soon after breakfast I got some rice and cooked it, also got some hominy and cooked that, then mixed them together and let them cook awhile, took some hard crackers and pounded them fine and put them in to thicken the rice, and then put the stuff away to make cakes for my supper, to be fried in pork fat."

He thus describes the building of the oven for his Detachment:—"We went to work and built an oven and it is a nice one. We have plenty of bricks and water, and dirt for mortar, after which we covered the whole over with dirt, except the door."



## LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"April 2, 1862. Newmarket Bridge: The roads are getting so bad that we shall have a repetition of the immobility on the banks of the Potomac unless we move soon.

We have rumors of moving every day, but we are as much in the dark about things here as we are about things at home.

The first night we camped here all our pickets were on this side of the creek, one being posted at the bridge. Since the reconnoissance to Great Bethel they have been extended about half a mile up the road. Still as the enemy is not in force anywhere near us we have not much to fear.

Our fare so far has been the toughest we have seen, hard bread such as Uncle Sam furnishes to his troops being the only thing attainable. Most of the sutlers got left behind, and it is almost impossible to buy anything round here. Everything has to come from the vicinity of the Fort, the "city" as we call it, and waiting for orders that may come at any moment we can hardly communicate with this. Still we get along without any detriment to our health, and keep cheerful. The Division mail arrived at the Fort but by some mistake was given to the wrong person, which makes it rather doubtful how soon we shall get our letters.

P. S. Evening. Just received. P. P. S. The Postmaster General desires that all letters for the Division be directed to Washington. The weather is chilly, with a northeast wind. Professor Low has arrived with his balloon."

## THE SITUATION.

General McClellan on April 2d, 1862, had made his headquarters at Fortress Monroe.

Two new departments: those of the Shenandoah and the Rappahannock had been created. April 3d an order was



issued by the Secretary of War discontinuing the recruiting service. Troops offered by Massachusetts were peremptorily declined. General McClellan had no control of the naval forces upon which he depended for co-operation in the reduction of Yorktown, and his command of forces in the field was restricted to the limits bounded on the west by the Fredericksburg and Richmond R. R. and on the east by the line defining the sixty-mile limit from Fort Monroe, and lying between the Potomac and James Rivers. His department included the states of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, the District of Columbia and Virginia east of the Alleghanies and north of the James River, with the exception of Fortress Monroe and the country surrounding it, within a distance of sixty miles. The rebels had constructed several lines of fortifications between Fortress Monroe and Yorktown, the first of which was at Big Bethel. At Big Bethel there was a very crooked little brook about 20 feet wide. On the southern side there was a level plain, about large enough to hold a Brigade. The northern bank was very steep and rolling, and was defended by rifle pits and artillery "epaulements." (Demi-bastions in fortifications. A "bastion" is a bulwark.)

The rebels on the advance of our reconnoissance of March 27th, retreated beyond this line, to their second fortified line at Howard's Mills, where our scouts reported a large force of cavalry and infantry drawn up behind the ramparts.

The third line of defense was right around Yorktown.

General Order No. 33, dated War Department Adjutant General's Office, Washington, April 3, 1862, contained the following paragraphs:—

"II. In order to secure, as far as possible, the decent interment of those who have fallen, or may fall, in battle, it is made the duty of Commanding Generals to lay off lots of ground in some suitable spot near every battlefield, so soon as it may be in their power, and to cause the remains of those killed to be interred, with head-boards to the





graves bearing numbers, and, where practicable, the names of the persons buried in them. A register of each burial ground will be preserved, in which will be noted the marks corresponding with the head-boards."

It was a wise forethought which dictated this, but what of the next?

"III. The Recruiting service for volunteers will be discontinued in every state from this date. The officers detached on Volunteer Recruiting Service, will join their Regiments without delay, taking with them the parties and recruits at their respective stations. The Superintendents of Volunteer Recruiting Service will disband their parties and close their offices, after having taken the necessary steps to carry out these orders. The public property belonging to the Volunteer Recruiting Service, will be sold to the best advantage possible, and the proceeds credited to the fund for collecting, drilling, and organizing volunteers.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

Official:

L. THOMAS,  
Adjutant General."

### COMPANY ORDERS.

On this day Company Orders were "Three days' cooked rations: three days' uncooked." The Battery was to march the next morning at daybreak.

Grows' Journal: "April 3, 1862. Had cannoneer's drill one hour this forenoon. Had dinner of our baked beans. They were done just right. We were informed this afternoon that we would break camp at 2 in the morning, so I began to pack the loose things I had, so I could be on hand early. Had quite a good supper of coffee and hard bread, after which we drew three days' rations, consisting of thirty hard bread and three or four lbs. of meat, then filled our canteens with water. Our destination is to be Richmond, having to pass through Bethel and Yorktown."



## BANKS' FIFTH CORPS.

April 4, 1862, the Corps designated as the "Fifth Corps," under General N. P. Banks, was discontinued by general orders from the War Department.

## HOWARD'S MILLS.—THE FIRST GUN FIRED.

The historian of Martin's Third Mass. Battery says of the incident at Howard's Mills:—

"Friday April 4, 1862, reached Big Bethel. At about twelve o'clock resumed our march. About three miles farther on we reached the Halfway House, once a hotel of some importance. Two companies of rebel cavalry had left there only an hour before. While we were at the Halfway House, cannonading was heard in advance, and a march of a mile brought us to two rebel intrenchments. Berdan's Sharpshooters, at the head of the column, had been fired on by the enemy, but one of our batteries, the Fifth Massachusetts, coming up, the rebels were shelled out and our troops occupied the works when we reached them. . . . Our advance secured two guns in the fort, and some commissary stores. Another fort near the first had been previously abandoned."

HYDE'S NOTES. NEW YORK, MAY 23, 1900.

REVISED JUNE 26, 1901.

"We landed at Fortress Monroe, and, working our way with Butterfield's Brigade up the peninsula, through Hampton which had recently been destroyed by the enemy, we encountered formidable earthworks thrown up by them.

Several batteries were ahead of us, but General Griffin sent back for the Fifth Mass. Battery. The troops opened to the right and left, and we passed through to the front.



Captain Griffin, chief of artillery, ordered Captain Allen to send a section of his battery into the field to attack the enemy behind the earthworks.

Accordingly my section [the Right] was ordered to take position in the field and open on the enemy. This order was immediately carried into effect by taking my section out of the road and across the field, and we commenced firing into the fortifications, receiving the fire of the enemy in return.

During this engagement the first piece that was discharged was my right piece in charge of Serg't. O. B. Smith.

My second piece was in charge of Serg't. Wm. H. Peacock.

We had only fired a few rounds when my second piece (Peacock's) became disabled by the trail being broken in two directly where the elevating screw goes through, and notwithstanding the shot and shell were flying about us promiscuously, the butt of the gun having gone down and the muzzle up in the air, Serg't. Peacock jumped up and down, and says—'For God's sake look at my piece!' As we were thus disabled parts of other batteries were sent in to finish the work, the enemy was driven out, and our troops took possession, capturing several guns.

After we were all through, Captain Allen asked Captain Griffin if it would be best for us to sling our piece and take it into the fortification, as he thought we could make a new trail during the night. His reply was that he did not think we could do it, and it would have to be sent back to Washington. I then spoke to Captain Griffin, and said I enlisted those artificers, and I knew that I had men competent to do it. He said,—'Well, if you wish, you can try it.'

We accordingly slung the piece, took it into the fortification, and during the night made a new trail out of a tree which had been cut down: many of us taking part in the work, using the axe, holding the light &c. &c.



We completed it: and in the morning Captain Allen reported to Captain Griffin that we were ready for action with our six pieces, and were ready for his inspection. He came to look at it and laughed a little, saying it was not so elegant, or words to that effect, but it would do for service.

This was one of the pieces that was lost at Gaines Mills, and retaken by Union forces at Chancellorsville three years later."

FROM CAPT. GEO. D. ALLEN'S NOTES.

APRIL 19, 1900.

"When our forces halted within the fortification, Captain Allen, after consulting with the artificers, concluded to remount the gun that night, and directed the broken trail to be replaced.

The artificers found a tree of solid live oak, which had been cut down by the rebels, and made a new trail with the old one for a pattern. This was done in the darkness of the night, while Captain Allen and other officers held the tallow candles for them to see to work by.

Just after daylight next morning, when General Fitz John Porter sent his aide to see if they could get the gun along on the march that day to Yorktown, Captain Allen invited the aide to look at the gun which had been mounted the night before and was all ready. He seemed not a little surprised to find the gun mounted and ready for action, and Captain Allen remarked to him that he did not believe there was a better gun trail in the Army of the Potomac, and to give his compliments to General Porter, and invite him if he passed us that day to look particularly at the gun trail. He did pass us, and paid the Battery a high compliment for its Yankee ingenuity in cutting out a new gun trail from solid live oak wood, and mounting the gun in so short a time."





D. Henry Grows who helped make the new trail, said Sept. 3, 1900, that in it "there were 27 pieces of iron, taken off the old one. It was broken off at the cap squares, just where you elevate the gun." See p. 204 "Grows' Journal."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

APRIL 4, 1862.

"On this morning agreeably to orders 'reveille' was sounded at 2 o'clock, and the Battery marched between five and six, near the head of the column, preceded by Morell's Brigade. After a short halt at Big Bethel to build a bridge, we kept on and again halted about two. After stopping about 15 minutes the bugle sounded 'Forward,' and the regiment ahead opened to give us a passage.

Things began to look a little suspicious, and we soon came in sight of two regiments formed in line of battle in a field by the road side, head of column to the right.

'Forward into Line!' 'Left Oblique!' 'In Battery!' came in quick succession, but soon our guns were in position pointing rebelwards.

One regiment deployed in front as skirmishers, and another on our right supported them. Slowly the skirmishers advanced, and in five minutes we heard quite a lively fusillade. Then we advanced through the fence into the next field, and the Right section (Commanded by Lt. Hyde) went forward to shell out a rebel battery (2 guns at distance 2000 yards. Bang! went the first gun and a shell burst directly over the fort. Half a dozen more times and the rebels 'skedaddled' in a hurry, but one piece, just as the order was given 'Cease Firing,' tumbled over in the most extraordinary manner with a broken trail. So Griffin (Battery D, 5th U. S.) brought up his Right section and finished the job. In half an hour the stars and stripes waved in the fort at Howard's Mills. Then we advanced over a crooked road, across a swamp, up a hill, into these intrenchments. We quartered in a log house,—rebel's



guard house or something of the sort. A camp bedstead was in the room and a fire blazing. Dr. Rawlings correspondent of the *New York Times*, will quarter with us."

From Phillips' Letters: "The creek at Howard's Mills lies at the bottom of a deep ravine, and the rebel lines extended along the brow of the hill on the North. The defences consisted of a parapet for infantry following the lay of the land with irregular projections on the spurs of the hill, pierced with embrasures for field pieces.

When we made the advance we expected a fight, and made our calculations accordingly. As soon as we came in sight the rebels opened with two field pieces from the fort, but our Right section soon shelled them out of that and we took up our quarters in the lines, the officers of the Fifth Mass. Battery occupying a log house."

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. HENRY D. SCOTT.

REVISED JAN'Y 24, 1901.

"As Junior Lieutenant, Chief of Caissons, I was not with the Sections much. The weather was intolerable. When we passed through Big Bethel the advance found a rebel battery at Howard's Mills, behind earthworks. The column came to a halt, and as the 5th Battery had the lead it was ordered up to brush them away. The Battery found the troops resting on the ground on each side of the road. They cheered us and sang out 'Go in, Boys. Give 'em fits!'

As Chief of Caissons I halted them short of the position of the Battery, which after a short duel the battery in front left, and the column went on its way. As I passed with the caissons after the 5th, I saw one of their Guns on the ground. After reaching the ground where the rebel battery had been, the Army parked for the night, and I was sent back with men and horses, to sling the Gun and bring it to camp. It was dark when we returned. I said as the trail had been broken, we could make a new one. Finding



a timber of suitable size, with the artificers we worked all night, and in the morning the Gun moved with the rest of the Battery. The same Gun was lost at Gaines Mills, June 27th, and was not seen after, until, the war over, it was found parked at Richmond, Va."

#### NOTES OF SERGT. WM. H. PEACOCK.

JULY 18, 1901.

"Before we came into Battery one of my men had taken a shell and cartridge out from the chest, getting ready for a quick shot. I recollect quite well that seventeen rounds were fired by the two guns, and none were fired by either after our trail broke, as the 400 or 500 Rebel Cavalry on the opposite bank from us, had run before we quit firing. They fired some shell at us, but it seemed to go to the left of us, striking in the bank of the hill. I have always said that our Gun of the Second Detachment fired the first shot at Howard's Mills. Comrade Chase also wrote to this effect in his Diary at the time it occurred. On firing the ninth round the trail of my gun broke at the elevating box, dropping to the ground, while the gun pointed skyward. We slung the gun under the limber with the prolonge rope, and hauled off the broken parts by hand that night. Our position was in a cornfield. The corn rows prevented our gun from getting the proper recoil, and this caused the trail to break at the elevating box. That night our artificers made a new trail for the gun, and had it completed before morning so it was as useful as ever, and I was with it until its capture at Gaines Mills fight. We used to frequently look up captured rebel artillery in hopes to find it again, but I never heard of its being recovered. I recollect as some of my Detachment at the time, John F. Mack, David McVey, Wm. B. Newhall, G. W. Poole, B. F. Story, C. M. Tripp,—I think,—P. Welch, Henry Fitzsimmons."

From Chase's Diary. "April 4, 1862. Two miles from



Great Bethel. 'In Battery,' 'Action Front,' to be ready for the enemy!

The Right section advanced about 1000 feet, and commenced shelling a rebel battery.

Serg't William H. Peacock of the Second Detachment of the Right section of the Fifth Mass. Battery Light Artillery fired the first gun, and it was the first gun of the Army of the Potomac to be fired. After a few rounds the left piece of the Right section had the trail of the gun broken off squarely."

#### FROM LETTER OF CORPORAL J. E. SPEAR.

APRIL 13, 1862.

"Came upon the rebels about 3 o'clock p. m. Our Battery being in the advance, Gen. Porter sent out with a regiment of skirmishers a section of the Battery. When about half a mile from the entrenchments a squadron of cavalry was seen to leave very hurriedly. Our skirmishers fired upon them, but as they were some distance away the shots did not take effect. While our guns were being fired one carriage in recoiling was broken; the trail coming back upon a rock with such force as to break it. The rebels having left their encampment, and entrenchments, nothing remained for us to do but to march into them, which we did at a double quick. Remained all night. The place was called Howard's Mills."

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL WM. H. BAXTER.

REVISED OCT. 15, 1900.

#### BUILDING NEW TRAIL FOR GUN NO. 4.

"We went into Battery several times approaching Yorktown. I think it was the second day out from Fortress





Monroe, that we were 'in Battery,' firing at the fast retreating Johnnies, when the trail of the 4th Detachment Gun broke squarely in two pieces, causing the muzzle of the Gun to point skyward. The accident put the Gun out of action, and upon arriving at camp that evening, the writer was ordered to make a detail to build a new trail. The job seemed insurmountable, but a detail was finally made, which proved equal to the occasion. Being a non-com, my part in the building of that trail was to do the heavy standing around, and I did it to perfection. We started for the woods near camp, and cast about for a tree suitable for the purpose. The writer can recollect but two of the boys who were in this detail 'Uncle Dudley' Blanchard, now passed away, and sterling Lem. Washburn. The tree was dropped, a length measured off suitable for the trail, and the boys went to work shaping it; nothing but axes being used. After getting it well roughed out, we hauled it to camp, and it was taken in hand by that Knight of the Hammer, Mike Hewitt and his assistants, who proceeded to put the finishing touches to the wood and fitting the iron work. My recollection of the time taken to build it is that we had that tree felled at about 9 o'clock in the evening, and were ready to start with the trail completed at 8.30 next morning, overtaking the Battery, which had marched early in the morning, between 11 and 12 o'clock that noon.

That the work was well done no better evidence can be had; than that some of the Boys, after the surrender, saw the old Gun in park with the trail intact, just as we had 'donated' it to the Johnnies at Gaines Mills, with the exception that the ground end of it had warped nearly one half way around, the effect of the sun upon the green wood of which it was made.

This is one of the many evidences which occurred during the war that the Boys of '61 were always found equal to every occasion where necessity demanded brain or brawn."



## FROM PRIVATE BENJAMIN F. STORY.

Oct. 8, 1900.

"In regard to the first shot at Howard's Mills,—We were in the advance in that action, and were in the advance ordered by Captain Griffin of the 5th Regulars U. S. A., as he had charge of the 4 Batteries—to place the guns and fire on the Rebels who occupied a hill to the front—which we did—and Capt. Griffin told Capt. Allen, that he had the honor of firing the first gun on the Peninsula, and I heard it distinctly."

My duty at the time was head driver on the Caisson 2d. Detachment, and I know whereof I speak."

After recalling the same circumstances of the broken trail he says:—

"That gun, with three others, was lost in action at Gaines Mills, and was recaptured by us at the Weldon R. R. fight, and turned in at the U. S. Arsenal at Washington D. C. when our Battery was mustered out. All of which I can certify to having come under my own personal observation at the time."

---

Grows' Journal: "Friday April 4, 1862. Was called at half past two this morning by the Bugle. Packed all my things together. Lashed my knapsack and overcoat on the limber of the piece. At half past four we had breakfast of hot coffee and hard bread. At a quarter to six we took up our line of march with the Corps which numbered some 30,000 men. The morning was very warm and close. After marching a few miles I saw plenty of overcoats, blankets, and knapsacks by the roadside, which our troops had thrown away on account of the heat. Arrived at Great Bethel at half past 10 in the forenoon. Stopped long enough to feed and water the horses, then took up the line



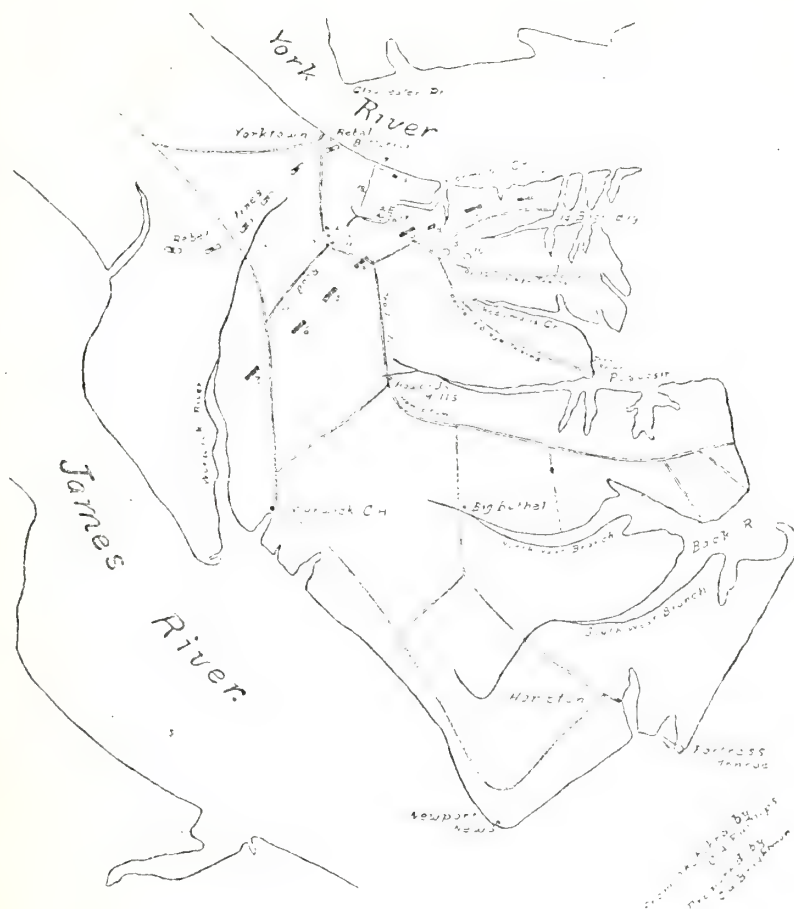
of march for Bethel: arrived at one o'clock. Our scouts brought in word that the Rebels were in their entrenchments, and that we would have to shell them out. At half past one the Right section opened fire upon their works, and the sharpshooters the same upon their cavalry, killing two. The enemy then left their works. We pushed on, but they were gone, so we began to pitch our tents here in their breastworks. If they had had more pieces they could have held it against our force, for some time.

There were about 800 rebels in the works when we first came upon them, but they retreated very lively."

Josiah W. Gardner, referring to his journal of April 4, 1862, says, "Archie Waugh (W. A. Waugh) drove the swing team of No. 1 gun, and fired the first shot. This was Peacock's gun which had the trail broken."



# YORKTOWN



1 & 2. Sumner's Corps. 3 Porters Division. 4 Hamilton's Division, of Heintzelman's Corps. 5 & 6-7 Keyes Corps. 8 General McClellan's Headquarters. 9 Bridges over Warmley Cr. Guarded by the 5th Mass. Battery. 10 Peach Orchard. 11. First position taken by the 5th Mass. Battery on April 6th 1862. 12. Houses burned by Rebels. 13 Moore's house. 14. Back River Landing. 15 Redoubt. 16 Lunette. 17 House built by 5th Mass. Battery. 18 Advanced line of Porters Division. 19 5 100 pdr Parrots. A. Mortar Battery.





## CHAPTER VII.

### YORKTOWN,

April 5 to May 3, 1862.

"Let others hew from marble the grand forms  
Imprisoned there . . .  
For thee the tragedy of daily things.  
By firesides placed amid our work and books  
How every group the war before us brings!"

THOMAS G. APPLETON.—*Sonnet to Rogers.*

### THE ADVANCE.

Eagle Call.—"In Battery."



Porter's Division on the Right, led the advance of the Army of the Potomac.

FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS,

OF APRIL 6, 1862.

"Sunday forenoon. Yesterday morning we left our comfortable quarters, and started as we supposed on a reconnoissance, but we have not yet returned. After we had proceeded a short distance on our way it commenced to rain, and poured down till noon. We marched on, and about twelve o'clock we heard firing ahead, and marched into a field.



The Rhode Island Battery and Griffin's were shelling the rebel intrenchments. Pretty soon Martin's Battery was sent off to the left, and commenced shelling. About 4 o'clock, Martin returned, having lost 2 killed and 3 wounded, and we were ordered to relieve Captain Weeden, who had lost one, killed. So our pieces started off and formed in battery in front of the rebels about 2000 yards distant.

Just as we were coming into battery, a little smoke puffed out from the fort, then the report, and a few seconds later, a 32 pdr. shell struck in the dirt 50 yards on our left. The fuze had not ignited, so we picked up the shell and carried it home.

We blazed away once or twice in return, and pretty soon we heard two reports from them to the right and left, and then bang, bang! two shells burst right in front of us 50 feet from the ground; one piece striking an infantry soldier in the woods to our right. We fired a little more, but, not accomplishing much, we soon stopped, and after dark returned to camp.

Early this morning, 3 o'clock, the Right and Centre sections took position in the same place, and are at present,—12 m.,—there. The men are mostly asleep and I am lying on my overcoat writing this letter. The rebels have been making embrasures in front of their guns, probably to keep off the bullets by our skirmishers, who are scattered round pretty thick. The enemy's gunners are quite good, and they have got our range very well."

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, April 5, 1862. We are about 9 miles from Yorktown, and there are about 30,000 rebels encamped there in strong breastworks. Owing to the bad state of the roads we did not arrive at Yorktown outside of the enemy's works till half past one. The rebel works are in sight and about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles to two miles off. About half an hour after we arrived the Rhode Island 4th Battery were ordered to open fire upon them. In a short



time one of the enemy's shells struck one of their men, and he died in half an hour. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 3 this afternoon Martin's Battery was ordered to relieve the Rhode Island Battery. As soon as they came in sight the enemy opened upon them a murderous fire killing Charles Lord and Edward Lewis, both of Charlestown, wounding 3 men, and killing 6 horses. After firing about two hours they silenced one of the enemy's batteries. At 8 o'clock that evening we were ordered back to camp. Just as we were leaving they threw a shell which knocked down one of the infantry about 100 yards on my right. We came into camp feeling well, but tired.

Sunday April 6th. Was awakened at 4 o'clock this morning by the noise caused by the Right and Centre sections going down into the field. About 3 this afternoon, went a short distance to Martin's Battery to witness the funeral ceremonies over the bodies of Lord and Lewis. It was a very affecting sight. The pictures of their wives, which they had with them were opened, and laid, open, upon their breasts, and in this way they were buried."

In the "History of Rhode Island in the Rebellion" may be found the following in relation to these first shots:—

"During the advance on Yorktown April, 1862, Battery C, R. I. Captain Weeden, went into battery in a cornfield on the right of the road leading to Yorktown. Griffin's Battery came up on our right and peppered away in fine style. Martin's did similar execution on our left. In advance, and about 750 yards from the nearest rebel entrenchment, Berdan's sharpshooters were posted. . . . At 3 o'clock p. m. Randolph's Battery was ordered to relieve Griffin's. He was engaged two hours. [This was Battery E, 1st R. I. Captain George E. Randolph afterwards chief of artillery of Division and Corps, Third Corps.] The 3d and 5th Massachusetts batteries took an efficient part in the fight. Butterfield's and Martindale's Brigades reclined on their arms within range of the enemy's guns during the day.



The roar of cannon shook the earth like a subterranean convulsion and the sharp crack of Berdan's rifles told how busily they were employed. . . . Two men belonging to Martin's Battery were killed and five reported wounded. Thus Rhode Island and Massachusetts share the honor of shedding the first blood in this preliminary engagement."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Monday morning. (April 7, 1862) We had a little target practice yesterday. We waited during the forenoon without firing, and while we were sleeping away as comfortably as possible, bang, whiz, bang! came a shell from the Fort, bursting very near, and waking us all up. The enemy then hoisted a new and handsome flag on our left, and brought a field piece into position, out of sight from where I was, but visible from the Right section, and let us have a shell from it. It burst close to and the pieces flew all round us. . . . This fun did not particularly suit us, but soon we got orders from General Porter to reply, so the Right section blazed away at the field piece on our left, and soon silenced that, while my section went to work pitching shells into the Fort and camp. We fired two shots at the Fort, one of which struck the sandbags in the embrasure, and then we pitched into the camp. After a while down went one tent in a cloud of dust, and the shells began to fly pretty thick round the rest. Still the distance was too great, and we stopped after a while.

Monday afternoon. Captain (Ormand F.) Nims has just arrived, and is going to the Fort. We have been in camp all day, and it is raining hard. Griffin occupies our yesterday's position, intrenchments having been thrown up last night. Some 30 batteries of light artillery have arrived, and as soon as the siege guns arrive we shall be ready for a second siege of Yorktown, which will be pretty sure to result as the former siege. It is said that the Right of the





enemy's lines was carried last night. I don't know how true the report is."

Chase's Diary: "April 6, 1862. . . . Found fragments of a shell fired at us. But one good shot from the enemy today. Balloon reconnoissance by the generals today. None of the Battery injured today."

### TO PREPARE FOR ACTION.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,

CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

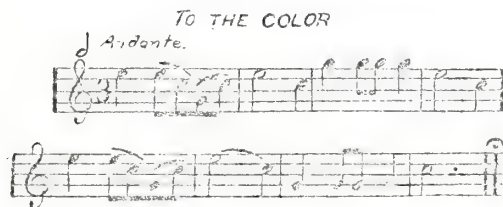
April 8, 62.

General Orders

No. 113

Extract.

VIII. "To the Color" sounded on the march, will be the signal to prepare for action.



At this call (80 steps to the minute) the trains will draw, as far as possible, to one side of the road and halt. The ambulances will be prepared for service; the men will close their ranks without further orders, and preserve perfect silence.

By command of Maj. Gen'l. McClellan.

S. WILLIAMS A. A. G.

### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

April 9, 1862.

For the last few days we have been exchanging shots at long range, but without accomplishing much. Earthworks



have been thrown up in the field, and the Left section (Lieut. Dillingham's) are now out. The rebels have got some field pieces in position, and are trying to shell him out. Quite a lot of regiments are up in line round our camp, and it is said they are going to capture something."

Phillips' Diary: "April 9, 1862. Dillingham's section went into the earthworks to dig, and the rebels tried to shell him out with a ten inch mortar in the hospital fort. One of the shells which blew out, was dug up 6 ft. deep, and carried to General Porter. The Division, except Butterfield's Brigade, Martin's and Allen's Batteries, have moved one mile to the rear and during the night we were alarmed several times, harnessed and unharnessed, but nothing came of it."

Chase's Diary: "April 9, 1862. The Left section exchanged shots with the enemy today, and brought to camp an eleven inch shell, which 'blew' without exploding; weighing 86 lbs. and having 80 bullets in it. Infantry regiments taking new positions."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday April 9, 1862. Our section, consisting of two pieces, was ordered out into the field to protect the encampment of the 9th Mass., 62d. Penn., and our own camp. Soon after arriving on the field it began to rain like fury. The orders were for us to only answer the rebels' shot. They fired about ten heavy shell at us, four of which burst over our heads, but none of us got hurt. We fired in return at them, and by means of glasses saw several fall, but could not ascertain how many of them were killed. About 3 this afternoon the regiments near us were ordered to fall back about a mile, as they were in the direct range of the rebels' fire. At 6 this afternoon we were ordered back to camp. . . . Orders came about midnight to be ready to fall back about one mile to the rear, so the mortar and siege guns can work without our being in the way."



## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Thursday Evening: (April 10, 1862.) It seems the rebels have been using a 10 inch mortar to silence our 3 in. guns. Several shells burst in the neighborhood of the Battery, but no damage was done. . . . Today Lieut. Hyde and I have been in the field, but not a shot was fired on either side. The rebels have struck the camp that we shelled the other day. Last night we had several alarms and harnessed several times expecting an attack, but nothing came of it. If the rebels don't shoot better than they have done, they may fire at us as long as they like."

Chase's Diary: "April 10, 1862. Ordered out at 11 o'clock last night and hitched up 'double quick' both guns and caissons, and the infantry called in line: waited half an hour in line, then ordered to camp for the night without further excitement. Two sections of the Battery left camp and took position about a mile to the rear of the enemy, and joined the Division in a new position, leaving one section in front of the enemy."

Grows' Journal: "April 10, 1862, we took up our line of march, and very soon arrived at this place. It is a very pretty place. The river is near by. Pitched our tents in a corn field. There are plenty of troops around us, and lots of gunboats to be seen on the river. General McClellan's quarters are on this ground. April 11th. At 9 o'clock this morning our section (Left, Dillingham's) were ordered to go about  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a mile to protect the 'pioneers' of the 18th Mass. who are building a bridge across a creek. (Over Wormley's Creek, between the camp and Yorktown) for the purpose of conveying troops and field-pieces across for the intrenchments that are going to be built by our troops. Arrived at the spot and pitched a large tent for us to sleep in at night, after which we cruised around, dug



some mussels and oysters (The far famed York River oysters described by the historian Lossing in 1848) which are very plenty here. Had them for dinner. Had our supper sent to us of coffee and hard bread. I am detailed for-guard tonight from 8 till 9, one hour; after 'standing it' I sat down by the fire with Harry Simonds and some others, till 12 o'clock. Turned in soon after."

FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

April 12, 1862.

You need not imagine there was anything very terrible in the fight; there was some little popping away of muskets and some banging of artillery, without amounting to much. Martin's Battery got into a pretty tight spot, hotter than anything at Bull Run, so said Griffin. The R. I. battery got down in a field and blazed away at an earthwork mounting four 32 pdrs. at 2500 yards. Griffin was alongside of them, but he did not silence their guns, or anything of the sort. Both sides might bang away till doomsday, at that distance, without doing any injury worth speaking of. We have been down on the same ground and fired at the enemy, and had them fire at us, till it has become rather ridiculous. One day we fired into a fort on the right to oblige General Porter, who was up in a balloon and wished to see what the effect would be. We blazed away with our 3 inch popguns till the rebels seemed to get a little excited, and bang went a big mortar, and a 10 inch shell whistled several hundred yards over our heads. We rather enjoy this amusement as they cannot afford to waste much valuable ammunition of the sort by throwing it half a mile over our heads. Our sharpshooters appear to bother the rebels a great deal and yesterday they sallied out and drove them in, burning down a house close by their lines which has given them a great deal of trouble. . . . We are now encamped within sight





of York River, and of our gunboats lying in it, below Yorktown, in a corn field, by a house formerly owned by a Secesh doctor, now used as a General Hospital. Behind us is a large field in which General McClellan has his Head Quarters. For the last week there have been all sorts of rumors about a large siege train which was somewhere or other, and for which everything must wait. Today I hear they are landed somewhere or other, and will soon arrive. I hope so. At present we have nothing to do, and are afraid to stir out of camp lest the Battery should move while we are out. For the last 24 hours our Left section has been guarding a bridge which is building, and which is supposed to be absolutely necessary to the success of operations. But at the present rate of construction the bridge will be finished in the course of 6 months. General Porter went up in a balloon alone yesterday morning and got adrift. After floating about a little while he came down in safety: the wind, fortunately for him, blowing from the north."

Phillips' Diary: "April 12, 1862. Yesterday Dillingham's section went into a masked battery in our front to protect a bridge. . . . Weeden sent one section into the old earthwork and had quite hot work. The rebels rallied at 3000 strong; burnt the houses by the peach orchard and threatened Dillingham's section, but nothing came of it. This morning I relieved Dillingham. The rebels fired 3 shells at a tug which tried to come up the river. Griffin this morning concluded it was too dangerous to occupy the earthworks above."

#### NOTES OF CORPORAL J. E. SPEAR,

who, besides acting directly with the Fifth Mass. Battery as sergeant and lieutenant, was at one time assistant adjutant general for Major Freeman McGilvery; at one time



assistant adjutant general for General A. P. Martin; also ordnance officer for Artillery Brigade 5th Army Corps:--

"ARMY OF THE POTOMAC

NEAR YORKTOWN, VA.

Sunday, April 13, 1862.

The stillness of the day has turned my thoughts towards home and the dear friends there. It is very quiet in the different camps. Nothing of importance save the arriving of more troops. Whilst I am writing I can hear the sounds of bugles from the newly arrived troops. I have just finished my dinner, fresh meat and broth, no more 'salt junk' for a spell, as long as 'Secesh Cattle' hold out, which I think will be for some time, and I am glad that we have advanced so that we can get fresh meat, for it has been nothing but salt junk and salt pork for some time past, and many of the boys were sick on rations of pork.

I will give you a description of our march from Hampton to our present encampment:—One week ago last Friday, we left our pleasant little camp at Hampton, for Richmond, expecting, of course, to be brought to a standstill at Yorktown, and we are, and no mistake. The first day, Friday, we advanced about 3 miles beyond Big Bethel, coming to a rebel encampment of about 400 cavalry, the infantry and artillery having left the day before for Yorktown on hearing that Porter's Division was advancing towards them. (See p. 201 Howard's Mills.)

At 5 o'clock the next morning (After the fight at Howard's Mills) we were routed up and ordered to move onward, and after partaking of a good breakfast consisting of salt junk, hard bread, and some good coffee, we hitched up our horses and were soon moving onward, but our day's march was not as pleasant as that of the day before. Friday the roads were in tip top condition and the day pleasant, but Saturday we had to pass through a swamp of 5



miles length, and we hadn't gone more than a mile or so, before it commenced raining real old Virginia style, drops as large, nearly, as cherries, and it was not long before the mud was ankle deep. On this day we found that we could not advance as readily as on the day before, and on coming to the end of the swamp, we began to hear the booming of cannon. Saturday there were 2 batteries with us in the advance, and leading us, so that we didn't have a chance to commence the firing as we did the day before. We finally came in sight of Yorktown, and we saw before us, forts, entrenchments, rifle pits, strongly guarded. The Rhode Island and 5th Regular batteries were ordered out to commence firing upon the forts, but as they were of small calibre could not do much service, yet did considerable towards silencing the batteries.

Our sharpshooters did about as much as any towards silencing the Confederates, keeping the gunners from their guns. In the afternoon Martin's Battery was ordered out to endeavor the silencing of a battery on the left of the entrenchments, and was successful, but with a loss of two men and 3 horses; they also had 3 men wounded. About 4½ o'clock we were ordered into the field and remained until about 8 o'clock, when we were ordered back to camp. None of us were wounded, although the shell flew around us fast. On arriving at camp, the clerk of the company came to me with a piece of paper with names on it, and called it the guard detail. I felt very tired, don't know as I ever felt more so, but being detailed for guard I must attend to it. Was about ¾ of an hour putting on the relief, the men being very tired and would not go on readily and I couldn't blame them, having marched for two days. About 1 o'clock I was relieved by Corporal Wilson, turned in, under my piece, and slept until morning. Sunday morning we were routed up very early. The Right and Centre sections were ordered into the field to guard our pickets, so as not to allow



the rebel cavalry to charge upon them as they had attempted to on the day before. Bill Baxter is in the Centre section, and I am in the Left, so he went in, and I remained in camp. When they returned, about 8 in the evening, I found out that they had been exposed to a pretty hot fire from the rebel siege guns, but thanks to God, none were injured.

Captain Martin's Battery being encamped near us, I witnessed the burial of the two men killed in action, and it was a hard sight to see so many brave and courageous men clustered around their dead comrades, not, as on the day before, facing the din and smoke of battle, but bowed down in grief, the tears streaming down their manly cheeks.

Monday was a stormy day, and the Left section was ordered out. As soon as we had reached our position at the entrenchments, which had been thrown up during the night, the cussed rebels commenced firing upon us, and our Captain returned the compliment. They shelled us for about an hour, but as their fuzes were cut too long the shells went beyond us, and burst in the air. None of us were hurt. About 2 in the afternoon it commenced raining, not drizzling rain, but a tough old Virginia rain storm. Tuesday returned to camp.

Wednesday we moved back about a mile, as Gen'l McClellan thought we occupied too conspicuous a position, into a cornfield, and the stalks and husks make a very good bed.

Friday the Left section was ordered to guard a party of men building a bridge across the river which separates the Right of the Army from Yorktown. We had only one alarm during the day: were relieved by the Centre section yesterday morning, and came back to camp.

Yesterday afternoon I received permission to go with a party of two for oysters, so last night had an oyster stew. All that was needed to make it rich was *butter, milk, pepper*, and a few little extras that we must not expect in the Army.

Sunday night, 6 o'clock: I have just finished my supper





of 3 hard breads and a cup of coffee. Oh! I am getting used to High Living. . . .

State musters are nothing to be compared with the encampments here. General McClellan and his body guard are encamped about a quarter of a mile from ours. The guard consists of Duryea's Zouave Regiment, a Regiment of Regular Dragoons, and an infantry regiment.

Billy Baxter and Charlie Jameson have been over to see Major Wood. He is on McClellan's staff with the rank of major.

The gunboats that are going to do the mischief are in York River, four miles from us, and the Signal Corps have been signalling all day to them.

I believe the ball will roll pretty soon, and if nothing is wanting save the number of men, why the place is ours. Who knows but what there will be another surrender at Yorktown!"

Note: "At Yorktown on the first day, Corporal T. E. Chase was seen when under fire, studying the Manual of the Gun—*Serving with reduced numbers.*"

---

The Fifth Mass. Battery guarded the new bridge over Wormley Creek by sections on certain days, as follows:—

The Right section, Lieut. Hyde, April 13th, 15th, 18th, 21st, 24th, 27th, 30th, and May 3d.

Centre section, Lieut. Phillips, April 16th, 19th, 22d, 25th, 28th and May 1st.

Left section, Lieut. Dillingham, April 14th, 17th, 20th, 23d, 26th, 29th and May 2d.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN,

Sunday morning April 13, 1862.

Yesterday morning I relieved Lieut. Dillingham. . . . As there were a lot of planks lying round intended for the bridge, we set to work and built a house, 12 ft. by 18 ft.



roofed with slabs which accommodated about 20 very comfortably. General McClellan is encamped in the field behind us, and close to him is a regiment of some sort of Zouaves with red breeches and white turbans, altogether too conspicuous a uniform for comfort in war. . . . I am getting dreadfully tired of loafing around here doing nothing. No drill, no bugle calls, no stirring out of camp lest orders should come in our absence, and meanwhile we are waiting, waiting, doing nothing. . . . Oysters are plenty. Our cook is opening about half a bushel now for our dinner."

Grows' Journal: "April 13, 1862. The view where we are encamped is splendid, the river is near us. In front, in our rear, and either side, are woods and ravines, with nice, cool springs of water.

Monday April 14. This forenoon at 9 we got our ration of hard bread for one day, so as to be ready at 10 to go on picket and relieve the section which is guarding the bridge. Soon after, we fell in and went over and relieved them, after which I made me a little house of boards to sleep in. I then dug a hole in front of it to put wood in so I can have a fire. We only stand guard of one hour, and are off eight, so it comes very easy on us. The rest of the time we dig oysters and mussels, and go fishing, or lie down on the grass in the shade. At one o'clock the cooks came over with our dinner of stewed beans. About five o'clock the coffee was brought over to us. I built a fire in front of my tent and with Serg't. Harry Simonds, and a few others we sat down to chat and smoke. At 8 I went on guard for one hour, coming off at 9."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT

NEAR YORKTOWN, April 14, 1862.

I give a short journal to show how much time I have to myself: Sat'y April 5th marched at daylight. Halted and kept in line till 4 p. m., then went into the field and stayed



till 8 p. m. Sunday, April 6th, Right and Centre sections in the field from 3 a. m. till dark. Wednesday, April 9th, Left section in the field. Kept in continual alarm all day and routed out at midnight for fear of an attack. Thursday, April 10th, Right section in the field,—Lieut. Phillips accompanying. Moved camp in the afternoon. Friday, April 11th, Left section guarding the bridge 24 hours. Sat'y, April 12th, Centre section guarding the bridge 24 hours. Sunday, April 13th, Right section at the bridge. Monday, April 14th, Left section at the bridge, Centre section on picket.

Last night Martin's and Weeden's batteries were turned out by a little skirmish in front. The rebels sallied out and cut down the peach orchard and burnt the houses on the left and front of the field in which our guns were placed Sunday April 6th. . . . Today I marched my section at 7 a. m. into the field where we encamped for the first few days, came into Battery, unhitched the horses, watered them, picketed them, posted a guard and went to work to pass away the time. The picket reserve were close by. This consists of about 200 men . . . and is intended to support our pickets in case they are driven in. . . . Pretty soon up rode some officers curious to look at the enemy but there is no passing pickets, so back they go. Next come some officers of the Signal Corps and they keep on whatever they choose, and pretty soon we see the signal flag waving ahead where



*Signal Flag.*

it keeps going all day, occasionally shifting its position. Then we see a section of artillery coming along the edge of



the woods on our left, and pretty soon they come into battery and shell away at a rebel earthwork. Towards afternoon we hear heavy reports on our right, and conclude that the gunboats are trying their hand in the rebel batteries.

So gradually the day wears on till sunset, when we limber up and go home. I shall probably go down to the bridge tomorrow. . . . Shipping Point is important as a place where we can load heavy stores instead of carting them over the roads between us and Fortress Monroe. Porter's Division is encamped well in sight of York River in one large field, i. e. it may have been several fields, but fences are among the things that were. In the same field is the Artillery Reserve, with guns too numerous to mention. . . . One side of our camp is sheltered by a fence, saved by our energetic efforts, which appertains to a large house distinguished as 'the house with blinds on it.' This house is a large two story edifice . . . used as a General Hospital for our troops. In front of the house is a large peach orchard, and the hopes of a speedy reduction of Yorktown are saddened by the thought that we must leave so many unripe peaches behind us. The siege guns have at last been heard from. Lieut. Dillingham rode down a couple of miles toward Shipping Point last night, and saw in a field several 30 pdrs. Rifled Guns, one 8 inch Columbiad, and several 8 or 10 inch mortars. The engineers are at work prospecting all round, and I suppose we shall now start some trenches. The bridge over the creek which lies between Porter's Division and Yorktown, progresses slowly, and I think the attack will be made in that direction. I just hear that General Hooker is at Shipping Point, General Sumner in the neighborhood of the Severn."

Phillips' Diary: "April 14. Some of our heavy howitzers on our left trying to shell out a rebel battery. Small fight between the gunboats and rebel batteries."





Grows' Journal: "Tuesday April 15, 1862. After breakfast we laid ourselves out on the grass to wait till we should be relieved at 10 o'clock this forenoon. There are about 300 men here at work building bridges. There are to be three of them. There was a pontoon bridge of boats thrown across the creek last night. These bridges are fine looking ones. . . . About 10 a. m. were relieved, when we went to camp. All that I need the most is something to read, and that is almost impossible to get, for when a paper does get here it is spoken for by most every man that sees it."

Phillips' Diary: "April 15th, 1862. One bridge finished, and a pontoon bridge put on the creek."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

Wednesday, April 16, 1862.

The Centre section is guarding the bridge today, Lieut. Hyde having had it yesterday. Nothing momentous has occurred. The gunboats have been throwing a few shells at the forts and the forts have been throwing a few shells at the gunboats. This morning there was a considerable heavy firing on the left.

Hooker's Division came up today, and have encamped somewhere in our neighborhood. They are now building four bridges here. The floating bridge is rather a failure, as the logs sink as fast as they are put in. 1 and 2 were built by General Morell, and are about finished; 3 and 4 by General Martindale. No. 1 was laid yesterday in 2½ hours. No. 4 was commenced this morning, and is nearly finished. The width of the creek is about 60 yds. Across the river the banks rise up steep, and then there is a level plain to the enemy's lines. As soon as the bridges are finished the siege



guns and mortars will probably be carried across, and put in position, and the Secesh will have an unpleasant time. Yesterday afternoon I rode about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles towards Ship Point, and found part of the siege train, twelve  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inch Rifled Guns, eleven 8 inch mortars, nine 10 inch mortars."

Chase's Diary: "April 16, 1862. Centre section sent to guard bridge. Alarm at 7 p. m. when a shell struck in the camp of the 22d Mass. Reg't,—General Miles's old regiment,—but doing no damage. Captain Griffin ordered 'every man to his post,' and to be ready to load with shrapnell. Heavy cannonading and sharp musketry firing on the extreme left to-day, and occasional shots through the night."

Phillips' Diary:—"April 16th. . . . Occasional shells from gunboats."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

April 17, 1862.

"Thursday morning. The firing on the left was kept up all day, and at supper time the rumor was that we had dismounted several pieces of the enemy. Towards evening the reports became heavier and I thought I could distinguish the boom of a mortar, and the whistling of a heavy shell. This morning the firing still continues, having been kept up all night. About five o'clock yesterday afternoon the enemy appeared to have become excited, and threw several shells in rapid succession, into the creek, just below us, rather disturbing one of my men who was fishing on the lower bridge. Some of their shells fell among the pickets across the creek and the officers of the Signal Corps who were over here were obliged to retreat double quick, without time to carry away all their things. In a few minutes up rode Griffin in a very excited state.—



'Every man to the guns. Load with shrapnell when you load, and fire right at them!—Two regiments of infantry and one of cavalry have just appeared outside of the Fort.'

So we got all ready, but nobody appeared. Pretty soon, however, two of our regiments crossed over and deployed in front of us, and just as I was thinking that the commander of them had better keep me informed of their movements if he did not wish a shell amongst them, General Martindale rode up and suggested the necessity of my using some discretion in firing at the other bank. I have just returned from the bridge."

FROM LIFE AND LETTERS OF THE REV. WARREN H. CUDWORTH, CHAPLAIN 1ST MASS. INFANTRY.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

April 18, 1862.

MY DEAR PARISHIONERS.

. . . Here, in 1781, before the United States became a nation, were encamped the regiments of our Revolutionary ancestors and their French allies, and on the very ground where now are quartered the soldiers of the loyal North, the British laid down their arms, and the independence of the United States was practically established. The very house where Lafayette had his headquarters is within a few steps of my tent, and the site formerly occupied by his seven thousand troops is freshly consecrated by the presence among the forces of two batteries from Massachusetts. The 1st Reg't. occupies an advanced position about a mile in front of General McClellan's headquarters, and only two from the strong earthworks which defend Yorktown."



## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

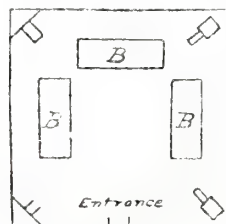
April 18, 1862.

There is so much firing now around here that we don't get up to look out unless a shell comes in our neighborhood. The guns which are in plain sight directly in front of our tent, and the enemy's water batteries blaze away at each other once in a while, but without accomplishing much. We can hear the shells whistling through the air, and an inexperienced individual would imagine them directly over our heads, though they do not come within a mile of us. . . . I do not know whether General McClellan was deceived in the character of the works to be encountered, but General Porter, who stands as high in McC.'s confidence as any General of Division had no idea that the rebel fortifications were as strong as they really are. The first day was only a reconnoissance, as it would be as useless to throw stones at a brick wall as to oppose field batteries to earthworks armed with 32 pdrs. and 10 in. mortars. Our generals soon found that out and are now preparing for an extended siege. Nothing can be done without the siege train, and this moves slowly. There are now in a field about a mile from here,—a kind of depot,—some fifteen  $4\frac{1}{2}$  inch Rifled Guns, five 100 pdr. Parrott guns, and twenty 8 and 10 inch mortars, besides three or four 8 in. Howitzers. The  $4\frac{1}{2}$  in. guns and the Howitzers are mounted on siege carriages,—something like a field carriage,—the Parrotts on wrought iron barbette carriages with chains and traverse circle. Nothing has yet been done towards opening the trenches, but about 400 men are at work across the creek in front of our two guns, in making gabions, so you see we expect to do some shovelling. . . . Meantime the rebels are not idle, but are working like bees, shovelling





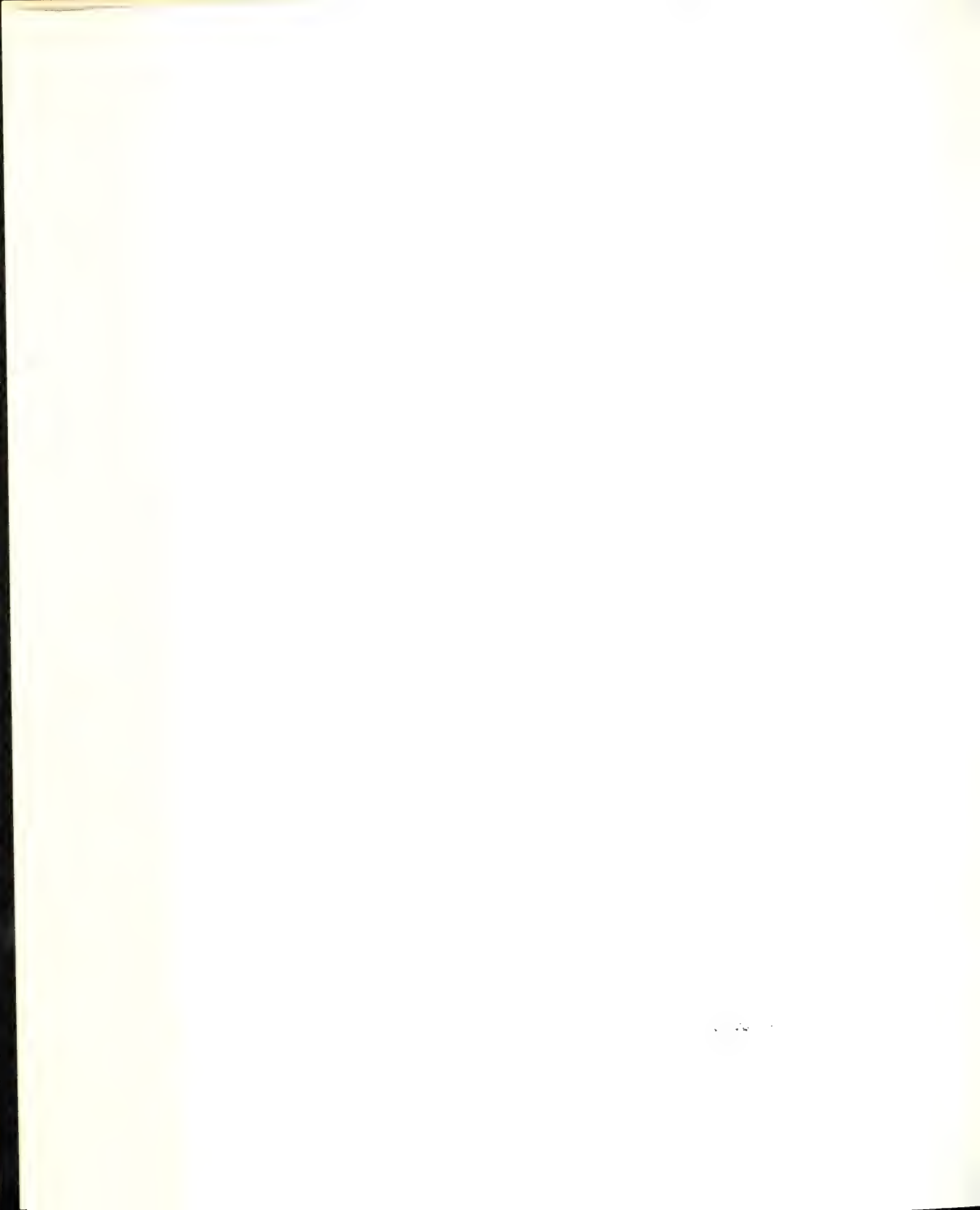
dirt, that is to say, they are making the negroes work, for Lieut. Colonel Alexander, chief of engineers, told me the day I was out on picket, that he had just been inspecting them, and he could see nothing but negroes. . . . A deserter who came in told the sergeant who had charge of him, and the sergeant told one of our men, that our shots the first Sunday we were here caused a great commotion in the rebel camp, bursting right in the tents. As the Centre section of the Mass. 5th was the only one that fired at the camp, you will see this story gives some satisfaction. At the same time mind I do not vouch for its correctness. [See p. 208] . . . This afternoon I took a ride towards the various landings,—Ship Point, Crab Point, Cheesman's Point, Back River Landing, Melville Point &c. all in the same general direction. . . . Close to the siege train in the field afore-said is a square redoubt, intended to defend an attack from Back River Landing and Ship Point. The redoubt is very well built, with a barbette in each corner for a gun, and would hold about 300 men. The ditch is full of water. [Barbette guns fire over the parapet and have a free range.]



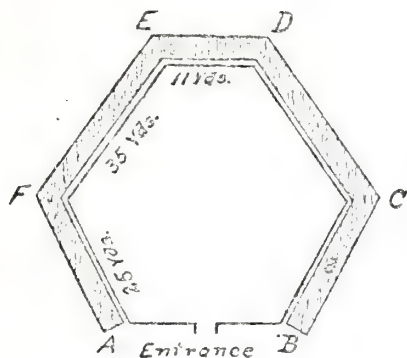
B. Barracks

Redoubt.

The magazines are under the ramparts, and are very well protected. The barracks are very comfortable, like all rebel barracks in this neighborhood, being well built log houses. At present the redoubt is occupied as a magazine for the ammunition for the siege train, and holds quite a



pile of shells. Farther down the road is what would be called in military language a lunette, with a *pan coupe* (The short length of parapet, by which the salient angle of a work is sometimes cut off.) at the salient, and the gorge stockaded in this shape.



*A B is a mere  
stockade with  
no ditch.  
Barbettes for  
guns at C & F and  
at the pan coupe  
D & E.  
d. Ditch.*

### LUNETTE.

This work was fitted for three guns, and say 200 infantry. The ditch was full of water. There were no barracks. The platforms for the guns had been laid and taken up again by the rebels, or by us. . . . The fortifications at Ship Point are said to be very strong. . . . The country round here is very flat and dusty. We are encamped in a cornfield which is by no means as pleasant as grass land. Peach orchards are very abundant, but I am afraid if we stay here till they are ripe there will be more men than peaches. . . . We have built up an extensive arbor in front of our tent, where we sit in arm chairs made out of barrels and enjoy our '*otium cum dignitate*' in true military style. The powers that be seem to have repented of their reduction of baggage, for tomorrow the officers will once more have three tents,—wall tents."

Chase's Diary: "April 19, 1862. . . . Roar of musketry on extreme left at 9.30 p. m."



Grows' Journal: "Saturday, April 19, 1862. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on guard. After going on my post my attention was taken up till 3 o'clock by the passing of troops with gabions made of wicker work. They are filled with earth, and in this way our intrenchments and breastworks are built by our troops. Was relieved at 3 this morning."

Phillips' Diary. "April 19. . . . Towards evening an easterly storm set in, and rained all night. A great many gabions moved across the bridges to this side. A great many men with shovels &c. crossed to the other side."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT NEAR YORKTOWN,

Sunday Forenoon, April 20, 1862.

We arrived here two weeks ago, expecting to march right into Yorktown and have been waiting here ever since without apparently getting much nearer our object. . . . Our principal business now is to guard the bridges across Wormley Creek. We have 2 guns posted on a bluff just this side of the creek, commanding four bridges, and raking the opposite shore. The Battery is well masked with bushes, and I doubt whether the enemy know of its existence. The three sections relieve each other in this duty, each taking it 24 hours at a time, so that I am down there one day out of three. The duties are not very laborious. We have built up a house out of slabs, roofed with a tarpaulin, and we get along very comfortably. Yesterday while I was down there, I devoted my energies to building a chair, calculating on a prolonged stay. We have built up an arbor in front of our tent and rigged up a settee, so that we can sit in the shade in the hot days to come. As the said settee, however, is rather hard, I thought I would



get up something a little more comfortable, and yesterday I set to work to put my plans in execution. The result has fully answered my expectations. I have now a chair, which



*Camp Chair.*

I consider a triumph of genius and in which I can sit with great comfort. My chair is likewise a bedstead, and can be made to occupy any intermediate position between these two extremes. You may judge of its attractiveness by the following incident:—Just after it was completed Major (Albert J.) Myer, Chief of the Signal Corps passed by and was so struck with it that nothing would satisfy him, but he must have one like it, so the man that made mine is going to make one for him. . . .

The siege,—so called,—of Yorktown progresses slowly. The siege train is coming up slowly; some 20 guns and 20 mortars having reached the depot about a mile from here. A large force have been at work making gabions, and a thousand or two went over the creek last night, with shovels and intrenching tools. . . . We have splendid artillery here, and ought to drive them out of their position in 48 hours after our guns are in position. Our siege train is made up mostly of 4½ inch Rifled Guns, a very accurate and long ranged piece of ordnance, and a half dozen 100 pdr. Parrott Guns, which seem to have knocked Fort Pulaski to pieces. [Fort Pulaski commanded the entrance to the Savannah River on the eastern coast of Florida.] The enemy have some heavy ordnance e. g. the 10 inch Mortars with which they practice at us, and some heavy Columbiads in their water batteries, but old smooth bore 320 and 240





form the most of their armament, while they use still smaller pieces a great deal. . . . The military commission to Europe.—Major Delafield, Major Mordecai and Captain McClellan,—found great fault with the allied generals, because they attempted to besiege Sebastopol without surrounding it and cutting off its supplies. General McClellan marches his army 200 miles to besiege Yorktown, and places it in this position. (See Plan of Operations.) I have not yet been able to discern the difference between the two situations. And considering the fact that the rebels can throw up as many intrenchments as they please between Yorktown and Richmond, the siege does not seem to promise any very satisfactory results. . . . Referring to the Revolutionary map, our general hospital is at Lafayette's Headquarters. We are encamped where the Virginia militia were. Our bridges are built across Wormley's Creek where the old road crossed it to Moore's house or rather a little above. [A frame building with a brick foundation about a mile and a half south of Yorktown, and a quarter of a mile from the banks of the York River. The commissioners of the two armies met here when Cornwallis surrendered, to agree upon terms of capitulation. At that time it was occupied by a widow of the name of Moore, and was known as "Moore's house."] The enemy's works extend in a curved line from the British redoubt on the shore of the river to the Virginia quarters, our first camp, half way between Moore's house and the Adj. Gen's Quarters. Our guns placed in position the first two days a little farther up the road to the right; Martin's Battery the first day to the right of the field where the British laid down their arms. . . . The peach orchard to the left has been cut down, and the houses close by it burnt by the rebels to prevent them from sheltering our sharpshooters. The Battery to which we directed most of our attention when we were in the field is the one nearest the road."



## FROM ANOTHER LETTER OF THE SAME DATE.

"Our three tents for the officers arrived yesterday, and as soon as the easterly storm, which is the order of the day at present, stops, we shall move in. . . . I will allow General McClellan 5 weeks to take the place, and I think by the end of that time the soldiers will capture Yorktown. . . . The rebels occupy one line across the peninsula and we occupy another parallel to it, and allowing that both sides can throw up dirt equally fast, they have the advantage of us, as they have one pile of dirt all thrown up. As far as I can see there is nothing to prevent them from throwing up a new line in the rear of their present intrenchments, and so continuing the process, and even supposing we could drive them out of their fortifications without difficulty by the slow process of a siege, it would take considerable time to trench from here to Richmond. . . . As things are now working, the event will be decided by engineering skill, and artillery practice. . . . In the point of artillery practice our army has shown itself immensely superior to the rebels. At Hilton Head, Fort Henry, Fort Pulaski, our heavy guns were so well manned that the result was inevitable, and here it must be the same. Our siege train consisting of the best Rifled Guns ought to dismount every rebel gun in 48 hours, and I have no doubt will do it. At 2,200 yards the first Sunday, one of my guns was aimed at a rebel gun, and at the second shot landed a shell in the embrasure. This from a 3 inch gun. A 4½ inch gun of course ranges a great deal farther and more accurately at the same distance, and the first parallel is generally placed at 600 yards from the work attacked. . . . We have also six 100 pdr. Parrott Guns which I see went clear through the brick walls of Fort Pulaski. . . . In the meantime the main body of the army will lie back out of danger, unless the garrison make a sortie, when we shall drive them back without much difficulty.



April 21, 1862. Mr. Schenkle the inventor of the only percussion fuze now in use, who was here to-day, says that a 200 pdr. Parrott gun has been mounted on the Point across Wormley's Creek, intended to silence the water batteries of the enemy. . . . Mr. Fay, allotment commissioner for Massachusetts, has been here to-day."

---

The Roll in charge of this officer has been thus described:—

"It is a new kind of pay roll made out by the State of Massachusetts for her soldiers, and is called the 'Allotment Roll.' Each man that wishes to allot a part or whole of his money to his parents, friends, or any one, can do so by signing the roll. Then after each company has made out its roll, and it has been signed, by the company, the Captain endorses it and gives it to the Paymaster. The Paymaster then sends the money to the State Treasurer, and he sends it to the city or town treasurer. Then the city or town treasurer notifies the persons to whom the money is sent, and they call and get it. The object is to insure safety and to save paying the percentage on the money which would have to be paid if it was sent by express."

---

Phillips' Diary: "April 22, 1862. . . . Set to work and built a frame house 18x13 ft., 4 ft. high at the eaves, 8 ft. high at the ridge."

#### THE TRENCHES.—YORKTOWN.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT NEAR

YORKTOWN VA. April 23d, 1862.

General Orders. [Extracts.]

The following orders for the construction of batteries and trenches



during the operations before Yorktown, will be strictly observed, viz.—

Night working parties will be double the size of day parties, one-half forming a support to the guard.

(IN CASE OF AN ATTACK.)

The buglers and drummers,—of whom there should always be some in the parallels with the officers commanding the firing parties and supports,—immediately sound "to arms" or beat the "long roll," which will be repeated all along the lines, and as far back as the reserves. . . .

The utmost silence and order must be preserved in the trenches, and in marching to and from them. All working parties for the trenches will go equipped for action.

To prevent the glistening of the bayonets and arms betraying the movements of the troops, bayonets will be carried in the scabbard, and the gun slung while going to and from the trenches.

An officer will be sent with each relief of the guards and working parties to the batteries and trenches, who will return to his camp to escort the next relief to their proper position.

No officer, soldier, or citizen, shall be allowed to enter the trenches, or to approach their vicinity, unless specially detailed on duty there. The only exception to this rule, will be in the case of General Officers, the staff of the Major Gen. Commanding, and the staff officers of the Generals near the trenches.

[All officers or men who unnecessarily exposed themselves to the view of the enemy, with the above exceptions, were to be arrested and sent to the nearest Provost Marshal.]

By command of Major General McClellan

S. WILLIAMS Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.

---

FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Thursday morning, April 24, 1862. The 5th Battery now can bear comparison with any battery in the service, and does not fall below the average standard in this Division. Griffin's Battery is of course well drilled. All regulars are."

Phillips' Diary: "April 25, 1862. . . . Built a turf chimney and fireplace in the house: cold, easterly storm all day and night."





Grows' Journal: "Friday, April 25, 1862. This forenoon I got some 'laurel root,' a very pretty wood, and made a pipe. It looks very neat and nice. The wood grows quite plenty around here. There is the usual amount of heavy firing from the large guns. We hear it so much that I have got used to it."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

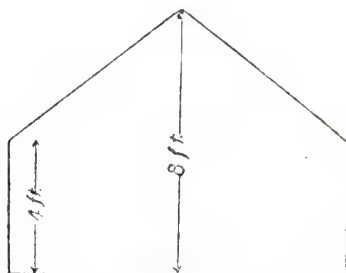
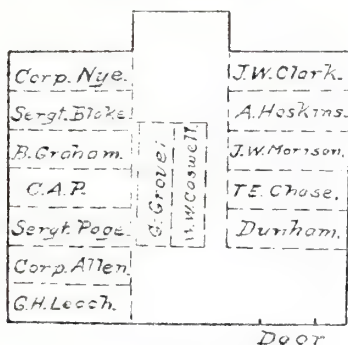
"April 26, 1862. The Doctor of the N. Y. 44th occasionally drops in with a New York daily, and Mr. Whittemore reporter for the N. Y. *Times*, brought in this morning's *Times* and *Herald* of the 23d, still as I received Boston papers of the 22d. last night, I keep posted as well as anybody. . . . The house which we first built was soon carried off, to build the bridges, and nothing was left behind but a few slabs and joists. The other sections got along with a patched up arrangement which lets in wind, rain and cold, and kept everybody pretty uncomfortable. Last Tuesday, however, when the Centre section got down there, I set to work to see what we could do, and the ingenuity of the section soon planned an edifice, which I consider one of the wonders of the war. This building is 13 by 17 ft., gable ended, all framed together, and all pinned together with oaken pins. The sides are made of slabs put on clapboard fashion, one end being built of oak timbers 14 inches square. The roof is made of a tarpaulin, full as light as canvas. It is 4 ft. high at the eaves, and 8 ft. at the ridge pole, so that we can stand up and walk around with great comfort. . . . During the last three or four days an easterly storm has prevailed, and we found that our hotel would be uncomfortable without a fire, so yesterday the Centre section again took hold and built a fireplace and chimney of turf on one side of the house, cutting a hole in the side. The chimney draws beautifully, and all yesterday and last night we kept up a roaring fire. The floor is made of oak



slabs, smooth side up, pretty well levelled, but with occasional cracks three or four inches in width. We spread our blankets on the floor, put a sloping board down for a pillow, and turn in.

The following plan will give you an idea of how we pack.

*5 ft fireplace.*



*House near Wormleys Cr.*

We have got our wall tent, Scott and I having one, but as the Captain's tent is the only one with a stove in it, we have no chance yet to enjoy it. I like the tent much better than a Sibley. It is 9 ft. square, and about 9 ft. high, four feet high at the eaves. It is not so large as the Sibley tent, but the room is so disposed that it can all be used. The beds are placed on each side, leaving a clear space in the middle with a table, looking glass, &c. opposite the door. The only trouble is that the tents are not new, and ours has got a hole ripped in the end opposite the door, which we find it difficult to stop up. . . . A N. Y. Lieut. Colonel and Major deserted day before yesterday and went to Yorktown. How much information they can carry I do not know. Two batteries have been established by our side in the woods to the right of the field where our Battery was placed the first Sunday, and four 4½ inch guns have been mounted in one of them. The mortars will be placed on the opposite shore



of Wormley's Creek, at the end of the bridges which we are guarding. The bank has been cut away. . . . In this position they will be completely sheltered and out of sight of the enemy, while they can be fired with perfect ease, it being of no consequence that the mark should be in sight from the mortar.

April 26, 1862. Two batteries we have built and four guns we have mounted. These are so near the rebel fortifications that the men at work on them are not allowed to speak a loud word. The trees are still standing in front of them, so that the rebels cannot ascertain their exact position, though they know we are doing something in the vicinity; accordingly they amuse themselves by shelling the woods but without doing any particular damage to anybody. The floating bridge which I mentioned in one of my letters as being rather a failure, has been taken up, and the materials used to build a bridge still lower down the creek. . . . There is now great fault found with the artillery ammunition, and I do not think that McC. can shift all the blame on the Ordnance Department. Take one instance: before we left Hall's Hill, every artillery officer in the Army knew that the percussion ammunition furnished to us was utterly unreliable. The percussion fuze universally adopted is Schenkle's, the best yet invented, but the shot preferred by the Ordnance Department was found to be unreliable. Of all the percussion shell which we fired at Hall's Hill, only two proved at all satisfactory, and these were fired at the very short range of 200 yards. The rest turned over, burst in the air, and flew round in all sorts of ways, the greater number not being seen or heard of after they left the muzzle of the guns. Still knowing all this, half the batteries in the Army were supplied with the Dyer shot. The consequence was that in the first day's fight at Yorktown, the percussion ammunition exploded pretty much everywhere, at the muzzle of the gun, and everywhere else, except the right place. As soon as the news of this reached



headquarters there was a great hullabaloo. Mr. Schenkle (see p. 125) was sent for post haste, and new ammunition was ordered, and the Ordnance Department blamed generally and particularly. . . . Again the 4½ in. siege guns it is said proved to be a failure before we left Washington, and yet McClellan accepts a train of them though greatly inferior to the Parrott gun, and the bombardment of Fort Pulaski has demonstrated that the James projectile is immensely superior to either. Then I don't know but what it shows generalship to draw up our Army in front of the rebel lines without any chance to outflank or surround them. . . . We can storm the works, of course, but this we might have done a great deal better the first day when the enemy were surprised and before they were reinforced.

Sunday evening, April 27th. . . . Our bridge builders seem to have changed their plans. They have taken up the upper pontoon bridge and the floating bridge, and carried the materials of the latter a short distance down the stream to build a pier bridge, which sank into the mud as soon as it was finished, so that now about 50 feet of the centre are under water. The lower pontoon bridge is at present defended, in addition to our Battery, by a pine log and a barrel mounted on wheels! Our house at the bridge still continues in excellent condition, the Right section today actually did a little work on it, raising the chimney a few feet. Sergt. Peacock says that the rule of the section is to put under arrest any man who does anything more than what is absolutely necessary to sustain life. . . . Staunton and Weldon are turning out to be important. Perhaps McClellan's plans are deeper than anybody thinks. . . . The whole siege train has all disappeared, and I presume guns and mortars are all mounted somewhere, ready to open when the word is given.

At present there is quite a rage for pipe making here. At least half of the men in the Division are carving pipes out





of laurel root, and I am not sure but I shall take to it myself, though whether I shall make a pipe, salt cellar or toothpick I have not yet decided. . . . Five Parrott 100 pdrs. have been mounted near a large house between Wormley's Creek and the river . . . one from which a very good view could be obtained of the rebel fortifications. Very extensive works have been erected on the other side of the creek, and the rebels occasionally try to shell out our workmen. This morning there was quite a noise for a few minutes as they threw out a field battery, and fired as fast as they could load for about 15 minutes. The gunboats have been firing a few shots today, and seemed to have got the range better."

On this day General Fitz John Porter was appointed Director of the Siege.

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, April 27th. I spent a very pleasant forenoon and portion of this afternoon reading the *American Union* and the *Herald*."

Letter of Corporal Spear: "Monday, April 28, 1862. . . . Every day thousands and thousands of men are at work throwing up entrenchments and digging rifle pits for the use of our Army in the coming battle; the infantry regiments do the fatigue duties, while batteries do guard duty. Yesterday there was considerable firing between the rebels and our gunboats, and several times during the day a battery of field artillery would come out and fire upon our fatigue men."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday, April 29, 1862. Was called at 1 o'clock this morning to go on my post, which I did, coming off at 3, when I was relieved. There has been some awful heavy firing by the rebels and our gunboats all night. I can plainly see the flashes of their guns every time they fire. I went to my tent and laid down and read the *Herald* and the *Journal* that I had borrowed. I had read about half an hour when the camp was awakened by the call Hitch up. I had not more than got to my place, when an



order came into camp—"Un Hitch," so we all went to our tents again. It was expected the rebels would make a sortie out on some of the regiments and if they had they would have been cut to pieces."

Later in the day he saw 15 rebel prisoners who had been taken that morning.

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"CAMP NEAR YORKTOWN VA.

April 29, 1862.

We were paid off yesterday, and all is lovely again. For the last two months our standard currency has been hard bread: five hard breads for a sheet of paper, and a whole day's ration for a postage stamp. We have eaten hard tack so long that now it is second nature to us, and I believe that if worst came to worst we could masticate flint. We live on hard tack; hard tack is our money; we use them for dipper covers and candlesticks, and if they were large enough we should make them into 'spare wheels' for our gun carriages, but hard tack are of no account now for money, which is the one thing needful, is plenty.

We are in camp today, but the Right section is at the Bridge, and while I am penning this I can hear the enemy's shells bursting very near the Battery. They are nervous about something today, for they have blazed away quite brisk this a. m. Their firing is all guess work, and has not yet done any harm. They cannot see the bridges or workmen, but fire as near as they can judge, and try to shell the men at work on the bridges and siege guns.

You say your business is dull. Well, our business out here is 'looking up.' . . . All the canvas we have on hand is what makes the roof of our house, iron remains quiet, but there is a prospect of an upward tendency, as we have a big contract to fill in Yorktown. We are doing something in



lead, and expect that trade in this line will be very active soon.

You say that Easter Sunday was observed as a day of Thanksgiving and prayer for the recent victories of our army. I attended divine service that day with the 17th N. Y. Regiment.

There is so much confusion in the tent that I hardly know what I have written or am writing."

At the close of this letter reference is made to the lint which was prepared by individuals and by the ladies of the Soldiers' Aid Societies (see p. 2) at the North, meeting at their own houses or in the church vestries to "scrape lint" and roll linen bandages. He says:—

"I have the package of bandages and lint, which you kindly gave me, and before Yorktown is taken they will be needed, if not by me they will by others. When you gave them to me I did not realize that they would ever be needed for the purpose for which they were so carefully prepared, but the stern reality is fast approaching."

---

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

April 30, 1862. Our preparations go on gradually: they are now building the mortar beds, having taken a lot of oak timbers which were lying round our Battery at the bridge for that purpose. One of the pontoon bridges was taken up two days ago, and the pontoons are being used to bring planks, shot and shell, up the creek. The gunboats fire 15 or 20 shots a day, make a great deal of noise and accomplish very little. We want an ironclad gunboat to sail up York River past the water batteries, and take the rebel lines in the rear . . . the 'Galena' is an iron clad steamer of 6 guns . . . she is now at Fortress Monroe. . . . 5 p. m. We were mustered this afternoon at 2 o'clock, in



the midst of a rain storm, by Captain Griffin. As a muster for pay includes a parade, inspection, and roll call, you can imagine the pleasure of the thing. About noon the rebels seemed to have a new idea in their heads, for they suddenly threw 3 shot towards the battery by the house. . . . Five 100 pdr. Parrotts sent back our answer, and have been banging away ever since. We can hear the whir-r-r-r of the shell as it flies through the air, the *thud* as it strikes, and then the explosion. Two shells upset after leaving the gun, as we could tell by the irregular sound they made."

Phillips' Diary: "April 30th. The rebels continually shell our intrenchments across Wormley's Creek, and Monday killed one man in the N. Y. 44th."

RELATIVE TO RECRUITS see p. 194.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, May 1, 1862.

General Orders  
No. 49.

Upon requisition made by Commanders of Armies in the field, authority will be given by the War Department to the Governors of the respective States to recruit Regiments now in service.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"May 2, 1862. We have established batteries of siege guns and mortars,—11 batteries at least,—but as yet they are not ready to open. The only exception to this is Battery No. 1 of five 100 pdr. Parrott guns, which now fires once in a while through the day and night. Last night when I was down at the bridge the noise was incessant all night, and I could hardly get a wink of sleep. Their principal attention seemed to be directed to our earthworks, and as most of the shell exploded within 500 or 600 yards of





our guns, the noise was rather disagreeable. This forenoon the performance has been kept up, and Battery No. 1 has had quite a duel with the rebels. . . . We can see the rebels' shots strike in a large field where they are pretty sure not to hurt anybody. One of their shots struck close by a large barn, and with our glasses we could see our men running to pick it up. During the forenoon the rebels appeared to get a little excited, for they elevated their gun and sent a shot whirring clear over our camp towards Gen. McC.'s headquarters. Last night our guard at Wormley's Creek reports that they sent one shell right into the camp fire of the heavy artillerists encamped across the creek. Our house at the bridge we extended yesterday, making it now about 25x13 feet. Our quarters there are altogether the best we have, although my tent is pretty comfortable.

#### THE PROVOST GUARD.

One of the institutions round here is the Provost Guard which makes itself particularly obtrusive. The guard is stationed all over the Division about half a dozen at each post. They pitch their shelter tents and keep one man on the lookout all the time: and then woe betide civilian or private soldier, who attempts to cross their beat without a pass. There are three posts down by the bridge, and one about 50 ft. from our tents, and many more, scattered all around the lot.

#### THE SUTLER.

Another institution, rather more popular, is the sutler's, which is now exceedingly well patronized. One is in sight from our camp, and I should think at least 50 men have been standing outside the door ever since pay day, three days ago. Prices run rather high and change is not to be had. The unlucky wight who has nothing but a



\$5 treasury note,—and this includes most of the army,—and wants a pound of tobacco, must take his change in soldiers' tickets, or go without his tobacco. . . . P. S. Our Quartermaster Sergeant, just returned from Fortress Monroe, says that the 'Galena' will be here in a few days."

### THE EVACUATION.

Chase's Diary: "May 3, 1862. Yorktown was evacuated today by the enemy. The Right section was withdrawn in the evening. Terrific shelling by our gunboats."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Sunday Morning, May 4, 1862.

The American Flag waves over the fortifications of Yorktown, and McClellan can again advance to occupy the deserted intrenchments of the enemy.

For the last week there have been rumors that the enemy were leaving, and last night they took their final departure, burning up what they could not take with them. We were awakened in the night by the firing of the outposts, and a bright light was seen over Yorktown, and this morning our troops took quiet possession. The gunboats have been signalled to move up the river. We are ordered to march to-morrow with two days' cooked rations, forage &c."

---

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 4, 1862. Went on my post at 2 this morning. I had not been on more than an hour when I heard heavy cannonading in the direction of Yorktown. In about ten minutes it was almost deafening. In a short time I noticed quite a fire which soon increased to a tremendous large one. I first thought the fight on the



Right had begun but I soon found that the rebels were destroying their stores and some of their works. The reports of the large guns and the rattle of musketry were both awful and sublime. Shortly after 7 o'clock word was received in camp that the rebels had evacuated Yorktown. During the night if Pandemonium had been let loose it would not have caused more excitement than did the leaving of Yorktown! Drums that they have not dared to beat for the last four weeks; bugles that have not sounded since we have come here, now opened their music, and never was a Fourth of July at home equal to it. It is a beautiful morning and the bands are playing the 'Star Spangled Banner,' 'America,' and 'Hail Columbia.' Soon the different camps take up the cheering, and it can hardly be described, for from the throats of 100,000 men cheer after cheer went up, and thanks that the place is ours and without the loss of blood. Divine service was held in the different camps in commemoration of the event.

This place has been for the last four weeks one of dread both to our officers and men, and now that the place is ours our feelings can hardly be described. It does look good to see our old flag flying over the rebels' rag. Some of our men have gone to the city. They found about 1000 barrels of flour and a large quantity of stores. I have a piece of the house where Gen. Washington was at the surrender of Cornwallis. We have had orders to pack our knapsacks, and be ready to start at any moment. Went to Roll at 6. It did seem good to have our old bugle again."

Chase's Diary: ". . . Reconnoissance by balloon 'Intrepid' this morning. Whole company in camp to-day; (May 4th) first time for three weeks."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "May 5th 1862. Still at Camp Winfield Scott. Heavy firing all day towards Williamsburg. Rumors of all sorts round camp. Hitched up at 5 p. m., unhitched 15 minutes after, and unharnessed at 1 in the morning."



## LETTER OF PELEG W. BLAKE.

"YORKTOWN, May 3, 1862.

Saturday night (May 3d) there was 'right smart' hot work here. The shells were bursting in all directions, and our big siege guns were 'giving them Hail Columbia.' The old original Duryea's Zouaves, the red breeches, charged on the right fort, and the rebels left Yorktown without eating their breakfast. We took all of their big guns and two thousand prisoners, and General Smith on the left wing took nine thousand prisoners, two batteries of light artillery, all hitched up ready for a start. On the Right, in front of where we are, they cut the traces from their guns, and left with their horses in double quick time.

Our troops are chasing the rebels up. While I am writing we are having a big battle close by. The rebels set all kinds of traps to kill our troops when we went into the streets of Yorktown. You could not tip over a barrel, or anything else, but what had a string attached to a big shell or some kind of torpedoes, that would kill five or six men every time they did anything or moved anything. Wherever you could see the dirt thrown up loosely, look out for your feet, or else they would be catching in some string an inch under the dirt, and then shells would explode.

Our folks got plenty of tobacco."

FROM THE HISTORY OF THE THIRD MASS.  
BATTERY.

"At Yorktown the rebels buried shells underground which exploded when our forces entered the Fort. The gate of the Fort stood open. A heavy shell was planted there which the opening of the gate would have exploded. Our Army declined to enter there. A man who made a hole for a telegraph pole was terribly mangled, and 6 cavalry men and 2 horses were killed in that way."





## NOTES OF LIEUT. HYDE MAY 21, 1900.

Accompanied by Lieut. Dillingham and Lieut. Daniel Tompkins of the Signal Corps, Lieut. Hyde on the morning succeeding the evacuation of Yorktown, rode into the city on "Black Charley," passing circuitously by the marks set up to indicate the presence of buried torpedoes, placed there for the purpose of blowing up whoever might step upon them. They rode round and examined the fortifications for a half hour, and then went back to camp.

Grows' Journal: "Monday, May 5, 1862. Was awakened about 6 this morning by the rain. I should think by appearances that it has rained hard all night. Heard heavy cannonading at a distance. The rebels have done all that human ingenuity could desire to fix traps for our men. In some places you will see an overcoat laying on the ground, but it will not do to pick it up, for to it is attached a string leading to a fuze containing powder, so when the garment is picked up it causes the powder to explode and by this means destroy our men. Torpedoes are covered with dirt in the street and should horse or man step upon one it is death. In fact the whole place is mined, and so, to prevent accidents, small red flags are placed near these infernal articles, to give a person warning. One of the 22d stepped upon one which killed him and wounded five others. I saw them when they were brought into the Hospital."

Phillips' Diary: "Tuesday, May 6, 1862. Visited Yorktown with Captain Allen and Dillingham, Scott and Terry. Fort quite formidable. Visited the redoubt which was engaged the first Sunday."

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP WINFIELD SCOTT,

Tuesday, May 6, 1862.

My writing materials have been packed up for the last two days. . . . Day before yesterday we kept receiving orders about every ten minutes, each one contradicting the



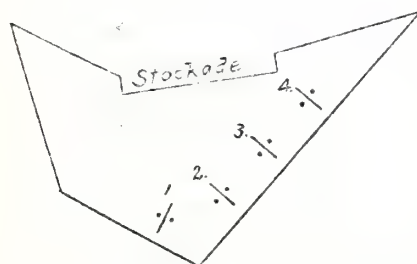
one which preceded it. Finally, however, we remained behind, Porter's Division being placed in the Third Reserve, while others pushed on ahead. The gunboats left and went up the river. Yesterday . . . we could hear heavy firing up the river, lasting through the day. . . . In the afternoon Lieut. Hyde went into Yorktown with an officer of the Signal Corps, but did not bring back any trophies. The houses were completely stripped. The streets of Yorktown are filled with ten inch shell, with percussion caps buried just below the ground, and several of our men have been killed by them. Last night about eight o'clock, just as we had made up our minds that we should not move, came an order to hitch up. The night was pitch dark, but in less than 15 minutes we were ready for a move. I was looking after the Captain to report my section all ready, when there came an order to unhitch and leave the horses at the picket rope. So we turned in and at 1, came an order to unharness. Today is very pleasant and the bands are going all round.

Tuesday Eve: I have just returned from a visit to Yorktown. . . . The works are well built, with traverses and blindages in the most approved fashion: [Traverses were masses of earth, thrown up at short distances, to screen the troops from shot and shells fired in ricochet, that is, by the rebounding of a shot which strikes in more spots than one. Blinds were covers of timber, bundles of brushwood or earth, under which guns were secure from projectiles reaching them at the top or in flank.] heaps of sandbags seem to present an obstacle to a shell in whatever direction it should come. The guns, some 40 or 50 in number, are mostly stolen from Uncle Sam: old pattern 32 pdrs. and 24 pdrs., some few 42 pdrs., two 9 inch, some 8 inch,—64 pdrs.,—one 8 in. mortar, and a number of 32 pdr. Howitzers or carronades. They had had six guns of their own manufacture,—Richmond, 1862,—one 10 inch Columbiad and five Rifled Guns of 4 or 5 in. calibre. Four of these Rifled



Guns are now burst: the fragments being thrown round promiscuously, one 32 pdr. is burst also. Very few of the guns are spiked. The guns of rebel make are rough cast, not turned, and probably never tested till tried here. The 10 inch gun was mounted in the eastern corner of the works, and commands nearly  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a circle. This is the place where the shots of Battery No. 1 were directed and the traces of our shots are plainly visible. One struck in a traverse, knocking the sandbags right and left, two ploughed deep furrows in the parapet, and another went through the rebel barracks, knocking down the chimney in its path. The water batteries were very well built and kept. There were four on the bluff, armed as follows, from east to west:—

No. 1, two 32 pdrs. No. 2, three 32 pdrs. No. 3, four 32 pdrs. No. 4 four Columbiads. Each battery was provided with magazine and furnace for heating shot, and sandbag traverses. Down on the beach were two more batteries, which I did not go into. Grape, [Large shot, usually nine, sewed together in cylindrical bags, made to fit, like cartridges, into cannon.] canister shot, and shell were lying round in great profusion. [Canister shot is a tin cylinder with iron heads, filled with balls packed in with sawdust.]



1. 42 pdr.
2. 24 pdr.
3. Rifled Gun (burst)
4. 32 pdr. Howitzer

### *Rebel Redoubt.*

I brought away some canister shot. The work which we engaged the first Sunday is a redoubt about half a mile in advance of the main line, armed with one 42, one 24, one 32 Howitzer and one Rifled Gun burst.



A bloodstain on the ground where a man was blown up by one of the rebel infernal machines, and a little red flag about ten feet from it, admonished us to be careful in walking, and so we did not extend our investigations very far. The rebels have shown great ingenuity in constructing infernal machines for our especial benefit, but since the first day no accident has occurred. They all consist of a ten inch shell with percussion cap hidden in various ways. They are buried all round the top just level with the ground, ready to go off as soon as stepped on. One house seems to have been the particular object of their ingenuity, shells being placed in all convenient spots. Under a table in the corner of the room was placed a coffee pot which most persons would naturally seize as soon as they saw it, but the coffee pot was tied by a small thread to a weight hung directly over the cap of a 10 inch shell, so that the weight would fall as soon as the coffee pot was moved. Then the cellar floor was paved with similar machines at the foot of the stairs, all ready to be stepped on. In this same house there is one room which no one has yet dared to enter, for a ten inch shell is lying on a table in the middle. Nothing can be seen to touch it off, but still people are suspicious here. Two of the magazines have not yet been opened, and we shall have to be careful. . . . We searched in vain to find some trophies, such as pipes, buttons, etc. The guns as yet have not been much meddled with, as they are loaded with—the Rebels only know what. One little rifled piece, the one which has fired so much in the direction of our guard at the bridge, had a shell sticking out at the muzzle, which I looked at but concluded to let remain. In another place I noticed a heap of shell and cartridges half buried in the sand, and I thought that prudence would dictate that they should be touched off with a very long 10 foot pole."





## FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

WRITTEN MAY 10. 1862. ON BOARD STEAMER NEW HAVEN, YORK RIVER, ABOUT THE FORTIFICATIONS AT YORKTOWN.

"The works are well constructed as far as the details go, of the general plan of the works I don't know enough to speak. I have learned this,—that it is not the quantity of dirt in a fortification that makes it strong, as much as the manner in which it is arranged. There was a great pile of dirt shovelled here, but the dimensions of the ramparts are nothing more than those of an ordinary field work. The height of the rampart and the depth of the ditch are perhaps 12 ft. on an average, or 24 ft. from the bottom of the ditch to the top of the rampart, but this would soon be diminished under the operations of breaching batteries. The batteries which we have already planted would probably have dismounted most of the rebel guns in the first 12 hours of the bombardment. Battery No. 2 in the few scattering shots fired lately, had planted 3 shells within 30 feet of their 10 inch Columbiads, and was placed to enfilade all their water batteries."

## NOTES OF CAPTAIN ALLEN.

After the evacuation Colonel Stephen W. Stryker, of the 44th New York Regiment Infantry, garrisoned Yorktown, entering the city the next morning. He sent a note to Captain Allen inviting him to dine with him that day, and, taking an orderly with him, Captain Allen rode in from camp. After dinner Colonel Stryker said:

"Come with me. I want to show you something."

They went round to several places, finally bringing up at the building here described by Phillips and saw everything as here stated.



This note is added,—after reading the letter as here transcribed,—by Captain George D. Allen, April 19, 1900.

A few days later Corporal Spear made his visit to the fortifications at Yorktown while the Battery was waiting for the infantry to go on board the steamer. He says:—

“Having nothing to do the Captain gave permission to go and view the enemy’s works. At the main entrance, which we entered, there were laid quantities of torpedoes for the purpose of destroying our soldiers should they attempt to enter the fortifications. I, in company with my sergeant, went all about the works and viewed the guns &c, which the rebels had left behind in their retreat. Many of the guns mounted in the fort were good, and some very poor: their magazines splendid and well stored with ammunition, but their quarters were far different, everything in disorder and confusion and very filthy. I managed to find several relics.”

#### REPORT OF GENERAL PORTER.

Of the services of the Division of Artillery under his command during the thirty days of the siege, General Fitz John Porter says in his report:—

“I desire also to express my gratification at the gallant and efficient service of the Division of Artillery, under the immediate direction of Captain Charles Griffin, 5th Artillery, whose reports of service rendered and losses in respective batteries were forwarded in proper time. Often exposed to a hot fire from the enemy, and meeting with some losses, these batteries were examples of superior discipline and instruction, and the conspicuous coolness, gallantry, bravery and skill of the officers and men, merited the highest commendation. . These batteries were: D. 5th Artillery, Captain Charles Griffin; C. Rhode Island Artillery, Captain



Weeden: C. & E. Massachusetts (Light) Artillery, commanded respectively by Captain A. P. Martin and Captain (Geo. D.) Allen."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 8, 1862. Struck my tent at 5 and began our march. Arrived in Yorktown at 7 this morning, found that the transports were not ready, so we went 'into park' and set our picket rope, then the men were dismissed except the guard. Harry Simonds and myself then went into the town. The rebels could have held it against awful numbers. There are not many buildings in the place, but the fortifications are equal to a Sevastopol or a Gibraltar. I passed into the Water Battery and examined it, a most splendid work, then passed into the lot where the dead were buried.

There were in all about 60 graves in this lot, and 25 in another. Had quite a stroll through the place. At 3 this afternoon we hitched out again and went to the wharf, and had to get the guns ready to go aboard. We had to wait till half past eleven at night before we could load, then we commenced in good earnest."

Chase's Diary: "May 8, 1862. Turned out at 2 a. m. and packed up, hitched up, and left Camp Winfield Scott at sunrise and marched to Yorktown; halted just outside the village and unharnessed the horses. At 8 p. m. embarked on steamer 'New Haven' and lay moored in the stream all night."



## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE BATTLE OF HANOVER COURT HOUSE.

MAY 27, 1862.

"And many a brave man from the war  
Came feeble and maimed of limb,  
Bullet-scar and sabre-scar  
And fevered weakness, sadder far,  
Were Glory's marks on him!  
These living martyrs of the war—  
Who tells us where they are?"

—ROSSITER W. RAYMOND, Captain U. S. V.

*—Vision and Duty.*

The latest plan of the Peninsula campaign would have been successful, General McClellan asserted in his report, if supported with appreciation of its necessities, but which failed because of the repeated failure of promised support at the most critical, and, as it proved the most fatal moment. "The illustration of the heroism of the Army in the abandonment of one plan and the originating of another," he says, "must be left for the pen of the historian in times of calm reflection, when the nation shall be looking back to the past from the midst of peaceful days."

### THE POINT OF ATTACK.

The James River was open to the Union fleets. This had been made possible by the destruction on March 9, 1862, of the rebel ram "Merrimac" by the U. S. "Monitor."

The historian of the Fifth Army Corps observes that "May 11, 1862, McClellan's military instinct demanded the immediate movement of his Army to the James River as a





base." General John E. Wool telegraphed him on May 12th.—"Your flank will be protected on the James River, etc. etc.," and this "military instinct" which was not allowed to sway the wisdom of the controlling powers, was proven to have been founded on the best judgment, for before the close of June it was demonstrated to the world that a strategic movement resting on the Chickahominy, such as was then on foot, was but the "baseless fabric of a dream."

Two main roads run down the Peninsula from near Williamsburg, one following the York River goes to Yorktown, the other following the course of the James, crosses the Warwick at Lee's mills.

A mile east of Williamsburg where these roads come together, was Fort Magruder the centre of the enemy's works, 13 in all, which stretched across the intervening space between the two rivers.

Williamsburg, the seat of William and Mary College chartered in 1693, is built on the ridge of the Peninsula, 3 miles from the James River and 4 from York River. It is distant from Richmond 60 miles, Hampton 36 miles, and Yorktown 12 miles.

#### BY MEMBERS OF THE BATTERY.

Grows' Journal of May 9th has the following entry:—  
"At 2 o'clock this morning I came aboard the steamer New Haven, spread out my blankets on deck and turned in. We got underweigh at 3 this afternoon with two schooners in tow, having our horses on board. At 6 this evening we arrived off West Point but finding the tide low we did not unload.

Saturday, May 10, 1862. Had breakfast of hard bread and water, then went on deck to look around. This is a very pretty place. The beach extends for miles, very hard and smooth. I should like to live here, and it seems hard to have this place disturbed by war. The water as far as I



can see is covered with boats and vessels, conveying our troops and ammunition."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"ON BOARD STEAMER, 'NEW HAVEN,'

YORK RIVER, Saturday, May 10, 1862.

Once again we are afloat to find a new point of attack, and the sooner we get landed the better. Going to sea is all very pleasant, but when it comes to embarking a battery and one hundred horses, I beg to be excused.

Thursday morning we were ordered to be in Yorktown by daylight, prepared to embark, so we had 'reveille' at 2 a. m. and started. We arrived at Yorktown about 6, only to find that there was not the slightest chance to get aboard for some hours to come. So we marched into a field and came into park about 50 yards from the walls of Yorktown. The day was very pleasant and the road was very dusty, and the wagons were very thick. The roads were a perfect chaos of mules and mule drivers, one about as stupid as the other.

Meantime, we waited and waited.

Martin's battery came into park alongside of us, and the day slowly rolled on. I managed to buy a loaf of bread, not very large for 25 cents, and made a decent dinner. About 4 o'clock the steamer 'New Haven' hauled up to the wharf, and we put our guns, caissons and baggage wagons on board. This took us till 3 in the morning when we hauled into the stream to give Martin a chance, and turned in. The next day we had to wait till afternoon when we got some schooners into the wharf and loaded our horses. By 4 o'clock this was completed and we fastened the schooner alongside the 'New Haven,' and managed to get a good night's rest.

This morning we are waiting for orders. A schooner



loaded with Griffin's horses has just come alongside. . . .

P. S. Sunday evening. We have landed at West Point on York River our Battery and baggage wagons, and shall land our horses tomorrow. In good health and spirits.

C. A. P."

---

### LETTER OF T. E. CHASE.

ON BOARD STEAMER NEW HAVEN,

OFF WEST POINT VA.

Sunday, May 11, 1862.

. . . I have been all over Yorktown and examined all the enemy's fortifications, and it was an immense work. Two thousand negroes were at work on them for nearly a year, and all their work is thrown away. . . . They had great furnaces to heat shot red-hot to fire at the gunboats to set them on fire; the shot were in the furnaces all ready to be heated, shot and shell piled up alongside of the guns ready at a moment's notice. There lay the sponge staves and everything in complete readiness. All the guns were spiked, and some of the buildings burnt. I saw the ruins of one large building, and in the ashes there was a great lot of shot and shell, and I should think about five barrels of meat laid in a pile, all burned, and about a cart load of fine salt and the iron-work of a lot of cartridge boxes.

The rebel officers had first-rate barracks, good, nice, cot beds, and they are now used for hospitals, and there are already quite a large number of sick and wounded soldiers there.

We are now about a day's march from Richmond, some 28 miles, and where the disheartened rebels will next make a stand we know not. Banks and McDowell are on the other side of Richmond and the flower of the army here chasing and penning them up. . . . The Captain sings out



'fall in' to help unload and I must close for the present. . . .

P. S. Stuck again! We are ashore again on the flats and must wait until 9 o'clock this p. m. before we can finish unloading. Our horses are ashore and a part of our pieces, and I suppose Richmond will be taken and the rest of the army home before we get ashore. . . . I slept on the hurricane deck last night until 12 o'clock, when the wind began to blow so hard that I was afraid of being blown overboard so I *engaged rooms* in the engine room for the rest of the night and slept first rate. I have got so now that I couldn't sleep on anything but boards, cedar rails, or a pile of chain cable. . . . Perhaps you will see by this time that it is useless to worry, for I have chewed my hard tack in Yorktown unmolested by any of the chivalry, and have squinted into the very muzzle of their biggest gun!

My writing desk is my knapsack resting on the muzzle of our gun."

Sunday and Monday, May 11th and 12th were occupied in disembarking, and they got into camp at 7 p. m. on the 12th:

Grows' Journal: "May 12th. We had to go ashore at 9 this forenoon. It is a very hot morning. Had some coffee and hard bread, after which we went into a barge and laid down to get rid of the sun. After dinner visited the scenes of the late battle at Williamsburg. It looked bad to see the mounds of earth over our brave men that fell here. The fight was day before yesterday. . . . At 4 this afternoon our horses arrived. We got them ashore and set our picket rope. Turned in under the gun to get some sleep for we start in the morning again."

May 13th they started on the march. The Divisions of Franklin, Smith, Sykes, and Porter advanced to Cumberland by way of the New Kent Court House, 14 miles; the Battery marching with Porter's Division at 4.30 p. m."





## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"The day was very pleasant, the roads very dusty and the woods through which we passed, beautiful; so on the whole, the march though tiresome was not so bad as it might have been.

Shortly after leaving West Point, we passed through the woods where Franklin's Division had a fight the other day. From appearances it must have been an unpleasant spot to be in. The trees were perfectly riddled with bullets, some having three or four holes in them, but I suppose like most bullets they injured more trees than men. We kept halting all along the road, which was blocked up by wagons, mule teams and troops, but finally reached the camp about five p. m. . . . It was in a large, dusty wheat field on a level plain right on the shore of the Pamunkey River."

Grows' Journal: "May 13th 1862. At 6 we took up the line of march for a place called Cumberland, about 15 miles. We got along very well till 9 o'clock, when we had to wait five hours for two other Divisions to pass. Built a fire by the side of the road, and made some coffee. On account of stopping in the road so long we did not arrive at our camp ground till late this afternoon. Every house we passed had a white flag hung out to show they were peaceable. After pitching my little tent I dropped on the ground and fell asleep. Awaked at 7 this morning and was told that I must go on guard, as one of the men was sick, and it being my next turn I had to go. I offered several \$1.00 if they would take my place, but could find no one, the men being completely worn out by the heat and the march."

General McClellan's Head Quarters were close by, and at 5 p. m. of the 14th the Battery was called in line to salute the General and Secretary Stanton.



Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, May 14th. On my post I did not dare sit down for fear I should get asleep. Both men and horses are pretty well tired out. We march again in the morning."

Those on guard of course could not rest on the march, even when the column stopped.

### FROM SPEAR'S LETTERS.

#### REVIEW OF A WEEK.

"May 14, 1862

Well, we waited in Yorktown until 7 o'clock at night before we could commence the loading of our Battery and its accompaniments, and all was aboard the transport, by 2½ o'clock the next morning, which was about the size of the 'Nelly Baker.' Laid off in the stream until 3 in the afternoon, when all went ashore and commenced the loading of horses on schooners. This took about two hours, and then steamer, schooners and all, hauled out into the stream, where we remained all night and the next day until 2 o'clock, when orders were received to proceed up the York River. Reached West Point at dusk. Monday was a hard and tough day for the boys, as it took nearly all day to unload the horses and guns, and at night all were very tired, but managed to retire about 9 o'clock after a good supper of coffee, hard bread, and salt 'horse.' Not much sleep for that night, however, as we were routed out at 2 o'clock to be ready to move by sunrise. At sunrise were on the road from West Point to Cumberland Creek. We advanced readily until the sun came out so hot, and the roads became very dusty, and as there was but little air stirring, it was oppressive to us. Reached Cumberland Creek at dusk, and for supper coffee, hard bread and salt pork.

Wednesday night rain, and continued heavy fall all night and the next day and night. About 12 o'clock Wednesday



night the boys of the tent in which I am, awoke and found the water standing 3 inches deep inside of the tent. Everything was wet through and through. At 3 o'clock were routed up same way as usual, ordered to pack up, and at 6 o'clock had everything ready to move: tents struck, horses harnessed, and hitched in, but owing to the heavy rain, and the bad condition of the roads, we did not leave the encampment until about 12 o'clock. Proceeded well until we came to a swamp, and then one of our caissons got stuck fast in the mud, and we were obliged to remain there all night. As soon as we found that we should have to remain in the middle of the swamp, we went to work, built a blazing fire and prepared some coffee. After partaking of our frugal meal, some went to work and pitched a tent to sleep in during the night, and at 10 o'clock everything was ready for sleep. On awaking the next morning found it pleasant and were ordered to move on, so struck our tent, hitched up our horses and pulled out of the swamp, and by 9 o'clock reached the place where the Division was encamped."

---

FROM CHASE'S LETTER OF MAY 14, 1862.

"Cumberland Va. 14th May, 1862. . . . The trip up York River was a pleasant one,—or rather the scenery,—and the country looks more civilized than it does on the Potomac. There are many splendid residences and fine plantations, and some of the houses had white flags flying in front of them. At West Point in a small enclosure there are nineteen graves of men who were killed near there when Franklin's Division arrived, and belonged to the 31st N. Y. Regt. They were buried in a trench, but their graves appear to be separate on the surface, and each one has a board neatly marked with their names, age, &c. . . . I must close for we have been standing in line for the last hour to salute



General McClellan and the Secretary of War. . . . I will send Fred a few seeds which I took from a deserted secesh house. I do not know what they are, but perhaps he would like to plant them. We are to march again tomorrow at 6 a. m. and we expect to help clear out some masked batteries between here and Richmond. . . .

P. S. Passed a guide board yesterday with the following curious inscription on it, viz. 'Richmond 31 milés.' "

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CUMBERLAND, BANKS OF THE PAMUNKEY,

Wednesday Forenoon, May 14, 1862.

Things look very different when seen by a newspaper correspondence subjected to a military censorship and when seen here. The Rebels left Yorktown because they had to, but the compulsion might have been stronger. . . . Our guns were better than theirs and would have knocked their works all to pieces. . . . Our nearest batteries were some 1800 yards from the enemy's works. . . . They commenced an evacuation which lasted three days . . . but our generals with balloons, spies, pickets, gunboats &c. knew nothing of it till every man had left the intrenchments. Then General McC. . . . pushed on with artillery and cavalry. The enemy retiring in perfect order, left a rear guard at Williamsburg to hold us in check, while the main body pushed on to the Chickahominy, and in this they succeeded. Hooker's Division attacked them and were driven back, losing three out of four batteries, and were about surrounded when reinforcements arrived. These reinforcements sufficed to drive the enemy back to their works, which they abandoned soon after, as their design was merely to hold them for a time. . . . General McC. rode through our camp on his way to Williamsburg between 4 and 5 o'clock in the afternoon, so that he could not have got there





very early. We have not been in any fight yet, though the event may come off any day. . . .

We are encamped on a large level plain right on the shore of the river. Our own camp is in a wheat field, very dusty. Gen. McClellan with a long string of generals, aides, French Princes . . . officers and escort, passed us and camps close by. It is now raining and we are all blue and growling. Nothing to eat but hard tack and coffee without sugar. The President is here today.

Evening: It still rains. We managed to get some fresh bread for supper, and are in rather better spirits; also we bought two hams, one of which has been boiled for tomorrow."

---

The next morning, May 15th, the Division was ordered to move at 6.30 a. m. as follows:—

1. Berdan's Sharp Shooters. 2. Artillery. 3. Butterfield's Brigade. 4. Martindale's Brigade. 5. McQuade's Brigade. About 5 o'clock, however, Franklin's Division commenced passing and the Battery had to wait. The roads ahead were apparently very bad, for Franklin's Division advanced slowly, but by ten o'clock the last baggage wagon disappeared, and Porter's Division started on its slow progress toward White House Landing.

---

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Our march was very intermittent,—now we advanced a few hundred yards, then we came to a long halt, and so we kept on. Our first stick was in a field. The grass looked very fine but underneath was all quicksand. With some difficulty half the Battery got through, but one piece cut through and two horses tumbled over. So we went to work to unharness, unlimbered, and pulled it out.



We kept on, up and down, through sloughs corroded by pioneers, halting every half hour. Our mule team got stuck and broke the pole, so we left it in the mud. Then we passed Captain Martin's battery wagon.

The day was slipping away, it began to grow dark and the roads grew worse. About 5 o'clock I rode ahead to see to the teams passing over a difficult place, and found 12 horses hitched on hauling our carriages through the mud. Three of my four carriages got safely through, and I yelled out 'Forward with the Fourth Caisson!' Promptly came back the answer from the rear,—'Fourth Caisson stuck in the mud.'

I rode back and found the caisson (Page's) stuck fast, and 10 horses tugging at it without starting it.

We tried it a little while, but it was growing dark, and we concluded to give it up for the night; unhitched, left our carriages in the road, built fires, opened our haversacks, spread tarpaulins and pitched in."

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 15, 1862. Got up at 3 a. m. It rained all night but has held up now for a while. At 5 this morning we received orders not to march till 9 o'clock, and we were in a nice fix, our tents all down, and it began to rain like fury. Three hours' rain in this country spoils the roads for travelling till the sun dries up the mud, but our journey is to be a short one, only five miles. We started at 9 this forenoon, and at 7 this evening we had come  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles!

The 15th of May, 1862, will be a day ever to be remembered by those who marched today.

It has rained hard all day. Sometimes our guns would go almost out of sight, and we would have to pull them out by hand. It was a hard sight to see the poor infantry fall down, completely worn out. I thought at one time I should not hold out much longer, but I am thankful for one thing: I am in good health, and I have reason to think it



was this that carried me through. Several of our men and officers dropped.

No pen can describe nor language express the sufferings of today. It would have been a very nice and pleasant march if it had not rained.

So here we are stuck in the woods, dark as coal. We cannot go any farther tonight, so after building large fires we made a little covering to keep the rain off. The cooks made us some hot coffee, after which Harry and I were talking about home, when I heard a man behind me ask 'Is not that Dave Grows?'

I looked round and there stood Cornelius Smith, an old schoolmate of mine.

So we talked over old times and how he liked soldiering, till 9 o'clock; then Harry Simonds, Joe Knox,—poor little boy,—and I, turned in with a large fire to our feet. But before doing so I had a change of wet clothes to dry ones, thanks to a good wife's care.

Friday, May 16, 1862. Got up at 6 a. m., nice morning, and began to build a road. At 10 this forenoon we were in camp."

On this march they had not lost a horse. The pioneers and infantry helped to pull out the mired guns. The night of the 15th, Allen, Dillingham and Phillips slept under a tarpaulin all night in a pouring rain. The camp ground which they reached on the 16th, was White House Landing where Head Quarters had been established. It was a beautiful place, a large clover field, near a fine house, the grounds covering 35 acres. The Landing is on the Pamunkey River a tributary of the York, 30 miles north of Williamsburg, and 25 east of Richmond with which it is connected by the Richmond and York River railroad. It derived its name from the white wooden house near it, occupying the site of the residence of Mrs. Custis, afterwards the wife of Washington, and had been recently occupied by General Lee, the Confederate general. The water at this



point on the river being of sufficient depth, it became a great supply depot for the Union army.

Lieut. Phillips wrote the night of their arrival:—"I have just cut enough clover to make a bed, and expect to sleep comfortably." Later in the movement he refers to it again: "We remained there Saturday and Sunday, eating Colonel Lee's clover and wheat, and burning up his fence rails. Sunday evening, Hyde, Dillingham and I went down to the Pamunkey and took a swim."

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 18, 1862. The evening is enlivened by the singing of the 'whip-poor-will'!"

### McDOWELL COMING SOUTH.

Information was received May 18th, 1862, from the Secretary of War that General Irvin McDowell, with his command of 40,000 men had been ordered to move southeast from Fredericksburg to a connection with the Right wing of the Army of the Potomac, which was ordered to be extended to the north of Richmond in co-operation with the movement.

### FIFTH PROVISIONAL ARMY CORPS.

By General Orders No. 125, Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, May 18, 1862, the forces commanded by Maj. Gen'l Fitz John Porter were designated as the Fifth Provisional Army Corps, and by General Porter's promotion the Division came under the command of Brigadier General George W. Morell.

General Orders  
No 125.

II. The attention of the General commanding has been called to the publication of letters from officers and others connected with the Army, containing information which must have been of much value to the enemy should it have reached him. To communicate precise intelligence of the strength, position, or movements of the army in private letters not designed for publication, is itself highly improper, and liable





to prove of serious disadvantage to our operations, but when such intelligence is allowed to pass into the public prints, the proceeding deserves grave censure, if indeed the offense does not become one demanding the exaction of the penalty denounced by the law for giving information to the enemy.

Henceforth the communication for publication of any intelligence likely to prove of advantage to the enemy is prohibited, and the utmost circumspection is enjoined upon correspondents in their private letters.

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR THE WHITE HOUSE,

Sunday morning, May 18, 1862.

By a Special Order just issued, Porter's Division is temporarily detached from the 3d,—Heintzelman's,—Army Corps, and together with Sykes's Infantry Reserve,—Regulares and 5th N. Y.,—forms a Provisional Corps under command of Brig. Gen. Fitz John Porter. This places us in the Reserve. Porter's, Franklin's, and Smith's Divisions are now here, but will probably move tomorrow."

Grows' Journal: "May 19, 1862. At 6 we were on the road again for Richmond. It looked lowery when we started, and we had not marched more than one mile when it began to rain. I put my blanket over my shoulders, and it kept me dry on the march. Berdan's Sharpshooters halted near us, and I had a good chance to see the 'Old Californian,' the man who killed so many of the rebels at Yorktown.

Instead of seeing a young man, I found a little old man bowed down with age, with long hair, and a staff in his hand, but a pair of the brightest eyes I ever saw.

After marching seven miles we went into park at 3 o'clock this afternoon on one of the most beautiful places I ever saw. No pen can describe the beauties of this place. In our rear is a railroad track and the ruins of a large bridge burnt by the rebels in their retreat. After we arrived here it stopped raining and the sun came out. I then pitched



my tent for the usual three, Harry Simonds, Joe Knox and myself. . . . This place is called Tunstall's Station."

It was also called "Station 20" and was on the Richmond and York River R. R. They crossed the railroad here and were on the northern side.

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

MAY 20TH, 1862.

"About 200 yds. to the east of us, and in plain sight through the back door, as I sit writing, our men are repairing a railroad bridge. General McClellan's Head Quarters are directly to the west on top of White's Hill.

This is the pleasantest camping ground we have had yet, but like every other place the soldiers are a little too thick. When we arrived the woods were very thick on the hill side between us and the railroad, but they have been disappearing very fast, and although we have had a guard over there to preserve some shade for us, it is about as hopeless a task as to keep off a flock of locusts. . . . The sutlers are rather scarce and their prices run rather high; butter 40 cts. a pound, eggs 50 cts. a dozen &c &c. We consider ourselves lucky if we get anything, even at their prices. People who are accustomed to beating down prices, would be rather astonished to get into a sutler's establishment. As soon as his wagon is unloaded, a grand rush commences, which lasts till everything is gone. Nobody stops to ask the price. As a general thing a sutler will not sell to anybody outside of the command to which he is attached, which places us at a disadvantage. As far as the officers are concerned, a sutler is a useful man, but with the men I think their advantage is questionable. Hardly any man can withstand the temptation of patronizing the sutler and \$13 lasts a very short time. The men get on just as well, are as healthy, if they confine themselves to Government rations. But with



the officers the case is different. No provision is made for feeding them, and they have to look out for themselves. As long as they remain in a civilized neighborhood there is no difficulty about this, but as soon as we begin to march provisions get rather scarce. Hard tack and salt junk are plenty enough, but there it ends. Nothing else can be had for love or money.

May 21, 1862. At eleven o'clock [p. m. of the 20th] orders came to march at 5. Reveille was sounded at 3, and as I was officer of the day I got the Battery ready at 5 minutes before five. Our baggage went on ahead, and our Battery ahead of the others. Just as we started my unlucky Fourth Caisson broke a trace: a new one was put in and the caisson resumed its place in the column. All went well for half a mile when we came to a very steep hill, when right in the middle, snap went the new trace, and again we had to stop till this could be replaced. After we got to the top of the hill we found an excellent road for several miles and got along rapidly, till we stopped at 8 to allow Franklin's Division to get out of the way. We halted several hours in a wheat field and watered the horses. The morning was misty but now the sun came out very hot. We found here the best spring of water we have yet seen in Virginia: the water hitherto having been full of clay and very poor. . . . The negroes round here are running off very fast in one direction, while their masters are running in the other. . . .

Evening: We arrived at this camp at 11 o'clock a. m. having marched 6 or 8 miles. The country here is quite well cultivated, there being many large wheat and clover fields. The roads for most of the way were bordered by hurdle fences. We are encamped, I believe, in Hanover County. The road upon which we came goes to Richmond through Newbridge Church, which is about 5 miles from the city. We are now about 18 miles from Richmond. The nearest route from West Point, the old stage road,



which passes over Bottom's Bridge is south of us. . . . A squadron of cavalry passed here this evening, having been within 9 miles of Richmond, 500 yards beyond our pickets, and in sight of the enemy's camps. Our camp is very pleasant: the four batteries are encamped on the left of the road in a wheat and grass field bordered by a beautiful oak woods. Our tents are pitched under a large oak behind a log house, which appears to have been a grocery store kept by Mr. Brown. The account books of the concern were scattered round and furnished evidence of the temperate habits of the country . . . a leaf of the ledger . . . will do to go with Falstaff's bill of bread and sack."

Grows' Journal: "May 21, 1862. . . . During our march we passed some beautiful plantations, each one guarded by our troops, and most of them with a white flag hung out. Arrived at our camp ground at 12 o'clock (noon). It was a rebel camp just deserted, so I took one of their tents and used it.

Thursday, May 22d. Was called at 4 this morning to strike tents and be ready to march. At 6 we were on our way. On account of guard yesterday I am on the 'fatigue' today of the Baggage teams. On the way I passed some splendid places of planters. One in particular had no flag flying, the owner was a rank 'secesh.' The boys coaxed the officers to allow them to go in and clean him out, but they would not, and instead, posted a squad over his place and house to protect it. We marched 13 miles. Got into camp at 3 this afternoon and then pitched my tent."

The march of the 22d. took them to Parker's Mills, 14 miles from Richmond, one mile in a straight line east from the Chickahominy River, and 6 miles from the bridge across that river. The camp was in a meadow bordered by a pine grove, and below in the valley lay the grist and saw mill and a village of at least 6 houses.

Nothing was to be seen of the enemy who had disappeared over the Chickahominy. Firing was heard in the





direction of Richmond. They might have been McDowell's guns,—but they were not,—for whom Porter was to receive orders to open a way from Hanover Court House, but who was to be turned in another direction and his forces spread out between Luray and Fredericksburg.

The 18th Mass. Infantry were on picket duty on the 23d, at the railroad bridge over the Chickahominy, and found our scouts two miles ahead of them.

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

SUNDAY MORNING POSTSCRIPT TO LETTER OF MAY 24,  
1862.

#### "CAMP IN THE FIELD.

There is a great deal of fever and ague, bilious fever, intermittent fever, &c. We have several men sick, seven absent, at hospitals or at home, and some sick here in camp whom we shall have to send back the next time we move. It is my opinion that more men have died of fever than of bullets, and I thought and still think, that it would have been a saving of life if we had taken Yorktown by assault the first day, and pushed right on to Richmond at whatever cost. People would have heard of a few bloody battles and ten thousand killed and wounded, but what is this to two months exposure and hundreds dying every day. Lieut. Scott has been pretty sick for a week, but is a great deal better. I have not had a sick day yet. My appetite is always good, and the demand generally exceeds the supply."

The Battery remained at Parker's Mills Friday, Saturday and Sunday. In camp Sunday the 25th May, 1862, in the evening there were religious services by the chaplain of the New York 44th. Text, 6th chapter of Romans, 1st verse.—"Shall we continue in sin?" [The entire verse is "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?"]



Letter of Lieut. Phillips: "Sunday morning, May 25, 1862. Of late we have been living on sweet potatoes. We tried to buy some strawberries but did not succeed, so we bought a bushel of potatoes at \$2.00 and have lived on them for the last three days, good living too."

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, May 25, 1862. Heavy firing has been heard during the night on our right. The Rhode Island 4th Battery has been sent out to see what is the matter. Had a good dinner: a pork stew of potatoes, onions, pepper, pork &c.

Monday May 26th. Broke camp soon after 4 o'clock, and at 6 o'clock we started on our march. At noon time we arrived on a large plantation and went into park."

This was the famous Dr. Gaines Plantation near Gaines Mills. It was nearly due west of Cold Harbor on a broken plateau between the bottom lands of the Chickahominy and the Pamunkey rivers. It was east of north from Richmond, on the road leading from Bottom Bridge up the Chickahominy via Cold Harbor to Mechanicsville, thence to Hanover Court House. The camp of the Battery was in the edge of an oak wood.

The Army was disposed as follows:—

On the Right wing Franklin's Corps was stationed, three miles from New Bridge on the Chickahominy. Porter's Fifth Corps supported him in the rear. Across the railroad was Sumner's Corps, holding the centre near Turner's Mills, and Keyes's Corps held the New Kent Road near Bottom's Bridge. Heintzelman's Corps was in support of Keyes, and was supposed to guard the Left wing.

#### HANOVER COURT HOUSE.

From the direction of Fredericksburg, the news had come that the enemy had fallen back, and a considerable force was near Hanover Court House to the right and rear



of our army, threatening our communications. This town was north of Richmond on the Virginia Central railroad. Porter was ordered to disperse the enemy's forces, while guarding the approaches to the rear guard of the Right wing of the army. It was also expected that the enemy's communication with Northern Virginia by the line of the Virginia Central railroad should be cut off, and General Porter received orders to move at daylight on the 27th to Hanover Court House. Assurances were received that McDowell would co-operate without fail. The Fifth Mass. Battery in camp at Dr. Gaines's Farm was ordered to march at 4 a. m. with McQuade's, formerly Morell's, Brigade.

General Porter moved from camp near New Bridge by the most direct route to Hanover Court House, expecting to engage the enemy at or near that point. At noon of the 27th in the neighborhood of the town, he encountered a brigade commanded by General Branch and composed of the 18th, 28th and 33d North Carolina Regiments which held the road, but after an hour's fighting they were dispersed and the main body of our troops moved on intending to pursue the enemy northward. But instead of taking that direction he passed around to our Left, with the intention of surrounding our forces while covering his own retreat, and appeared in our rear. Having found this out, Porter faced his whole column about and fell upon the enemy's flanks while Martindale's Brigade was holding him at bay. A sharp battle ensued. The rebels were routed and fled in confusion, and General McClellan wrote the President that General Porter had entirely "relieved his Right flank which was seriously threatened" and had "routed and demoralized a considerable portion of the rebel forces." It was called one of the handsomest things of the War, both in itself and its results.

One of our hospitals was captured, two guns were taken from the Third Mass. Battery but they were afterwards retaken. Our loss was reported as 56 killed, 173 wounded.



## THE ACTION OF THE BATTERY.

The Fifth Mass. Battery followed the advance for two miles, and when the column turned, it hurried back to where our progress had been disputed and the enemy had been overcome. Now the rebel and Union forces had changed positions.

## FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"NEAR HANOVER COURT HOUSE

Wednesday Morning,

May 28, 1862.

Nobody hurt in the 5th Battery.

Porter's Division had a little brush with the rebels yesterday and licked them. We have taken a great many prisoners. Martin's Battery 2 wounded, 3 missing. 25th N. Y. cut up. . . . We have got the railroad. The rebels tried to surround us, and did get in our rear so that we had to go back two miles, and lick them a second time.

Afternoon: Yesterday we had a pretty hard day's work. We were ordered to march at 4 o'clock, and were ready to march at that hour, but did not start until 7 or 8. Meantime it was raining furiously. We brought up the rear of the Division with Morell's Brigade, Colonel (James) McQuade commanding. We left the tents standing, carried two days' rations in the haversacks, no knapsacks or anything of the sort. About noon it stopped raining, and the sun came out. After marching say 18 miles, we heard firing ahead. It ceased as we came up, and we found the enemy had retired. Soon we passed two of Captain Martin's pieces waiting at some cross roads. We marched on over the battle field, a wheat field, and kept on for some two miles. A few dead and wounded men were along the road, and a great many dead horses. We passed a large white house





belonging to Mr. Winston, a prominent Secesh, who, like many others, had gone to Richmond. After marching two miles we heard firing in our rear, and the whole Division were ordered back.

The enemy it seems had passed round our left and got in our rear, capturing one of our hospitals and driving Martin's men away from his pieces, Lieut. Dunn commanding. We hurried back to where the battle was first won. Back came Griffin's orderly.—

'Caissons halt on the side of the road!' then—'Cannoneers mount!'—'Trot!'—'March!'

Griffin came into battery, and threw a few shells into the woods, but the infantry had most of the work to do. They deployed [Opened the order of troops from column into line of battle] and soon got to work in the woods. The 9th Mass. fired one volley, gave a yell and charged. The firing was quite lively, and was kept up till 6 o'clock when it gradually died away, and the wounded began to come to the rear pretty fast. . . . From the accounts I hear the 25th and 44th N. Y. did most of the work in the forenoon. The rebels advanced firing upon the 25th, and routed them completely, so that one captain could only find 5 men. The 44th did very well. The rebel force consisted of one Brigade under General Branch, 18th, 28th and 33d N. C. We passed 150 today. They are a poor looking set and are half starved. General (George) Stoneman (cavalry) cut off the railroad track last night, capturing a train loaded with provisions. By six o'clock the rebels were pretty well cleared out, and we began to think of camp. Lieut. Dillingham had captured a Secesh tent, almost new, so we continued to get under cover. A few inches of straw from a neighboring stack made a very good bed and we slept soundly. The next morning we lay abed till 8 o'clock.

We camped last night where the rebels made their first stand. . . . Today we have been skylarking round doing



nothing in particular. We are six miles from Hanover Court House and 14 from Richmond. I am now 6½ p. m. sitting on the ground with my back against a hen coop. Our infantry are round taking prisoners."

Grows' Journal: "Tuesday, May 27, 1862. Raining awfully. At 5 we were on the march. After stopping at times to build roads and help the guns along, we arrived and stopped for a while in a large field to feed the horses and water them. At 9 this forenoon we took up the march again. It stopped raining and the sun came out. Occasionally stopping to rest, at 2 this afternoon we were within 8 miles of Hanover Court House. Here we heard heavy firing. There was a fight going on, so we were pushed ahead, and in a short time came in sight of a house with a red flag. (See p. 21.) It was a hospital for the sick and wounded. In passing it I saw some wounded being carried in. On my left in a wheat field lay two dead.

Our troops had started the 'Secesh' to running just before we came up. Alongside the road were strewn knapsacks, clothing, arms, &c., of the rebels in their retreat. The firing had now almost died away. We stopped in a large field to rest, and I went to see where the fight began. At 3 this afternoon we were on the road again. We had not marched more than a mile when we heard firing in our rear, and the whole Division was ordered back double-quick.

Louder and nearer grew the noise of musketry and cannon, as we drew near. It seems that a body of rebels, some state the number as 10,000, had come around in our rear with the intention of cutting us off, but they were mistaken.

Arriving on the field I found that two of the pieces of Martin's Battery were mired in the mud, and that the men had been driven from them.

Griffin's Regular Battery opened upon the rebels with four pieces, which soon drove them back.

We were stationed on the Left flank, held in readiness in



case they should show themselves out of the woods to open upon them, but we did not have to fire, for they soon began to fall back. From where we stood I had a great view of the battle. On our right the 22d Mass., 2d Maine, 25th N. Y. and 44th N. Y. were stationed. The Mass. 9th and 62d Penn. made a splendid charge on the 'Secesh,' driving them before them. About 8 or 10 rods from where I stood was a building, and it was quickly put in use for a hospital.

Oh, the sights I saw there were awful! There lay friend and foe, sometimes side by side!

At 7 this evening the firing almost ceased, except, now and then, the discharge of a musket in the woods. Up to 10 this evening our troops had buried most 300 of the rebels.

About half past ten, I laid my blankets down on the battle ground, where were dead and dying and wounded, and laid myself down to sleep."

Porter's command pushed the pursuit of Anderson's forces, who were falling back upon Richmond, until dark, and then bivouacked on the field.

Chase's Diary: "Saw the enemy's dead for the first time today. Encamped in a wheat field with the dead and dying all around us.

Picked up several trophies, such as cartridge boxes, belts &c. Met several squads of rebel prisoners coming in.

May 28, 1862. Large numbers of prisoners brought in this morning. Saw twenty-four of the rebel dead beside a fence this morning and 12 of the 25th N. Y. Regt. dead."

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, May 28, 1862. Was called at 5 this morning. Got up, had some crackers and coffee, after which I took a walk over the battleground. The dead of the rebels were lying in every position and posture; some with hands extended as though they were using a gun, others drawn up as though they died in great distress, among them a boy not more than 14 years old.

I saw 314 rebel prisoners go by our camp in one lot. It



is estimated we have taken 1000 rebels. Most of them appear glad to be taken by our troops.

About 9 this morning we were ordered to report to General Stoneman. After marching about 5 miles we found his encampment and waited some time before we found out whether we were wanted or not. We found out, at length, that we were not wanted, so we marched five miles back to where we slept last night, arriving late this afternoon."

While they were waiting, General McClellan passed by.

Grows' Journal: "Thursday, May 29, 1862. One on the field our troops are still burying the dead of the rebels in large trenches, and ours in graves with boards put up.

Horses are on the field, in some cases with awful wounds, more of them are dead.

About 10 this forenoon we were told to strike our tents and hold ourselves in readiness to march at a minute's notice. So we lay around in the hot sun till 3 this afternoon, when we took up our line of march for our old camp ground, (Dr. Gaines' Farm) 20 miles, that being the distance we came on Tuesday, to this place. It is a very hot afternoon, but on account of the good state of the roads we rode most of the way. Owing to stopping for baggage trains to pass, darkness overtook us, and still we were not in camp.

At 12 o'clock, midnight, we got into our old camp. Found my old tent frame still up; put the covering on, and soon after we had fires going to make some coffee."

In the three days they had been gone they had travelled 60 miles.

#### LIEUT. J. B. HYDE'S NOTES.

"We did not have much shooting to do there because we could not use artillery to good advantage, but the firing of musketry all day was the worst I ever heard. After the battle was over, General Butterfield said to us officers who were all there together, 'Having accomplished the object for which we came here, we will now return to camp.'





On the way back there was a small church, and seeing a large gathering outside, I rode my horse up to it and looked in at the open door. I saw a great many soldiers lying around on the seats; some singing and having a great time, and I think it was Lt. Colonel (James C.) Rice of the 44th New York Regt. said,—‘Go right in, Lt. Hyde,’ so I touched the spur to my horse and rode him up the low steps and straight up the aisle to the altar. Then I began to think what if the floor should give way, but I rode out in safety and came down the steps just as the Battery was passing. They set up a tremendous cheer to see me riding out of a church on horseback.”

### LETTER OF CORPORAL SPEAR.

WRITTEN IN PENCIL ON THE BACK OF A CERTIFICATE  
BLANK FORM.

“ARMY OF THE POTOMAC  
ENCAMPED 8 MILES FROM  
RICHMOND VA.

Saturday, May 31, 1862.

Last Tuesday morning (May 27th) at 3 o'clock we were awakened and ordered to pack, strike tents, get breakfast, and be ready to move by daybreak. Tents were ordered to be packed, tents on caissons, and we to carry only a rubber blanket and an overcoat, as we were going out for a brush with the rebels. About 7 o'clock started, in the rain, with a little hard bread and salt pork for rations, and an overcoat and rubber blanket for covering.

After advancing 15 miles, we heard frequent volleys of musketry, and, now and then, the booming of a distant gun.

At 2 o'clock we came up to where the advance of our Division had had a skirmish, and two or three regiments of infantry with 2 pieces of artillery, were left behind to guard a road, while the rest of the Division advanced in the direction in which the rebels were supposed to have moved, and after advancing 3 miles the order came for the whole Division to turn about, as the rebels were trying to flank us.



and then such an excitement as there was! Artillery, cavalry, and infantry, going on the double quick, back to where the regiments and pieces of artillery were left to guard the road, and when we reached the place found that two of the regiments had been nearly destroyed and the men with the artillery forced to leave their guns on the field; but not long, for as our infantry and cavalry came up, they made a charge and took possession of the pieces again.

Our Battery was not engaged, although we were on the field of action during the fight, ready to take part. One battery was engaged, and that was the 5th Regular.

At dusk they began bringing in the dead and wounded on our side, and such sights! Oh! they were awful, and frightful. Some were pierced with bullets, others only slightly wounded.

That night we lay down on the battle field for rest, with only the broad heavens above us for a covering. When morning came received orders to retire about 2 miles to support infantry. So we went back. On arriving ascertained that they needed no assistance, so returned to the battle field, pitched our tents, and stopped all of the remaining day and part of the next, when we received orders to go back to our present encampment, at which place we arrived at 1 o'clock Friday morning, tuckered out and mighty hungry, our rations gone the day before. But now we are all right again. Today there has been considerable firing in the direction of Richmond."

#### THE SICK AND WOUNDED.

"Captain Allen," wrote Lt. Phillips, "is sick, and came back ahead of us in an ambulance. He is now quite weak and keeps to his bed."

#### NOTES BY CAPTAIN ALLEN, APRIL 19, 1900.

"This was the beginning of my first illness of malarial fever, and I was sent back to camp in an ambulance as it is said here. After a few days I made application for



leave of absence. I was examined by the three senior surgeons of the Brigade, and was granted leave of absence for ten days.

It was six days before that leave of absence was approved at Head Quarters and returned to me. When I was examined it was to see whether I was to be sent to Fortress Monroe or beyond.

The surgeons approved of my going beyond the hospital at Fortress Monroe, which meant home.

After the furlough got round to me I had only four days left for leave of absence.

General Porter sent me a four mule ambulance, and, accompanied by Serg't Terry, I started about three o'clock in the afternoon for a station on the railroad running to White House Landing. There had been a battle in the vicinity of the station the day before and the trains were very uncertain. After waiting several hours a train of a few flat cars came along. Serg't Terry helped me on to one of these cars, which were filled with wounded men lying on the floor. He put my valise between two wounded men. I sat down on it and he stood at my back supporting me. We rode that way to White House Landing, reaching there the next morning. Serg't Terry went down to the Landing to see if there was any steamer to take me to Yorktown. He returned shortly and reported that the Nahant boat 'Nelly Baker,' Captain Calder, then a Government transport, was laying at the wharf. He helped me on board and as he was returning to camp I bade him good bye.

Captain Calder gave up his stateroom to me, and made me as comfortable as possible on my way to Yorktown, where I took the steamer for Baltimore and New York.

On board the Baltimore steamer I made the acquaintance of Lt. Colonel, afterwards Colonel, Moses B. Lakeman of Maine, who had been wounded and was also on leave, and he rendered me a great deal of assistance on my way home, for which I desire most heartily to thank him.

At New York being very anxious to get the three o'clock train to Boston, we explained the circumstances to



the captain, and he very kindly gave us all the time he could possibly make for us, by running the bow of the steamer directly to the wharf allowing us to go ashore,—no others were permitted to land, before he docked his steamer.

I wish I remembered the name of the steamer and of the captain, so that I might again thank him for his generous kindness in allowing us to land as we did, for we caught the three o'clock train and in due time we arrived at our homes in Malden, Mass. Colonel Lakeman, though a Maine man was then, with his family, residing in Malden. Surgeon General Dale sent out the next day a surgeon to examine me, and extended my furlough thirty days. At the expiration of that furlough I was still unable to return to my command, and Surgeon General Dale extended it thirty days longer. In a very short time after my several extensions of furlough, I received an Order from Secretary Stanton, through his adjutant general, stating that all officers who were unable to rejoin their commands in six days must resign. This order forced my resignation, for I was still unable to rejoin my command. Following is the copy of the Order."

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE  
WASHINGTON, July 31, 1862.

General Orders.

No. 92

The following Order is published for the information of all concerned:

WAR DEPARTMENT  
WASHINGTON CITY D. C., July 31, 1862

The absence of officers and privates from their duty under various pretexts, while receiving pay, at great expense and burden to the Government, makes it necessary that efficient measures be taken to enforce their return to duty, or that their places be supplied by those who will not take pay while rendering no service. This evil, moreover, tends greatly to discourage the patriotic impulses of those who would contribute to support the families of faithful soldiers. It is therefore ordered by the President:—





I. That on Monday, the 11th day of August, all leaves of absence and furloughs by whomsoever given, unless by the War Department, are revoked and absolutely annulled, and all officers capable of service are required forthwith to join their respective commands, and all privates capable of service to join their regiments, under penalty of dismissal from the service, or such penalty as a Court Martial may award, unless the absence be occasioned by lawful cause.

II. The only excuses allowed for the absence of officers or privates after the 11th day of August, are:

- 1st. The order or leave of the War Department.
- 2d. Disability from wounds received in service.
- 3d. Disability from disease that renders the party unfit for military duty. But any officer or private whose health permits him to visit watering places or places of amusement, or to make social visits, or walk about the town, city, or neighborhood in which he may be, will be considered fit for military duty, and as evading duty by absence from his command or ranks.

III. On Monday, the eighteenth day of August, at 10 o'clock a. m., each Regiment and Corps shall be mustered. The absentees will be marked, three lists of the same made out, and, within forty-eight hours after the muster, one copy shall be sent to the Adjutant General of the Army, one to the Commander of the Corps, the third to be retained; and all officers and privates fit for duty absent at that time will be regarded as absent without cause, their pay will be stopped, and they dismissed from the service, or treated as deserters, unless restored; and no officer shall be restored to his rank unless by the judgment of a Court of Inquiry, to be approved by the President, he shall establish that his absence was with good cause.

IV. Commanders of Corps, Divisions, Brigades, Regiments, and detached Posts, are strictly enjoined to enforce the muster and return aforesaid. Any officer failing in his duty herein will be deemed guilty of gross neglect of duty, and be dismissed from the service.

V. A commissioner shall be appointed by the Secretary of War to superintend the execution of this order in the respective States.

The United States marshals in the respective districts, the mayor and chief of police of any town or city, the sheriff of the respective counties in each state, all postmasters and justices of the peace, are authorized to act as special provost marshals to arrest any officer or private soldier, fit for duty, who may be found absent from his command without just cause, and convey him to the nearest military post or depot. The transportation, reasonable expenses of this duty, and five dollars, will be paid for each officer or private so arrested and delivered.

By Order of the President:

E. M. STANTON,  
Secretary of War.

By Order of the Secretary of War:

E. D. TOWNSEND  
Assistant Adjutant General.



On the day designated in this Order for the revocation of leaves of absence the following was promulgated:—

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,  
WASHINGTON, August 11, 1862.

General Orders,  
No 102.

All leaves of absence and furloughs, by whomsoever given, unless by the War Department, are, from this date, null and void, and all officers and privates capable of service will immediately rejoin their respective commands. The commanding officer of each corps, regiment, military post, or other command, will see that the muster directed in General Orders No. 92, current series, be made on the 18th instant, and that all absentees be marked as therein directed. All persons so marked as absent will be considered as absent without proper cause until they shall adduce evidence before a military court or commission to show that such absence was occasioned by one of the three causes specified in General Orders, No. 92; and until the action of such court or commission they will receive no pay.

By Command of Major General Halleck:

E. D. TOWNSEND,  
Assistant Adjutant General.

---

### CAPTAIN ALLEN'S RESIGNATION.

A letter from Lieut. Phillips explains why Captain Allen's resignation did not take effect until October 17th, and a copy of the discharge found in Lt. Phillips' army desk, regularly endorsed by Gen. McClellan and the Division commanders, is here added:—

[FROM LT. PHILLIPS' LETTER.]

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Thursday Evening

Oct. 16, 1862.

I have received a letter from Captain Allen and several official documents. Among the latter was Captain Allen's resignation, which has been wandering around some time after me. He sent it in to the Adjutant General's office August 20th. It left the Adjutant General's office August



26th, respectfully referred to the commander of the Fifth Mass. Battery. Somehow or other the Post Office was a long time in bringing it to me, and it only reached me this morning. I respectfully referred and forwarded it to Captain Martin, he will do the same to General Morell, he to General Fitz John Porter, who will accept it."

## SPECIAL ORDERS NO. 284

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR KNOXVILLE MD.

Oct. 17, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 284

Extract.

6. The following named officers, having tendered their resignations, are honorably discharged from the military service of the United States.

Captain George D. Allen, Battery E. Mass. Artillery.

By command of Major General McClellan

(Signed) S WILLIAMS

Ass't Adj't. General.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS

October 18th, 1862.

Official:

(Sd.)

J. KIRKLAND

Maj. A. D. C.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION.

Oct. 19, 1862.

Official:

(Sd.)

FRANCIS S. EARLE

Ass't Adj't. General.

Official:

A. P. MARTIN, Capt.

Commanding Division Artillery.

## CAMP ON THE GAINES FARM.

To continue Phillips' letter from the old camp ground,  
May 29, 1862:—

"One of the cannoneers, Alpheus Haskins, had his left foot badly bruised by being run over by a gun carriage. A stout boot saved the bones though it ruined the boot."

All of Morell's Division returned on the 29th to their camp on the Gaines Farm.



This was the end of the battle of Hanover Court House, but not of the casualties. While quietly resting next day in camp, at 5 o'clock in the afternoon, there arose a violent thunder storm. The thunder was loud and continuous, and the sky a sheet of flame. One of the N. Y. 44th camping near by was killed by a stroke of lightning, and another stunned. They were sitting on a box of ammunition. Scott and Phillips generously gave up their tent and home-made bedsteads to two sick men, and occupied the "secesh" tent through which the water ran in a continual stream.

On one occasion Phillips wrote of the situation, after the battle of Hanover Court House, sickness, "secesh," and the rest:—"I regret that Dr. Gaines is allowed to keep his house, though not allowed to leave it,—when so many better men than he are lying on the damp ground sick with fever. After the battle of Hanover Court House some twenty wounded men lay in his barn on the floor crowded together, while he was allowed to occupy a comfortable bed. First look out for the comfort of our soldiers, say I, and then look out for secessionists. At this very moment we have in our Battery men sick with fever lying on the wet ground in poncho tents,—dog kennels you would call them at home,—while Dr. Gaines's large house close by is almost empty. These men can be cured if we send them home where they can get comfortable beds under a dry roof, but keep them here exposed as they now are, and in a month they will be in their graves. We have nearly 20 men unfit for duty, and the regiments in this Division will not average more than 500 men. The New York 25th went to Hanover Court House with 300 men and lost half; the New York 44th had 550 and lost 120; the Mass. 22d is as full as any in the service. The Maine 2d is pretty full and is a splendid regiment, and to them as much as to any single regiment we owe the victory at Hanover.

The New York 44th fought splendidly. They were opposed for some time to 4000 rebels and held them at bay till the 2d Maine came up."





## FROM A LETTER OF T. E. CHASE.

"HANOVER CO. VA.

May 31st, 1862.

Dr. Gaines is a noted rebel and tried to escape, but was caught by our pickets, he has a fine residence, a large plantation, and 87 slaves, all of whom seem to favor the confiscation of all rebel property. I have often visited the log cabins of the negroes on hoe-cake speculation, and quizzed them some, and I have had 'Uncle Tom's Cabin' from their lips."

Of the march to Hanover Court House he says:—

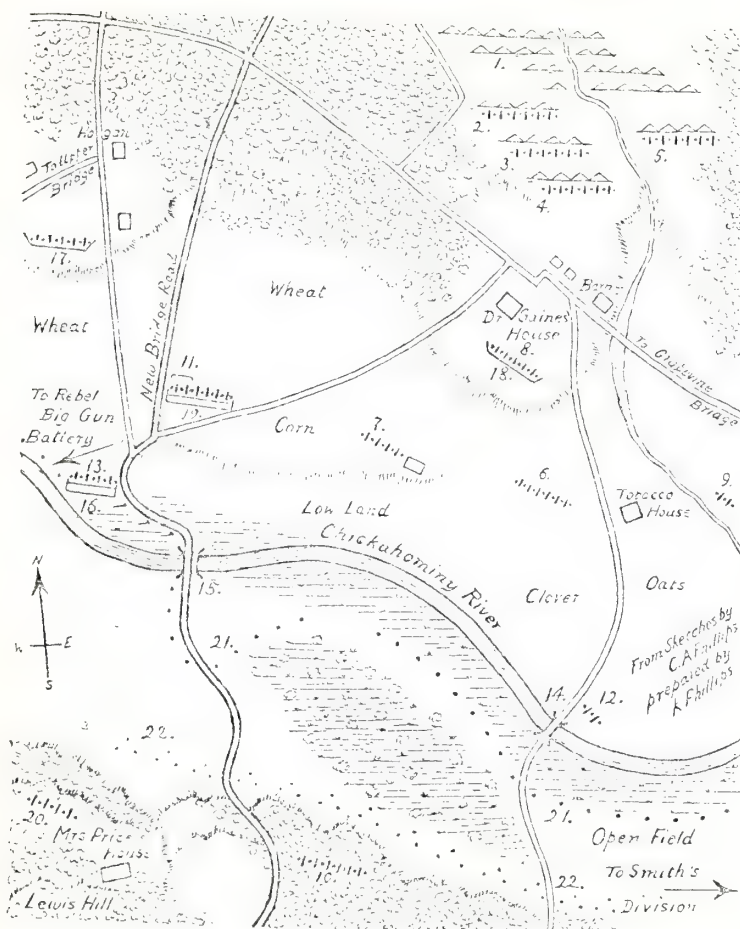
"We passed the direct road to Richmond—which was seven miles distant—on the left. When we had marched about 18 miles we heard firing ahead, and about a mile farther on we saw that the enemy had been surprised and routed. Several acres of land were strewn with clothing, belts, knapsacks, haversacks, &c. which the gallant southrons were too proud to take with them—or they were too heavy—on a foot race with the 'mudsills.' The roadside was lined with infantry resting, and some of them were wounded. It was a strange spectacle to see them lying in all positions; some talking, some writing, many asleep, and others tying up slight wounds. In a field at our right lay the body of one of the cannoneers of Regular Battery M, who was killed by a shell. The back part of his head was shot away, and his brains and fragments of his skull were scattered in every direction. He was a No. 3 man and, had a thumbstall still on his thumb, which was peculiarly suggestive to me, but I had but little time to borrow trouble about that then. Several dead horses were lying there that were shot from under their riders. As the Battery went round a corner, I cut across a wheat field to save distance, and but a few rods from the road I saw for the first time one of the enemy's dead. He fell on his side.



His knapsack was strapped to his shoulders, and at his side lay his gun, haversack, and canteen. His eyes were partially closed. I raised the bosom of his blood-stained shirt, and saw the fatal wound. He was shot through the heart and must have died instantly. I took some cartridges from his cartridge box and ran to our piece. I found the cartridges were made of good fine powder and a round moulded ball and three buck-shot each. On the road I picked up a cartridge box marked inside 'C. S. Arsenal, Baton Rouge, La.' . . . We marched about a mile farther, and were very suddenly ordered to countermarch, as the enemy had flanked us, but we went as fast as possible, and when we had regained our wasted mile, we took equipments, and mounted the caissons, and prepared for quick movements and hot work, and it had already commenced, for we heard the rattle of musketry in front of us, and saw the smoke."



# VALLEY of the CHICKAHOMINY



Camps.—1. Infantry of Division.—2. Martin's Battery.—3. Weeden's Battery.—4. Griffin's Battery.—5. Allen's Battery. Positions, June 5<sup>th</sup>.—6. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery.—7. Maryland Battery.—8. Carlisle's Regular 20 pdr Battery.—9. 32 pdrs.—10. Rebel Battery. 11. June 9<sup>th</sup>.—Right Section. 12. June 11<sup>th</sup>.—Centre Section. 13. June 13<sup>th</sup>.—Centre Left Sections. 14. Out Bridge. 15. New Bridge two bridges. In Batteries, June 25<sup>th</sup>.—16. Right of New Bridge 30 Guns.—17. On hill back of New Bridge five 30 Lbs.—18. On Gaines' Hill, five 30 pdrs.—19. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. in No 4, Six Guns.—20. June 16<sup>th</sup> to June 25<sup>th</sup>.—Rebel Guns. 21. Our Pickets. 22. Rebel Pickets.



## CHAPTER IX.

### THE VALLEY OF THE CHICKAHOMINY.

BATTLE OF MECHANICSVILLE, June 26, 1862.

"Oftentimes an indifferent action, a short saying, or a ready jest, opens more intricacies of the true character than a siege or a battle."

—PLUTARCH'S *Alexander*.

"The slight circumstances of Plutarch are not mere anecdotes, inserted for the sake of amusement. They are traits of feeling and disposition: short lines from a page of the heart put into italics."

—REV. ROBERT ARIS WILLMOTT.

Lieut. Henry D. Scott in his Notes describes the course of the Chickahominy as "from northwest to southeast, a treacherous stream, from 30 to 50 feet wide at this point. "Its banks," he says, "are low, and after a few hours' rain would overflow, and the country in its course would have the appearance of one vast lake."

The military operations on the Chickahominy embraced that part of the stream between Bottom's Bridge on the south where it is crossed by the Williamsburg road, and Meadow Bridge, fifteen miles to the north, where it is crossed by the Fredericksburg railroad.

Richmond lies nearly opposite the centre of this line, about 6 miles from the Chickahominy at its nearest approach.

The swamp and stream had been crossed by several bridges. All of those in front of Richmond had been destroyed by Johnston when he fell back from Yorktown and Williamsburg, and the approaches to them were commanded





by batteries on the southern side. Other points had to be chosen for building new bridges, which on account of the soil had to be laid upon trestles; the approaches being corduroyed.

In moving from Williamsburg the Right wing of the Federal army had kept to the north, striking the Chickahominy at New Bridge directly in front of Richmond, the Left wing, keeping to the south, had reached the river at Bottom's Bridge, 13 miles below. This bridge had been demolished on May 20th, but close by was a ford which had been seized. On the 22d of May, Head Quarters were established at Cold Harbor just in the rear of the head of the Right wing. The bulk of the enemy were across the Chickahominy on the main road from New Bridge to Richmond, but a detachment had been left at Mechanicsville on the north bank 4 miles above. This was dispersed on the 24th by the artillery and the bridge was destroyed.

The rebel general Johnston had destroyed the bridge by which the York River railroad crossed the Chickahominy, but no other damage was done, and after the bridge was repaired the railroad was in operation up to the river.

On May 24th, 1862, McClellan received a despatch from the President, announcing that in consequence of General Banks's position having been made critical by the line being broken on the day previous at Front Royal, with a probable loss to us of a regiment of infantry and two companies of cavalry, he was compelled to suspend General McDowell's movement to join the Army of the Potomac.

Then General McClellan ordered the construction of a series of bridges across the Chickahominy, but Bottom's Bridge and the Railroad bridge, a mile apart, were his main dependence, as the Railroad bridge, as it proved, was above the reach of the highest water; these he protected in order to render his communications secure between the Left wing on the south side of the Chickahominy composed of the two corps of Keyes and Heintzelman



covering six miles of the Williamsburg road in order to guard the approaches to White Oak Swamp, and the Right wing fifty miles away on the north bank of the river composed of the Corps of Sumner, Franklin and Porter, extending north for 18 miles.

This was the situation on the 28th of May. The rise of the river on the 30th carried away all but the Railroad bridge, which was the only means of communication between the two wings of the Army. During the afternoon and night of the 30th a storm more violent than had been known for many years, swept over Richmond. The rising of the Chickahominy which was already full would overflow the swamp, preventing the forces on the south side from communicating with those on the north. The Left wing of the Army of the Potomac thus placed upon its own resources for its defense was thought by the rebel rulers to be at their mercy. But the rain fell alike on the just as on the unjust. The storm which swelled the Chickahominy impeded the movements of the troops of the rebel general Huger, and in the summing up of these events it has been sagely observed (see Harper's "History of the Great Rebellion") that if Huger had come down upon the Left at any time, or if Smith had moved only an hour earlier on the Right, Heintzelman and Keyes must have been utterly crushed. Or, had the full flood of the Chickahominy come down, as was expected, four hours before, instead of four hours after noon, Sumner could not have crossed, and the Union forces on the south side of the river would have been annihilated in plain sight of the whole army on the opposite bank, utterly powerless to give any aid.

There is another period in the history of the world where an army passed from one bank to another in just the most convenient time. See chapter and verse in the Bible.

#### THE BATTERY AT THE BRIDGE.

It was hoped that the next move would be direct for Richmond, and until that order came the weary soldier would rather rest in camp, but at 9 o'clock in the evening



of Saturday the 31st of May, the repose of the Battery was broken by orders to go down and protect the building of a bridge half a mile from camp, and about the same distance below New Bridge, across the Chickahominy. In the darkness Lieut. Hyde rode over a bank about five feet high, bruising his arm so that he had to go back to camp.

### A MISS-STEP IN THE DARK.

NOTES OF LIEUT. HYDE REVISED MAY 22, 1900.

"Ordered by General Griffin to take my Battery in the night as quietly as possible to a point under a cliff where the enemy had a strong fortification, at daylight as soon as it was light enough to discover their works we were to commence firing in that direction; the object being to draw their fire to ascertain what they had,—and we found out!

We were moving along on what seemed in the darkness to be hard ground, and I was riding in company with Captain A. P. Martin, when before I was aware of the danger, my horse went down a steep bank carrying me with him, and falling upon my leg and right arm, injuring me considerably, and I was compelled to leave the Battery in command of Lieut. Dillingham, and go back, Captain Martin kindly accompanying me, to the surgeon of the 44th N. Y. Regt. He examined my arm, putting it apparently in the best shape possible, placing it in a sling, and I returned to the Battery, having been absent only half an hour. I carried my arm in the sling for a week or ten days after. To this day (1900) it is sensitive to the touch, very crooked and two inches shorter than the left arm: the hand being much smaller."

The Battery was stationed in a large low-level clover field, about 500 yards from the river, and disposing themselves as comfortably as possible on the limber boxes, officers and men slept all night in the mist and rain, with



the Battery in position just on the line of our advance pickets, though skirmishers were across the bridge on the left bank of the river. Porter's Fifth Corps of 20,000 men was alone upon the right bank.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, May 31, 1862. At 2 this afternoon sharp musketry and heavy firing was heard. Across the creek our troops and the rebels are at it again. [This was the attack by Johnston on the Left wing of the Army of the Potomac commanded by General Silas Casey at Fair Oaks, when the Union forces were driven back.] The more they fight the sooner it will be over. The balloon, which is near us, went up this afternoon, and discovered our forces at Bottom's Bridge. We have orders that we may be called before morning. At  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 9 this eve, we were called to hitch out Guns and Caissons to go to a bridge about one mile from camp, and guard it. At 10 we started, leaving all our things behind except blankets and overcoats. We got on to the wrong road and got lost, and did not strike the right and get to the bridge till  $\frac{1}{4}$  past 3 in the morning."

June 1st, 1862, the Battle of Fair Oaks was renewed and resulted in the repulse of the rebels.

#### GUARDING THE BRIDGES.

In the valley of the Chickahominy the engineers labored under great disadvantage owing to the rising of the river, which overflowed its banks until the meadows were all afloat, and the completion of the bridge anticipated on Sunday morning June 1st was not so soon accomplished. The Battery, however, was relieved at dark, twelve 32 pdrs. having come out during the day, and Colonel Alexander chief of engineers being of the opinion that two companies of infantry and two pieces of artillery were enough to protect the bridge.

The day was hot, and very "close" and "muggy," but





there were mitigating circumstances in a barn near by containing several tons of tobacco, which the men carried back to camp on the Gaines Farm, each carrying as much as could be transported in his arms.

Grows' Journal: "Sunday, June 1, 1862. 'As dark as pitch,' not a star to be seen. Unlimbered and went into Battery. This is the Chickahominy swamp, and a bridge has got to be built in order for our troops to cross. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 4 this morning I laid my blankets on the wet grass and clover and laid down. There was a very heavy dew and then rain. Got up at 6. We soon moved our guns farther back so we can get good range. A queer business for Sunday!

Soon after, several regiments of infantry came down to protect the batteries and to help on the bridge. They soon got themselves to work and then we were dismissed for the rest of the day, to make ourselves as comfortable as we could but not to go too far away,—to be within hailing distance.

This is a beautiful place, a large plantation. The owner's name is Dr. Laws. He is under arrest being one of the very rankest 'Secesh.' He raises mostly tobacco; has a large barn about 100 ft. from our piece, and in it is about \$5000 worth of cured tobacco in the leaf. It has not been pressed. Our officers told us to help ourselves. It is far superior to that which we buy at home. All the men who smoke have plenty of cigars, for it is very easy to roll one out. The tobacco is packed in the barn all over the floor, about 5 ft. thick.

The sun is awful hot today, but I have kept myself in the shade of the Barn most of the time. This afternoon I was surprised to see Witcher, who formerly belonged to the old Battery. He is now a lieutenant in the 1st Maryland Battery. We have not had any occasion to fire, as yet. The battery on our right,—there are 8 of us,—has fired about 20 shots today. Small bodies of rebel troops keep showing themselves during the day, along the edge of the



woods, but a shell or two soon scatters them. Our supper was brought over to us in good season, and about an hour after we got orders to go back to camp. Arrived soon after dark."

June 2d, Monday forenoon, about 10 o'clock, the Battery went down again to guard the bridge.

The officers had fried pork, and hasty pudding and molasses, for dinner, over which they discussed the situation, while heavy firing both of musketry and artillery resounded on the left of the line. It was confidently asserted in the privacy of camp circles, that if Porter's Corps had crossed the Chickahominy on Sunday, June 1st, 1862, it could have marched straight to Richmond. The enemy's forces were then coming round on our right wing, which was held by Porter's Corps.

"This continual moving" [back and forth to the bridge] wrote Lt. Phillips, "is a terrible strain on sick men, and there are plenty of them here. Not a great many very sick, but a large number troubled with slight disorders, enough to render them unfit for duty. The country is not so healthy as New England, by any means, leaving out the exposure. Yesterday [3d] we remained in camp all day. We were ordered to go out into the field, but in consequence of the storm, I suppose, General Morell ordered us to stay in camp."—A heavy rain flooded the road, and still the bridge was impassable. A regiment passed down with shovels and axes. The road was to be corduroyed.

Grows' Journal: "Wednesday, June 4, 1862. We are only 5 miles from Richmond, and we will have to fight, I expect, every foot of the ground, before we can get into the place which is expected to be the winding up place of this war.

Thursday, June 5. An order came this morning about 8 o'clock to go on picket. About noon the firing on the rebel works by our Battery and four others began."

On June 5, 1862, Captain Allen went home sick, on leave



of absence, and the Battery left camp with pieces only, about 7 a. m., and went down to the clover field to protect the bridge. Carlisle's regular batteries 20 pdr. Parrotts, were on a hill in the rear, and a Maryland battery was on the right of the Fifth Mass. Battery, guarding New Bridge.

At 8.15 a. m. the Marylanders commenced firing at a rebel battery on the other shore and unmasked the battery. The Fifth Massachusetts from its position could not see the enemy, and only fired two test shots. These were fired by the First Detachment. They both fell short as did the solid shot of the enemy.

At 9 a. m., a brisk fire was kept up on both sides, which lasted about two hours. Carlisle's batteries threw an occasional shell over the river [This was the Fifth Brigade of the Artillery Reserve, Capt. J. Howard Carlisle commanding, composed of Battery E, 2d U. S., and Batteries F, and K, 3d U. S.]

Shortly after dinner a light battery on the other shore supposed to belong to Sumner's Corps, which crossed lower down the river, commenced operations.

In the latter part of the afternoon a few shells were fired from the twelve 32 pdrs. brought down on the left to guard against contingencies.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"June 6, 1862: Lately I have had a chance here to witness the practical effects of confiscation. Near by the position of our Battery is a tobacco store house belonging to Dr. Gaines. . . . When we first came here this contained several tons of tobacco, but now it has all disappeared, and I am afraid Dr. G. will have some difficulty in finding any one to pay for it. Yesterday, as if not content with this, the engineer officer building the bridge came up for material, and with the help of four men tore the boards off one side and end and took out a lot of the joists. We told



him if he wanted the whole we would soon have it down for him, but he had got all he wanted, so the building still stands, though I think its existence will terminate within a few days. Dr. G. will begin to experience some of the suffering which he and those like him have brought upon the country, but not so much as I would like. His clover is all being eaten by Union horses, and pretty much everything growing on his farm will be consumed or trodden down by Porter's Division. Fence rails have long since disappeared from our vicinity, and the oak woods have lost much of their beauty: 15000 men of the Army of the Potomac will do a great deal of mischief."

---

## GENERAL ORDERS JUNE 7, 1862.

WAR DEPARTMENT  
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE

WASHINGTON, June 7, 1862.

General Orders

No. 61

The great number of officers absent from their regiments without sufficient cause, is a serious evil which calls for immediate correction. By paragraph 177, General Regulations, the power of commanding officers to grant leaves of absence is limited to a "time of peace." In time of war, leaves of absence will only be granted by the Secretary of War, except when the certificate of a medical officer shall show, beyond doubt, that a change of location "is necessary to save life, or prevent permanent disability." [Paragraph 186, General Regulations.] In such case, the Commander of an Army, a Department, or District, may grant not exceeding twenty days. At the expiration of that time, *if the officer be not able to travel*, he must make application to the Adjutant General of the Army for an extension, accompanied by the certificate of a medical officer of the army, in the usual form, and that he is not able to travel. If it be not practicable to procure such a certificate, in consequence of there being no army physician in the place where the officer resides, the certificate of a citizen physician, *attested by a civil magistrate*, may be substituted.

All officers of the regulars and volunteers, except those on parole, now absent from duty with leave, will be considered "absent without leave" [paragraph 1326, General Regulations.] unless they are found at their post, within fifteen days from the date of this order, or are





authorized by orders from the Adjutant General to be absent, which orders will in all cases be based on a certificate as above described, and must be exhibited to the paymaster before payment is made them.

All invalid and wounded officers who are able to travel, although their disability may not have been removed [*paragraph 187, General Regulations*] will repair, without delay—those from the East to Annapolis, to report to the General Commanding the Camp of Instruction: those from the West to report to the commanding officer of Camp Chase, Ohio. At those points they will remain until able to proceed to their regiments, or until an examining board may decide adversely on their ability to return to duty within a reasonable time, and orders may be given by the President for their discharge.

Their Excellencies, the Governors of States are requested to make known this order, and to contribute to its execution, as may be in their power. Mustering and Recruiting Officers are directed to do the same. Extra copies of the order will be furnished them for distribution.

Failure to comply with the above regulations will be reported to the Adjutant General by Regimental Commanders.

By Order of the Secretary of War.

Official:

L. THOMAS  
Adjutant General.  
Assistant Adjutant General.

Sunday, June 8, 1862, the Battery was in camp all day: Lieut. Dillingham with the Right Section going down to New Bridge at sunset to be relieved the next evening.

June 9th, in the afternoon, the Fifth Corps was reviewed by General McClellan and General Fitz John Porter, accompanied by General Prim [Gen. Juan Prim, Count de Reuss] commander of Spanish forces in Mexico, who was on a visit to the Army of the Potomac; a host of officers of lesser rank being attached to the reviewing party.

The review took place in an open field on the right of the road from Gaines Mills to Mechanicsville.

"We hitched up four pieces" wrote Lieut. Phillips, "two (the Right section) being out on picket, and marched out into a large field where the rest of the Division were drawn up. We formed in line with the other batteries, and waited for the great individual for whose satisfaction we were there.



Pretty soon—"Attention. Present sabre!"—and we presented sabre, while General Porter and General Prim rode by. General Prim had on a smoking cap very much like the royal diadem which you see on the stage. What it was made of I cannot say: otherwise he was dressed in a plain, dark coat, with one cross and star on his breast. In the crowd following came some more Spanish officers, with the same style of caps, made out of plaided material, and with coats beflagged in every possible place and style."

#### THE ARMY.—STRUCTURAL UTILITY.

Still the confiding army, in ignorance of the suspension of McDowell's orders, were looking for his reinforcements.

Lieut. Phillips wrote in this letter of the 9th of June:—

"I have just heard that General McDowell has landed at White House with reinforcements, and though we need them, it will not do to wait long in this swamp for more men, when the men we have are dropping off like dead leaves in autumn. The popular idea is that soldiers even when suffering the most are provided with good tents, but our soldiers have not seen the inside of a tent since we left the Potomac. The infantry have shelter tents,—the French *tentes d'abri*,—and our men make tents for the occasion out of tarpaulins and rubber blankets. The shelter tents are three feet high and some of our tarpaulin tents four or five feet high, but they are all low and consequently dark and wet. Add to this the natural carelessness of a soldier, the hardships, and hard fare, and a swamp full of miasma, and you will be able to understand the sickness which prevails here. We have our share of it. This morning 23 men were reported unfit for duty. Captain Allen is home on sick leave, and Lieut. Dillingham temporarily laid up with a cramp, which came on this forenoon while he was out on picket, owing probably to the coldness of last night. I hear of companies who turn out twelve or fifteen men on



parade, and the Doctor of the N. Y. 44th told me that he thought half this army were unfit for duty. Our numbers are fast diminishing, and it will not do to wait much longer. Not that I think numbers make much difference, for the rebels suffer as much or more than we do, and I will risk our men against any reasonable odds, but I like to spare our men. I do not know but it is more terrible to read of 500 killed in battle than of 2000 dying of disease, but as this is somewhat a matter of taste, I had rather, for my part, have my head shot off by a cannon ball, than shake to death with fever and ague. It is more glorious, besides being more comfortable."

In relation to organization he wrote June 10th, 1862. Tuesday evening:—"It seems to me that we have enough regimental organizations and officers, and the best plan is to recruit up to the maximum standard the regiments now in service; and to discharge as fast as possible the sick and disabled men who increase our strength only on paper. . . .

It has now become quite useless to estimate the strength of an army by the number of regiments. In our Division the strength varies very much. The 22d Mass. 800 men; 9th Mass. [infantry] as much or more; 18th Mass. 700 men; 25th N. Y. 200 men; 44th N. Y. 350 men &c., the average being perhaps 450 effective men to a regiment. Massachusetts, you see, comes out ahead. So this Division, which numbered 15000 men is really reduced to an effective 6000 or 7000. The situation and weather here are very bad, the ground is damp and miasmatic, and it rains as a general thing. Luckily our tent is water proof and an elaborate system of outside drainage constructed under the pressure of a former storm, keeps the floor dry. Then I have an elegant bedstead constructed of four crotches, two fence rails and a secession bed sacking,—confiscated. Scott has a regular camp bedstead, but it is not half so warm and comfortable as mine. The principal trouble about this



kind of living is that you have to get on the bed to undress, and hang up your clothes on top of you after you have got to bed. In fact the bed is a universal repository for everything, saddle, sabre, pistol, spurs, newspapers, and everything else which it will not do to put on the ground."

June 11, 1862, the Centre Section was on picket at New Bridge; on the 12th, the Left Section.

It was understood that the rebels on the opposite shore were firing the guns they captured May 31st at Fair Oaks. When they did any good shooting they were always using our guns. Their practice was to bring a gun down into the woods, fire a few shots, and as soon as our batteries replied they would limber up and retire or open in some new position. Whenever they made their appearance they met with a lively reception. Every day a balloon went up and it was supposed the occupant kept a good lookout.

With the pleasant weather the flood in the Chickahominy was rapidly falling, and about half a mile below the bridge the Battery had been guarding, Smith's Division, by the 13th, had thrown up a very respectable earthwork, much stronger than a mere parallel or rifle pit and as strong in the estimation of Lieut. Phillips as many of the defenses of Yorktown. "From a tall flagstaff," he wrote, "in the centre of the work a large American flag floats defiantly, in sight, I should think, of Richmond."

#### IN THE EARTHWORKS.

McClellan's Head Quarters crossed to the left bank of the river. Our pickets were over on that side, and Berdan's Sharpshooters in front of them within, in some cases, 25 yards of the rebel pickets. Lieut. Phillips was ordered Saturday morning, June 14th, to take his section down to New Bridge to reinforce Lieut. Scott and the Right Section. The route, as described, followed various turnings and twistings until out of the field, when the Battery moved





down a hill, across a brook, up a hill by Dr. Gaines's "gate posts," the fence and gate having disappeared some time since, on a half mile, then a turn to the left and straight ahead for a mile. Lieut. Scott's two pieces were in a new earthwork a little above New Bridge close by the edge of the swamp.

The line was 120 ft. long, 2 ft. 6 inches high, 20 ft. thick. There were beds for four pieces, on each side of which was a depression 3 ft. deep, into which the limbers were backed.

The swamp was full of trees, so that nothing could be seen from their position.

Instructions came from General Porter to be very careful and wide awake. The enemy had made a demonstration in the rear—a cavalry attack—cutting off a wagon train, and fears were entertained for one of the wagons with George Shaw. They had also driven in the pickets at one bridge. The Division was in great excitement all day and night. Martin's Battery starts out of camp three times and remains harnessed, ready to move. Lieut. Phillips was relieved at 9 p. m. on the 13th by Captain Weeden and returned to camp, but was ready to move all night.

Lieut. Hyde with the Right Section stayed in the earthworks.

Captain Griffin had been promoted. He was now Brigadier General.

### THE FIRST DEATH IN CAMP.

Saturday, June 14, 1862, Corporal Henry C. Parsons died in the hospital, in the afternoon, of typhoid fever. Grows helped bring him into camp. He left a wife and three children.

The next morning there were funeral services for the first time, and the body was sent to White House Landing on the way home to Malden, Mass. The camp had grown



dreary and disagreeable. The grass was all worn off, and old boxes, barrels and the other debris of a camp were strewn around. The place was called Gaines Hill and the owner Dr. Gaines was under arrest in one of the buildings. He owned about 150 slaves. George Shaw, who started from White House just in time to meet the rebels on their raid, and who ought to have arrived with his wagon load of horse shoes &c., besides provisions for the officers' mess, was detained, and the officers' diet was salt junk and hard bread and hasty pudding, with on one occasion a few cherries, and at others a glass of lemonade, but on Sunday afternoon the 15th, George Shaw with the wagon rolled into camp. He left White House all right, and had got seven miles out on the road when he met a company of cavalry retreating full gallop, so he turned and kept his horse on the gallop till he reached his point of departure. Then he took a new start and came through safely. There was a train of 50 other teams and only 5 men escaped with their lives. Infantry and cavalry were ordered out in pursuit. The officers that night dined on boiled ham and string beans.

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"June 16 1862, Monday, at 6 p. m. the Battery left camp with the six guns only. The Right section under Lieut. Scott and the Centre section under Lieut. Phillips in the earthwork at New Bridge, Lieut. Hyde and the Left section at the bridge above. Fourteen hundred yards in front of our earthworks was Lewis Hill covered with trees from which we were fired upon, our men in response aiming at the flash of their guns which alone was visible.

Four of Griffin's pieces were in the battery and the Fifth Mass. delayed its approach while they limbered up and came out, then ran the guns behind the breastworks, the enemy's shot and shell flying at them; the fragments of the



shells striking under the horses which were hurried out of the way. Their guns were one 12 pdr. and one 3 inch Rifled Gun. For two hours the firing was incessant with no casualties on our side. One piece of shell broke the sponge staff on the 4th piece and another rolled over the parapet on to Leach's back, but did no harm."

"We used," [Chase's Diary] "4° elevation, and 3½ second fuze while firing."

Phillips wrote "Corporal Nye, 3d piece, made some very pretty shots. The rebels had the range perfectly. As far as the proximity of shells was concerned it beat Yorktown all to pieces, but there was in reality almost no danger, as we were sheltered completely by the friendly pile of dirt in front of us. The rebels fired first rate, but if we had had as fair a sight at them as they had at us, somebody would have got hurt at their guns."

In the night the rebels cut down the trees that masked their earthwork, and all the next day our men could hear the music in the enemy's camp.

Grows of Charlestown celebrated the anniversary by buying some lemons and making some lemonade.

At eight o'clock, after dark, on the 17th, the Battery was relieved by Captain John R. Smead, Battery K, 5th U. S. artillery, and it went back to camp, leaving it after supper for a position on the hill by Dr. Gaines's house, where were two 20 pdr. Parrotts; sending the horses back to camp.

In the morning of the 18th, Martindale's Brigade and Griffin's Battery had marched to Mechanicsville and returned in the evening. Throwing up earthworks was the order of the day on both sides; the rebels shovelling dirt on Lewis Hill, and the Union soldiers piling it up on their side of the river.

The Battery was in position on Gaines Hill where it had been since the evening of the 17th, Lieuts. Phillips and



Scott in charge of the guns, "turning in" under a tent fly, when at noon of the 18th, General Fitz John Porter desired to have some 3 inch Schenkle percussion shell of a new pattern tested, which process Lt. Phillips thus describes:—

"We aimed one piece at a pile of dirt which the rebels were at work on, close by Mrs. Price's house; distance 2400 yards, elevation 7 1-20, and blazed away. The shots went first rate, all bursting.

The first shot fell a little short, the second struck right in the earthworks, burst beautifully, and five more gave a similar good account of themselves.

When we stopped, the rebels commenced firing at us with a ten pounder Parrott, using no fuzes. Their shots went first rate, one striking just eighteen yards in front of the Right piece—for I paced off the distance.—Another struck about 20 feet in front of a large crowd, who had gathered to witness the sport, whereupon they 'skedaddled' in lively style, but before General Porter and his attendant crowd could get off the hill, they sent a dozen shots whizzing round our heads from one of our own ten pdr. Parrotts captured at Fair Oaks.

During the afternoon General McClellan and staff rode up to our Battery, took a look at things and rode off. [See p. 310 McClellan's new base.] Toward sunset a lively engagement commenced between the rebels and our battery at New Bridge and I thought the rebels had rather the best of it, putting every shell just where they wanted it, but our 20 pdr. Parrotts on the hill in the rear of the New Bridge battery, took it up and made some great shots.

The balloon went up to do the observing, and the enemy fired two shots at it from their 10 pdr. Parrotts. One went sailing over our heads into the woods near our horses and ricocheted into the infantry camp, and the other, fired while the balloon was descending, passed close to it and





struck the bank between the balloon and Captain Griffin's camp. The distance must have been 5000 yards."

### REINFORCEMENTS.

On June 19, 1862, the Fifth Corps, still on the north bank of the Chickahominy, was reinforced by the 10th N. Y., the 1st Michigan, McCall's Division, and the cavalry commands of Generals Cooke and Stoneinan.

Grows' Journal: "June 19, 1862. About 10 this forenoon some new shell of Schenkle patent came, and we were ordered to fire on the rebels who are in easy sight. Throwing up breastworks we fired five rounds, which caused them to 'skedaddle' and then they commenced firing at us, but did not do any hurt or good, and they soon 'dried up.'

After dinner Harry Simonds and I went into one of the slave cabins to get some water, and had quite a chat with the old woman of the shanty. They are a very peculiar class, and make a great deal of money by this war, selling hot cakes, and such things, to the soldiers."

On the 20th, one shell fired by the rebels struck in Captain Weeden's camp, and others went an indefinite distance over the woods. Some were fired at the 20 pdr. Parrotts on the hill, in the rear of New Bridge, but missed the mark.

Eleven bridges had now been built across the Chickahominy and seven were available, viz., Bottom's Bridge, the Railroad Bridge, the Foot Bridge, Duane's Bridge, Woodbury's Infantry Bridge, Woodbury and Alexander's Bridge, and Sumner's Upper Bridge or the Grapevine Bridge, the one over which Sumner had crossed to win the battle of Fair Oaks.

All of the Army of 100,000 men had passed over to the south side, except Porter's Corps and McCall's Division. While McClellan built bridges the enemy constructed earthworks.



## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Friday morning, June 20, 1862, the picket relief, returning, waked up the rebel 10 pdrs., and they banged away in our direction. At the first shot, which fell short, the men looked a little astonished, not knowing what to make of it. At the second shot which went over their heads a loud laugh went up from the whole picket. The third shot struck close to them, and instantly came the order 'Double Quick. March!' and off they went. The rebels have at present two guns mounted in this battery of 4 and 5 inches calibre respectively, throwing shot weighing 30 and 40 pounds. The 40 pdr. is the heaviest rifled gun they have, and is the same as the guns which burst at Yorktown.

A deserter who came in, says, I am told, that they have four or five more 40 pdrs. which they are going to mount, and that the 30 pdr. is a Parrott gun which they took at Bull Run.

Our position is a splendid one for artillery practice. The meadows on the banks of the Chickahominy run back without rising much on each side about half a mile. A narrow belt of trees lines the banks of the river, and beyond the low plain on each side rises a line of wooded hills, with clearings and openings here and there. These hills are from 1500 to 4000 yds. apart, and batteries are planted along their whole length.

The rebel guns that I know of are as follows:—

First a 10 pdr. Parrott near Mrs. Price's house, then comes a long, wooded hill, stretching a mile perhaps to the westward. Hidden in this we can just discern the outlines of a breastwork apparently running the whole length of the hill in a continuous line. How many guns they have here we do not know, but as yet they have fired only three, a 12 pdr., a three inch Rifled Gun and one gun near the western limit of the hill, whose calibre I do not know. Then



still farther to the west comes their large gun battery situated on the top of a bare, sandy hill, and sweeping the whole valley of the Chickahominy from Mechanicsville to Gaines Hill.

These comprise the rebel defenses of the Chickahominy, but only a short distance from the end of *our* bridge lies Smith's Division and the right of our intrenchments, whose high parapet and deep embrasures give warning of what is coming. And on our side we are not idle. Our light guns, placed as a temporary protection to bridges, have been withdrawn, and the rebels may console themselves with the empty satisfaction of having driven us out of sight: but to do it they have disclosed to us their own strength, told us the calibre and position of their guns, and wasted their precious ammunition in a useless game of random shots. We are shovelling dirt diligently and when we open, the rebels will find that they have something more than light field batteries to contend against.

When it comes to artillery practice the odds are so tremendously in our favor, that the result will not long be doubtful. In nothing have the rebels shown themselves so inferior as in their management of artillery. They have good gunners, but their artillery officers show a frivolity altogether inconsistent with the gravity of this arm of the service. Here, as at Yorktown, instead of husbanding their resources in order to be ready at the decisive moment with that concentration and continuity of fire which alone makes artillery useful, they use up their ammunition in a kind of worrying game, which might be useful in a guerilla war, but is not likely to have much effect upon a large army. It is very irritating for a solitary individual to find himself a target for a 40 pdr. gun, merely because he walks across a field in front of the enemy, but, inasmuch as it is next to impossible to hit him, it is rather a waste of powder and shot, and will not be likely to drive us away from Richmond.



For the last few days they have been firing away at the battery at New Bridge. They have made good shots, struck the parapet almost every time, and half stifled the men inside with smoke, but what damage have they done us? Broken a sponge staff and a few spokes to a wheel, and at any time we choose, we can put a battery in there again. If they intend to demolish the battery why don't they go to work in a business like way and hammer away for eight or ten hours without stopping, and finish up the job? Instead of this they fire forty or fifty shots and then stop, leaving our men at liberty to repair damages."

Of the firing of the 20th Lieut. Phillips wrote at another time:—"For half an hour this battery was the hottest place I ever saw! Our men kept well under cover, and though the rebels hit the parapet almost every time, I have not heard of anybody's being hurt."

In Chase's Diary it is stated that the enemy used all sorts of shot and shell, both round and conical: twenty, thirty-two and forty pounders.

Grows' Journal: "June 20, 1862. Friday. About 8 this morning the rebels opened upon us with 3 in. 10 lb. shell and 5 in. 32 lb. shell, but they did not hurt us any for our little tents were in the woods out of the way, and were well protected by large oak trees. The second shot they fired went over our heads and struck one of the 2d Maine, killing him instantly. The poor fellow was asleep in his tent at the time, and he never awoke again in this world.

We soon opened upon them and in a short time they stopped firing. We could hear their drums beat, and see them at work. They are about  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from us. The infantry throw up works most every night. Our Battery is held back to protect the rear; a good position, but we have to keep in the woods, out of sight. We have been ordered to move to the splendid lawn in front of Dr. Gaines's house. It is well shaded with large oak trees. . . . After supper moved our quarters to the Gaines house."





On this ground there was a well which gave the only good water they had had for some time.

Grows' Journal: "Saturday, June 21, 1862. On the farm are some thirty slaves: all the rest have run away. They are a smart looking set. After supper I met, and talked a little with Dr. Gaines. He is quite an old man. His wife is a strong Union woman. He has two daughters who are 'secesh' to the backbone.

Sunday, June 22d. About 7 the balloon went up and the rebels began shelling it, but could not hit it. Then they commenced firing where we were stationed on picket. After throwing five or six shells they stopped. It is a beautiful morning and everything around looks nice. Took all the things out of my tent and laid them on the grass to air."

This lawn did not hold the Battery but a very short time, for the enemy constructed a battery of six 30 pdr. Parrotts in such close proximity as to make their position untenable, and they moved nearer to the river. The same day Dr. Gaines's wife and one of his daughters with what few slaves they had left, moved to Gaines Mills.

Grows' Journal. "Monday, June 23, 1862. Was called at 4 this morning and went on post. At 5 I called the Bugler to sound the Reveille. Soon after heard the rebels beating their drums to call the men. The air is very clear this morning. Got orders to pack up immediately after breakfast, so as to move our camp out of the range of shells; two others with myself were left behind to guard camp—to look after the stores till the teams came to carry them to our new camp. Soon after dinner the ambulance came over and began taking things over to camp, as the teams will not be up before night. . . . After supper I went to see the new intrenchments the infantry are throwing up. They are splendid works.

A short distance from here and almost back of Dr. Gaines's house, are eleven fresh rebel graves, mostly North



Carolina men who were wounded at Hanover Court House. About 6 feet from our cook house are five graves of our men of the 22d. Mass. One died of fever, the others of wounds.

About half past 6, I went over to our new camp, about 10 minutes' walk, in a delightful place,—a cleared space surrounded by thick and tall woods. There is a spring near by of beautiful water. Found my tent all ready. It had been pitched by Joe Knox out in the Park. All the rest of the tents are in the edge of the woods, and the little road they have cut leading to them is beautiful."

The Battery was alone in the new camp, and had all the room that could be desired. Chase makes the note in his Diary:—"Changed camp to a delightful grove of young trees, and begin to be happy." But the very first night there was a gale and heavy rain.

The officers' tents were on top of a hill where they could get the benefit of whatever breeze was blowing, and the first evening there was a terrific thunder storm. At midnight the tents blew over. The next day they were obliged to build a bridge "to connect the camp with civilization," which they accomplished, having the usual thunder storm in the afternoon.

### THE SITUATION.

General Porter's command had been distributed as follows:—Meade's Brigade at the Gaines house near a siege battery; Sykes' and Morell's and McCall's Divisions with a part of the Cavalry Reserve camped on the Gaines Farm conveniently located for a movement in any direction their presence was required.

Opposed to these Union forces were the Divisions of Jackson, Ewell and Whiting, at least double their number.

Information was received that our connection with



White House Landing was threatened by the rebel general Jackson, and the commander of the Army of the Potomac began planning for a new base of operations on the James River to which he had secured a safe passage over White Oak Swamp, and commissary, quartermaster, and ordnance supplies had been sent to the new base. [See p. 253 McClellan's choice.] It will be remembered that on a previous occasion McClellan's judgment as to the base had been overruled.

The Centre and Left of the Army were now instructed to move to the relief of the Right wing in case of attack.

There were ten heavy guns in battery on the banks of the Chickahominy; five 30 pdr. Parrotts on Gaines Hill and five 4½ inch Rodmans in the hill battery in the rear of the New Bridge battery.

"June 25, 1862, (Chase's Diary) the whole Battery went on a junket in the morning near New Bridge with pieces only. Left camp about 2 a. m. Dedicated the second fortification by shelling the enemy early a. m. The enemy replied to our fire with well directed shots, throwing 6 and 10 pounder shots and shells at us, but as we had good fortifications they did us no injury. Heavy cannonading all day; two batteries of 32 pounders and two batteries of 10 pounders shelling the enemy with short intervals of cessation, all day. Fired 97 rounds from the whole Battery today, elevation 4½° and 7¼ second fuze; best shot 4¾° 6½ second fuze. Picked up five conical shells and two solid shot fired at us, and started a bowling alley with them in the afternoon. Left for camp at eight p. m. The 7th Georgia Reg't was on rebel picket line today."

Of "Battery No. 4" Lieut. Scott has written:—"Lieut. Hyde was in command of the Fifth Mass. Battery, Lieut. Dillingham had been transferred from the Left Section to the Right Section; Lieut. Phillips commanded the Centre Section; it devolved on myself to take the Left Section. The



rebels had their earthworks opposite New Bridge, which had been rebuilt, to oppose any crossing by our forces. Our pickets held the Bridge and earthworks were thrown up to shield our batteries which also did picket duty. The Fifth Battery was placed behind these works at different times, and had duelled with the enemy. We took good care to go into these works before daylight and leave them after dark, when relieved. We remained there the entire day, subject to an incessant fire from the rebel guns opposite. We only fired our guns occasionally, to let them know we were still there. Of course horses were kept at a safe distance in the rear."

Lieut. Phillips wrote of the same date, June 25, 1862: "The weather had become settled and we passed into the earthworks covering New Bridge, a new 6 gun battery No. 4. The work is quite strong, with embrasures and traverses to protect us from the flanking fire from the big gun battery. Four pieces from some battery are down in the old earthwork at New Bridge which has been strengthened and made quite secure; the parapet having been raised and embrasures cut. All our batteries have been blazing away, more or less. One gun is reported burst near Mrs. Price's house, and the hill battery think they have dismounted one of the rebel big guns. They put quite a number of shot into the embrasure. The rebels have answered rather feebly, making a few good shots in our vicinity. They have fired 3 inch shot. . . .

Kearney's Division I hear attacked the rebels today, driving them a mile.

At night we arrived safely in camp and went to bed. We have received 200 rds. Schenkle 3 inch shell, which we are now packing. . . .

Our pickets report that we made excellent shooting, and that after a few shots the rebels skedaddled out of the battery into Mrs. Price's house. We struck the house twice."





## THE ARMY OF VIRGINIA.

The Army of Virginia was inaugurated June 26, 1862, and placed under command of General John Pope, for the protection of Washington, and for aggressive movements in the direction of Charlottesville, and the relief of McClellan.

This army was composed of three corps under Sigel, Banks, and McDowell.

McClellan wished to allow Porter, who was to give battle to the enemy and enable McClellan to hold his own for a few hours, and insure the safety of his trains during the change of base to the James River, all the reinforcements which could be spared from the south side of the river, and asked each commander of a corps for all he could spare and sufficiently protect his own position for twenty-four hours, but they believed the enemy still to be in force and threatening their positions on the south side and held on to them, so Porter fought it out alone.

Thursday, June 26, 1862, in the afternoon, the enemy crossed the Chickahominy in several columns in the vicinity of Mechanicsville and Meadow Bridge, flanked the Right wing of the Army of the Potomac, and attacked McCall's Division at Beaver Dam Creek just north of the Mechanicsville turnpike. The expected had happened and supplies were cut off in that direction.

The morning was passed in quiet, but about half past 4 p. m. the Fifth Mass. Battery broke camp. They sent their baggage across the river at a bridge lower down held by our forces. With the wagons went Lieut. Dillingham, a sick man and unfit for duty. They marched with full battery in support of Cooke's cavalry and General Butterfield's Brigade, according to the orders, to repel attack at Cold Harbor.

This was the first intimation they had of an impending



battle, though they had been expecting an attack at Mechanicsville for some time. They had heard firing all day but had taken no notice of it, as it was nothing unusual.

After marching two miles in the direction of Cold Harbor, they turned and marched towards Mechanicsville to the assistance of McCall and Sykes. In their march they had made the complete circuit of their camp and bivouacked with Butterfield's Brigade in a large field  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles short of Mechanicsville, and  $\frac{3}{4}$  of a mile in front of the Gaines house. They could see the shells bursting over the tops of the trees, and from 5 p. m. until dark they could hear heavy cannonading and sharp musketry firing towards Mechanicsville where McCall's Pennsylvania Reserves were closely engaged.

Grows' Journal: "June 26. . . . We were thus moved about till dark when we were sent near to our old camp, but did not unhitch till about 11 o'clock at night. Had some supper and got ready to lay down, but was told I would have to go on guard at 2 in the morning. Laid down but could not sleep."

Perfect silence was ordered, and officers and men lay down on the ground, every man spreading his blanket alongside his piece to be ready at a moment's notice.

They had three days' rations in their haversacks. General McClellan was with General Fitz John Porter at the front until the contest at Beaver Dam Creek ceased at 9 p. m. with our troops in possession of the field, returning to his headquarters at one o'clock in the morning.

At 3 a. m. of June 27th, orders came to Porter to withdraw the Fifth Corps to the vicinity of Gaines Mills, with both flanks resting on the Chickahominy covering the bridges.



## CHAPTER X.

### THE BATTLE OF GAINES MILLS, JUNE 27, 1862.

"And now I come to speak of the real fighting of the Peninsula. To my mind, nothing that came after exceeded it in the valor and tactical merit displayed, or in reckless charges or losses in a given time."

—BREVET BRIGADIER-GENERAL THOMAS W. HYDE.

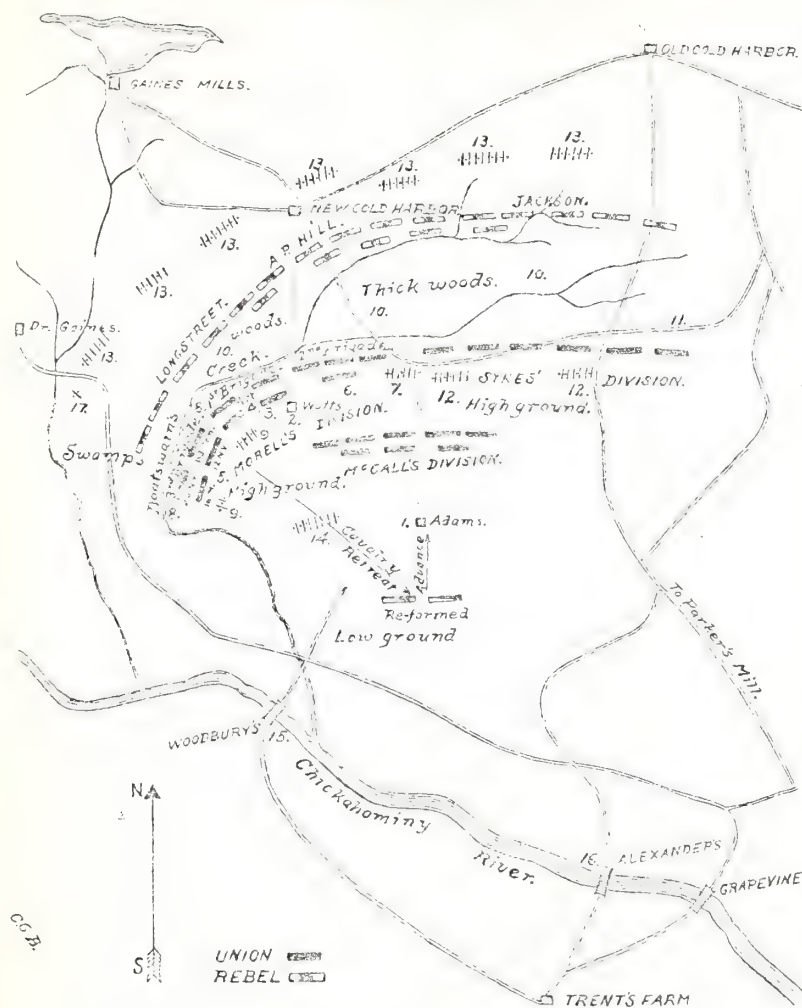
Longstreet, commanding the rebel forces, was at Mechanicsville on the 27th of June, 1862, all ready to move down upon either side of the Chickahominy. He was then close upon Porter's Fifth Corps. It was thought by McClellan to be necessary to fight the enemy where he stood, and hold the position till night, his mind being still bent upon perfecting his arrangements for the change of base to the James River, and at 3 a. m., General Porter received orders directing him to withdraw his command to a semicircular line east of Gaines Mills, and behind Boatswain's creek, the flanks resting on the Chickahominy, and including in its sweep the high grounds east of the creek.

In front were the ravines of the creek, on the east woods and underbrush, on the north and west swamps and woodland, while on the hills to the north was cleared ground crossed by fences and ditches. The bridge approaches could be covered by the positions on these hills.

No fault could be found with the choice of this line but the time for making the defenses was limited, and the men and means were inadequate, to carry out these well laid plans for a line two miles in length. The action at Gaines Mills commenced about 2 p. m. During the afternoon



# GAINES MILLS.



1. General Porter's First Head Quarters. 2. His Second Head Quarters.
3. Martindale 4. Section of Napoleon's Battery. 5. Butlerfield. 6. Griffin.
7. Martin's Battery 8 & 8. Ravines. 9 & 9. 5<sup>th</sup> Mass. Battery. 10.
- Thickly wooded, low, swampy ground through which the Rebels charged. 11. First attack of Rebels on Union lines. 12.
- Other Union Batteries. 13. Rebel Batteries. 14. Position of batteries when the repulsed Cavalry rode through them and put them in disorder, and caused the loss of many guns.
15. First bridge destroyed. 16. Second bridge destroyed.
17. Gun aimed at Gaines House during the morning.





McClellan ordered up Slocum's Division to the support of Porter; also the brigades of French and Meagher of Richardson's Division; also two brigades of Peck's Division, but inasmuch as none of them but Slocum's came within relieving distance, their support of Fitz John Porter at the battle of Gaines Mills is lost to history.

At first the 3d Brigade held the position on the extreme Left of the line, with the Fifth Mass. Battery, Lieut. Hyde in command, on the right and rear of the brigade, then General Morell coming up with the remainder of his Division, Martindale's Brigade was placed on the right of Butterfield, and Griffin's Brigade on the right of Martindale's.

Sykes held the Right of the line, and McCall was in reserve. Martin's Battery was on the right of Morell, commanding the road.

The Left extended into the meadow about half a mile from Woodbury's Bridge.

Porter's Right was first engaged.

The forces immediately opposed to the Fifth Mass. Battery are believed to have been a brigade of five Alabama regiments.

General Porter's headquarters first at the Adams house, were later at the Watts house on a hill near the front. Among his volunteer aides were the Prince de Joinville, Captain Louis Philippe (Comte de Paris) and Captain Robert d'Orleans (Duc de Chartres). The new line had been safely reached and occupied, defenses and barriers were erected of whatever material was available, and Porter expected to hold it. Most of the artillery was formed in line about a quarter of a mile in the rear of the infantry. For an hour the firing had continued; at 3 o'clock the enemy had charged and been repulsed, but not until four o'clock, when the battle had been raging two hours, was Porter's appeal for more troops answered by the arrival of Newton's Brigade of Slocum's Division, which moved to the right of Griffin. Still the line remained unbroken, but at last, massing their



superior numbers, from 60,000 to 70,000 supported by 80 pieces of artillery to our 25,000 at most fighting men, on the Left, the rebels bore down the broken regiments of Butterfield's Brigade.

Captain William B. Weeden, on duty as chief of artillery, 1st Division, promoted from the command of Battery C, 1st Reg't. R. I. Light Artillery, reports:— . . . "The smoke had filled the whole field to the woods and it was impossible to direct the fire. The batteries were limbering to the rear in good order, to retire and renew the fire from the brow of the hill, when the cavalry, repulsed, retired in disorder, through and in front of the batteries. The caissons were exchanging limbers with the pieces and it was impossible to limber up and withdraw them. Men were ridden down and the horses stampeded by the rush of the cavalry. The whole line of artillery was thrown into confusion. Commands could be neither heard nor executed, and different batteries were mingled in disorder. One piece of my battery mired in the woods. Other caissons in front and rear of the same, having been abandoned by the drivers, it was impossible to rescue the piece. The remainder of the battery crossed Woodbury's Bridge at dark, and encamped on Trent's farm."

#### REPORT OF GEN. GEO. W. MORELL.

(June 27th.) "The Third and First Brigades were each in two lines, with small intervals; the Second in one line, with one regiment in reserve. Martin's Battery was in the open field between my Division and General Sykes's on my right, mine being on the extreme left.

A section of Weeden's (Fourth R. I.) under Lt. Buckley, was placed at an opening through the timber in General Martindale's line, and a section of Allen's (Fifth Mass.) in a like position in General Butterfield's. The rest could not



be brought into action. . . . The enemy approached through the woods from the direction of New Cold Harbor, and made their first serious attack about 12 o'clock upon the Right, which was handsomely repulsed by Griffin's Brigade.

The second attack was made about 2.30, and the third about 5.30 o'clock, each extending along my entire front, and both, like the first, were gallantly repulsed. At the fourth and last about 6.30 o'clock, they came in irresistible force, and throwing themselves chiefly against the Centre and Left, swept us from the ground by overwhelming numbers, and compelled us to retire. Lt. Buckley lost his two guns yet without discredit, for he fought them to the last moment, having but three men, including non-commissioned officers, left to each piece, when the infantry gave way.

As we retired the artillery opened fire from the Left and Rear, but the pressure was so great that the troops could not be rallied, except in small bodies, to support it. Besides, General (Philip St. George) Cooke's cavalry, having been repulsed in a charge upon the enemy's Right, rode at full speed obliquely through a large portion of the artillery, carrying men and horses along with them. The cavalry reformed under the hill beyond the reach of musketry, and advancing to the neighborhood of the Adams house imparted some steadiness to the infantry near them."

#### REPORT OF BRIG. GEN. DANIEL BUTTERFIELD.

(June 27.) "The following was the disposition of my brigade: Eighty-third Pennsylvania Volunteers on the creek, with its right connecting with General Martindale's left (First Michigan Regiment). Forty-fourth New York to the left, and on the same line of Eighty-third: Twelfth New York on the crest of the hill in rear of and supporting the Eighty-third: Sixteenth Michigan back of crest of hill,



in rear of and supporting the Forty-fourth: Allen's Fifth Massachusetts Battery to the right and rear of my position, so situated as to be used at any point of the line I might wish. Skirmishers from the Eighty-third and Forty-fourth Regiments, together with the sharpshooters of the Sixteenth Michigan, were thrown well forward on the brow of the hill, commanding our entire lines. . . . The first attack of the enemy in force on my brigade, took place at about 2.30 o'clock p. m., it having been preceded by a like attack on the Right and Centre of the general line. So soon as it began I ordered a section of Allen's Battery to take a position opposite to and fire through an interval in the woods commanding the hill in front of my centre. Their fire proved very destructive to the assaulting column. . . .

. . . The second attack of the enemy, preceded as in the first one by an attack on the Right and Centre, took place at about 5.30 o'clock p. m., and was more severe, but so far as the result is concerned met with a like reception and repulse. I brought forward my two reserves and had all my force engaged."

Of the third and last assault which took place shortly after 6 p. m. he says:—"So emboldened were the enemy by their success in getting on all sides of my command, that a regiment sent a flag of truce to the Eighty-third, demanding their surrender. This was indignantly refused, and the regiment expended its last round of ammunition in fighting its way out. A large portion of these succeeded in forming in good order on the hill in rear of the batteries, and with other fragments of commands, aided by the Prince de Joinville, Captain Hoyt and Major Webb of the regular artillery, and Colonel Roberts, Second Maine, two good lines of troops were formed with some degree of precision. The firing of the artillery closed the scene and saved us all from destruction."





## OFFICIAL REPORT OF LT. JOHN B. HYDE.

ORIGINAL COPY.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING.

July 5, 1862.

CAPT. WEEDEN,

Chief of Artillery Gen. Morell's Division.

I have the honor to make the following report as regards the Battery under my command.

June 26th was ordered to report to General Butterfield, and proceeded with his Brigade in direction of Coal Harbor, and was subsequently ordered back to a field near Gen. Morell's Head Quarters, took position near the woods; afterwards was ordered to the field formerly occupied by the Reserve Artillery, remained there until 3 a. m. of the 27th, was then ordered to take position "in Battery" to the Left and near Dr. Gaines's House to command the bridge in front [see notes of Captain Hyde May 22, 1900 p. 320] and to cover the retreat of our troops, and then to retire after all were over and the bridge destroyed; this being accomplished took position again on the other side of a bridge, on a hill about 100 yards from the woods, and was again ordered to take position at the edge of the woods by General Butterfield [see notes p. 321] and with the assistance of his Brigade, drove the enemy back several times in great disorder, after which we resumed our position on the hill, and remained in readiness for the enemy to come out of the woods, then to give them double canister, which we did with great effect until our support gave way and we were obliged to limber up and retire, which we did in good order, with all the pieces except one, the horses of which having been previously killed, I was obliged to leave. We had proceeded but a short distance, when the fire of the enemy became so in-



tense, that the horses on three of the pieces were killed, thereby preventing their removal from the field.

Our loss was four pieces, twenty-two horses and harnesses.

Corp'l A. F. Milliken shot through the head.

Private Chas. D. Barnard shot through the breast.

" E. F. Gustine shot in the breast.

" Wm. H. Ray wounded in the breast.

" John Agen wounded in the side.

" L. D. Brownell wounded in ankle.

" Richard Heyes missing, prisoner.

" E. F. Smith missing, prisoner.

After having retired from the field, crossed the Chickahominy River and encamped near General McClellan's Head Quarters for the night. Amount of ammunition expended was one hundred shell and twenty-five canister.

#### NOTES OF LT. HYDE MAY 22, 1900.

"We were retreating towards the James River. We—our Battery—were the last to cross the bridge below Dr. Gaines's house on the way to cross the Chickahominy. This bridge was built of logs and planks and was about twenty feet wide and about thirty feet long. After we had passed over that bridge our guns were placed 'in Battery,' facing towards the enemy who were coming that way in pursuit of our army, to hold them in check if necessary. After all the troops had passed over, the colonel of the infantry regiment was ordered to destroy the bridge.

During the work of destruction I discerned coming down the hill at great speed several mounted men, whom by my glass I made out to be members of the Signal Corps. I at once told the Colonel in charge to have the planks of the bridge replaced as members of the Signal Corps were coming down the hill like lightning. He at first doubted it and



said they were rebels. I insisted, handing him my glasses, and having looked he said sure enough it was the Signal Corps, and ordered the planks to be put down over which they passed and went to the rear. I afterwards received a complimentary letter from Lieut. Tompkins who was one of the number.

After this bridge had been removed we proceeded to the next bridge which was wider and much longer, reaching from the bottom of a ravine to the top of a cliff or plateau, and after our Battery had passed over it this bridge was destroyed by being blown up. We were the last to go over. This took place in the afternoon.

It was the last stand taken, and it was there we lost our guns.

General Butterfield's order was to place two of my guns in the edge of the woods, and fire in the direction of the enemy.

Our position was on the plateau about 200 feet from the edge of the woods where our guns again faced the enemy—the forces of Stonewall Jackson who were directly in our front across the ravine—without support, which it was impossible to obtain, all the infantry being engaged as I was informed by General Butterfield when I asked for it. All the batteries were formed in a semi-circle the Fifth Mass. Battery being on the extreme left. Directly in front of the batteries was the ravine 20 feet in depth. The firing all the afternoon and until dark was terrific, and the engagement is said by General Butterfield to have been one of the severest battles of the war.

Toward the latter part of the afternoon in a cross fire from the opposite bank of the Chickahominy where the rebels had placed their guns, with the swamp in between us, one of the shells passing under my horse—not 'Black Charley,' one of 'Uncle Sam's' horses,—and tearing up the ground for quite a distance, exploded without injury to any one, but the shock made my hair stand on end."



## GRIFFIN TO HYDE.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

LT. J. B. HYDE.

*Dear Sir,*

It gives me great pleasure to testify to your good conduct whilst under my command; always showing a desire to execute all orders with alacrity, and in a cheerful manner.

Very Respectfully,

CHAS. GRIFFIN,  
*Brig.-Gen'l.*

## HOYT TO HYDE.

HD. QRS. 3D. BRIGADE.

MORELL'S DIVISION

5TH PROV. CORPS.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

LT. J. B. HYDE,

5th Mass. Batt.

*Lieutenant.*

In the absence of General Butterfield it affords me great pleasure,—having witnessed your conduct at the Battle of Chickahominy,—to give my testimony to the soldier like, brave, and efficient manner in which throughout the day you managed your battery. The effect of the fire of half of it on three occasions on that day, proved of the greatest assistance to our Brigade, and when later in the day all seemed lost, you willingly reported for duty with your last pieces, you gave evidence by the act, that you had done all any one could for the preservation of those lost.

Please accept my best wishes for your success,

and Believe me sincerely &amp;c.

WM. J. HOYT,  
*Asst. Adj't Gen'l.*





## FROM PHILLIPS' LETTERS.

"Before daylight on Friday June 27, 1862, we were round and prepared to move.

Then to our surprise we commenced a retrograde movement: backward went the whole Division, and as we came into the road we found our heavy siege guns moving along with us.

Then the fact that we were retreating became apparent to us, and all the time we could hear the enemy thundering on our rear.

At 6 o'clock we passed the Gaines house, and, crossing a little brook, came into battery on the hill beyond. Here we were ordered to wait till all our troops had crossed, and the bridge cut away. So we waited for two or three hours. Finally, the last of our column passed, and the ruins of the bridge soon fell into the stream, and no enemy had appeared.

I had one of my pieces aimed at Dr. Gaines's house, all ready to knock it down at the slightest demonstration. As soon as the bridge was down we limbered up and retired across the field, over a bridge in the middle of a piece of woods traversed by a deep ravine and brook, and into the field beyond, where we came into battery for the second time.

Three hundred yards in front of us stretched the woods that were to witness a terrible conflict. Right behind us the ground sloped down into the level meadows that border the Chickahominy.

Butterfield's Brigade and our Battery were on the extreme Left, the enemy being prevented from flanking us on that side by the fire of Smith's heavy guns across the Chickahominy.

Then came Weeden's Battery, then Martin's. There we stood, waiting an attack.

About noon the enemy attacked our right, but only to be driven back.



Again he attacked and this time our Left, and the bullets whistled round our heads pretty lively, but the result was the same. A third time he tried to get through the woods, and a third time our troops drove him back; but their ranks were thinned as they came out of the woods, and it was evident that unless reinforcements arrived our wearied men could not stand another attack from the fresh troops the rebels were constantly receiving.

But on they came for the fourth time, and with a more determined charge than before.

Lieut. Hyde sent my section down into the edge of the woods . . . and I blazed away.

But this time the thundering volleys of musketry told us that the hottest work of the day was before us.

All along the line it was one continuous roar, while mixed with it came the heavy reports of artillery, as Weeden and Martin thundered away on our Right. But it was of no use: advancing at trail arms in one unbroken mass, they rushed through the woods over the brook, now filled with dead bodies, closing their ranks as fast as our fire mowed them down.

The woods were full of smoke, and the bullets buzzed round our heads like a swarm of angry bumble bees: still our artillery thundered away.

My horse had a bullet in his flank and one sergeant's horse lay dead on the ground. As yet no men were hit, but louder and louder roared the musketry, and thicker and thicker buzzed the bullets, and suddenly, out poured our infantry in disorder, frightened and reckless,—they made an attempt to rally, rushing out right in front of the muzzles of our guns, which were not ten feet from the trees, but broke and retreated.

Still, as long as there was any hope I blazed away till all our men had retreated beyond me. Then I limbered up and carried my section into the field alongside of our other pieces.

As far as I could see the hill was covered with our men



running in groups of two or three or alone, each one looking out for himself, while 200 yards in front stretched the long line of rebel infantry, which had formed between us and the woods, their red flags flying, and their muskets sending the bullets flying round our heads after all the infantry had left.

I unlimbered and fired one round of canister at a regiment with a red flag within less than three hundred yards. We could see the gaps made at each discharge instantly filled up by fresh troops, and still on they came.

Reluctantly, we limbered up and commenced our retreat. I got both my pieces off the field down to the bottom of the hill (and all the caissons got off safely,) and none too soon, for at the right piece, more exposed than the others, down went all the horses (four) and Corporal Albert F. Milliken fell, shot through the head, then Private Edward F. Custine, at Peacock's piece, shot in the neck and breast, Private Charles D. Barnard shot in the side, then Wm. H. Ray fell at Smith's piece with a bullet through his shoulder, but managed to get off the field.

So down the hill we went at full gallop, but before we reached the bottom Peacock's and Simonds's pieces were left, with the horses dead in the traces. George F. Manchester one of the drivers on Sergt. Peacock's piece had his off horse shot but cut his nigh one loose and escaped. When he got to the bottom of the hill he took up a wounded officer in front of him, but in passing under the fire of our Reserve Artillery, one of their shells blew the officer's head off, and Manchester said he felt frightened for the first time. So far both of my guns were safe, but at the bottom of the hill, a fence stopped us a little, and while passing through the gap we experienced the hottest fire of all.

The rebels by this time lined the top of the hill, and poured a murderous fire into our retreating soldiers. As Blake's piece went through the gap, down went one horse with a bullet in his jaw, throwing his rider, but the other horses pulled him through and saved the gun. As Page's piece,



passed through down went four horses at one volley, and I told the men to leave the piece. The rebels were following at double quick, and there was nobody to support us.

I had hardly gone a hundred yards when with the next volley my horse fell, shot through the leg, and as I tumbled off I saw the rebel flag planted on my gun!

I was compelled reluctantly to abandon my saddle and bridle, blankets, pocket testament, brushes &c. to the rebels, and taking my overcoat, revolver and brandy flask, travelled along on foot.

By this time all was confusion, the road was full of fugitives, the officers in vain trying to rally their men, and the thunder of artillery and musketry incessant.

The bullets buzzed around our heads thicker than ever, but I trudged on with a sullen desperation.

Our Reserve Artillery was blazing away over our heads, the shells coming in dangerous proximity to our caps, keeping the rebels back somewhat, and soon our reinforcements, the Irish Brigade, came up, too late, alas, for us.

Still we pressed on until we had crossed the Chickahominy, and reposed once more in safety.

Blake's piece got off. Corporal Spear's got stuck in a ditch, but they hauled it through. Simonds's piece was lost: Sergt. Smith got a bullet through his cap, taking off some of his hair, and raising a little swelling on the top of his head: John Agen had his jacket torn and his side bruised by a piece of shell, while spent bullets struck around very thick. Strange as it may seem, although my horse was struck three times; once in the edge of the woods, once in the leg as we were retreating, and a third time as he fell, throwing me off. I cannot find any bullet marks on me or my clothes.

I have seen enough of retreats, and my only consolation is that no efforts of mine could have altered the result. We did not leave the field till the whole of Butterfield's Brigade had broken; and after our horses were shot we could not save our pieces. Had the infantry rallied I would have





stayed as long as any of them, but, as it was, 15 seconds' delay would have lost everything, guns, men and horses.

We were the last battery on the field.

Our men fought well against superior numbers, and did not retreat till they had lost half their men, used up their ammunition, and were wearied out, and when the rebels came on the last time it was useless to fire at them. We could not kill them as fast as they came up. Had we had a battery of 12 pdrs. a regiment of dead men would have covered the field before they could have got our guns, but our little pieces do not throw canister much larger than a mustard box, and were never meant for that kind of work. As it was, however, we could see the gaps made in their ranks, as we threw in double charges of canister, but they filled them up as fast as they were made.

No description can convey an accurate idea of the peculiar sound the bullets make as they buzz around one's head. You must hear it to appreciate it. It approaches nearly the buzzing of a swarm of bees, intermingled with a few sharper notes. First it is buz-z-z-, then te-oo, very sharp. Intermingled with these is the sharp click when a bullet strikes a tree. Of course there is nothing very pleasant in the sound, but after a man gets used to it, he can listen to it with great composure, and I troubled myself as little as possible about the 'humming birds' as the men call them.

We kept on the retreat as fast as possible, the road being filled with artillery and infantry, wounded men on litters, and wounded men supported by their comrades. I do not want to see such a sight again.

That night we got over the Chickahominy and by midnight we went into park somewhere [Trent's Farm] near Weeden's remaining three pieces and three caissons. Scott and I lay down side by side, on a pile of hay, and I slept sweetly till long after daylight.

The next day, June 28th, with the remains of our Battery, we commenced our march, with the retiring army, towards



James River; other Divisions covering our retreat and fighting all the way.

I hear that the Irish Brigade drove the rebels back into the woods, spiked, buried, and otherwise disabled our guns (left on the field) and held the ground till everything had crossed, when they came over and blew up the bridge. About noon that day (28th) we heard an explosion, and an immense cloud of smoke announced the destruction of our bridges over the Chickahominy. A large house near us was used as a hospital, and the grounds all round were covered with wounded men. Lt. Mortimer, a fine fellow, 1st Lt. of Martin's Battery was in the house dying from a bullet wound. [Caleb C. E. Mortimer see p. 56 "In Sixty-One."]

In the afternoon we started and marched to Savage's Station on towards the James River. Troops, baggage teams &c. crowded the roads.

At sunset we camped in a very pleasant spot on top of a hill. Close by was a beautiful house and grounds but as usual orders came not to touch the fences. I am happy to state, however, that by the next morning all the rails in our vicinity had disappeared, carried off *probably* by some of the infantry regiments, as it would have been my duty to stop any of our men. Here we found our wagons again and slept under a tent, and washed our faces.

The next morning (29th) we again took up our line of march. As yet we knew nothing of our destination. The country was new, and had evidently not been traversed much by troops. The roads were excellent and we kept right on.

Still in our rear, though intermittently, the firing went on, but we cared nothing for that. At 9 in the evening we reached our camp, pitch dark, so I cannot describe the locality. Our wagons had now fallen to the rear, so we spread our blankets and turned in. The next morning, June 30, 1862, we started before daylight and with frequent halts kept on our way. About noon we crossed a large wheat field, and then crossed a still larger field on a high table land, and came in sight of the James River."



## THE LAST STAND.

FROM SCOTT'S NOTES.

"The morning of the 27th of June (1862) opened beautifully. Brightly the warm sun began its course, to go down scarcely seen through the smoke and dust of the battle that would be raging.

The Divisions and Brigades of General Porter's Corps were moving past to the last stand and line of battle down the river.

All the other Corps of the Army had crossed the river to the south side. The 5th only remained on the north side for it could not cross in the face of the enemy. Back of the river flats the country was rolling, with more or less woods; the depressions between the hills were favorable for the enemy to form their lines out of sight.

The Left of our line of battle was less than  $\frac{1}{2}$  a mile from the river, at the thin edge of a skirting line of woods that bordered a small stream running east and west to the river, in a depression which would be a rushing torrent after an hour's rain, but now nearly dry. A temporary log bridge crossed near this point where most of the Corps had passed.

The line of battle following the Creek a short distance east, curved to the south, passing swampy ground at the centre, then curving west to the river where the Right of the line rested, thus forming a semi-circle. Behind the line of battle formed, was an undulating open country to the river, which was crossed by three narrow bridges, one of them, called the Grape Vine bridge, being held in place by ropes made fast to trees up stream. The approaches to one of these bridges was nearly 1400 yards long.

The Battery took up its line of march about 9 o'clock from near the Gaines house, moving down the river, and going into battery covering the rear guard.



Once on its way all was silence, except the firing of the rebel skirmishers driving in our Pickets.

Limbering up our guns we crossed the log bridge, the last battery to cross, and soon the bridge was taken up and destroyed. Going into battery on low ground near a peach orchard in rear of the line of battle, we could not see the movement of troops on our Right, nor the brigades on our Left Front, as Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades were beyond the wood, the extreme Left of the line on lower ground. Following the creek they had felled trees, and formed what protection they could to shield themselves from the enemy's fire.

The line of battle formed extended a mile and a half or more, held by Fitz John Porter's Corps of 30,000 men. Early in the fight he called for reinforcements which were not promptly sent.

The rebels proved to have had more than double that number.

At this point we waited.

Being on the Left of the Battery I hardly knew what was going on at the Right. The sun poured down upon us in force, and while here the U. S. mails were distributed, and many read letters from home and friends for the last time.

Meantime the enemy were forming their lines around the 5th Corps. They thought they had us in a trap. Spent bullets came dropping on the sand, raising a puff of dust, the patient horses pricking up their ears and shaking their heads.

Still we ate our hard-bread and drank our hot water. Not a breath of air was stirring, and two miles away, across the river, the smoke and dust of the fierce battle raging could be seen during that afternoon, but not a gun was heard by the rest of the army at that distance.

About 12 o'clock General Daniel Butterfield of the brigade came down the slope to my section, and wanted me to train one of my guns to fire over the skirting of woods before





which his brigade was located. I said that the ground rose so rapidly that in firing it at so high an elevation we might find it on the ground.

He wanted to sight the gun himself, and the gun being trained to suit him, he commenced its elevation. At that moment 'the ball opened,' and he left suddenly, as the rebels were charging his brigade. The rebel batteries opened on the Right, throwing a raking fire through the woods, in front of which his brigade was located with the infantry which had commenced firing. We could hear the quick popping of a rapid firing gun. We had seen this gun before. It was fixed on a tripod, and by turning a crank it spit out bullets, and was supposed to annihilate anything in its front. The rebels captured it before the fight was over.

An order came to Lt. Hyde to send up one gun. Why the whole battery was not sent up I never knew. The Lieutenant ordered me up with the left gun of my section. Away we went and took our position at the edge of the wood. We could not see the brigade below us, but could see the rebels through the woods and brush, moving for a charge. We opened fire and plied them well with our one gun.

No artillery was to the left of us nor could we see the army to our right: the peach orchard seemed to cover us. The noise from the rebel batteries raking the woods, together with the fire of musketry, was terrific.

A second charge by the rebels on Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades, was repelled, then came a lull in front, the firing had swept to the Right of the line of battle.

I was ordered back to the rest of the Battery down the slope. We had taken our place with the Battery but a short time, when Longstreet, who had reformed his lines with fresh troops came on again.

Four guns were ordered up. We limbered up the Left Section, and away we went to the woods, followed by the Centre Section, Lt. Phillips, who took position on our right. These four guns were not idle. It would be hard to explain



one's feelings at such a moment, but we felt that as long as we were not hit we were not hurt, and every one worked to do his best now we had the chance.

Through the woods we could see only parts of the rebel lines. If we did not cut some of them down we did the small trees in our front, as they fell as if cut with a scythe.

Charge after charge was repelled by the brigade in front of us, but human endurance could not withstand the more than double force pitted against us. Our brigades were exhausted, ammunition gone, and all the Reserves had been thrown into the fight.

The left of Martindale's Brigade had been turned and the rebels were flanking us.

We kept up our fire with the guns unaware of what had happened. Enveloped with smoke we could not tell what was going on far from us.

At this point the infantry of our brigade came struggling up between our guns.

Anxious to know how the fight was going on I said to a soldier:

'What's the trouble below?'

'Trouble enough,' he said. 'The rebels are crossing the ditch on our right.'

Looking to our left we saw an officer mounted on a stone heap waving a flag. He cried out: 'For God's sake, men, stand by your colors!'

It was of no use, men were moving stubbornly off to the rear, and soon after as we moved down the slope, the brigade, what was left of them, had melted away, and I do not remember to have seen a Union soldier.

We received orders to retire in haste, which we did. Limbering up our guns with Phillips leading, we moved quickly down the slope to where we had left the Right section of the Battery, unaware that the guns were in the hands of the enemy.



To my surprise, Lt. Phillips as he came up with the Right section continued on at a trot. He had taken in the situation. As my section came on, I saw something was wrong with the guns, but I passed quickly by. Phillips still leading passed to the right of a foot hill which formed the last stand of the Corps at night, thus exposing our flank to the enemy, who were now near the bridge we had crossed in the morning.

Moving in this line, I was amazed to see the right piece of my section going pell mell past the left of the hill into a hollow below. Leaving my left piece to follow Phillips I turned about to look it up, passing near the guns already captured. Then I saw our plight. Overtaking the gun, which was but a short distance ahead, I saw it was fast stuck in a ditch. The situation looked anything but pleasant. In front of us, on the last rise of ground before reaching the river, was posted a line of artillery, throwing their united fire into the rebel lines. Their shot were flying in range of my head. I dismounted, choosing a lower elevation. Looking back to where the Right section had stood, we saw the guns had been turned towards us, the rebel colors flying over them, and their lines forming away to their Left. Not far from us in front of their lines was a piece of rebel artillery, which the drivers had driven over a bluff, and which seemed to be thrown into a confused heap. I thought their condition was even worse than ours. Why we were not molested while in the ditch I do not know, but suppose with their success so far, they felt sure of our capture. They could easily have shot the horses, but so sure were they that we were fast, doubtless they preferred live horses to dead ones. It was death or capture to us if we remained, but with a final effort, the gun came out of its bed, and we lost no time in moving but a short distance up between the guns of the posted artillery, where we again went into action. [See p. 340 Serg't Wilson.] If any one wants to live a lifetime in



a few moments, he must be placed, as we were, between the fire of two contending armies!

Leaving my sergeant in charge of the gun, I rode to the rear in search of my left piece. Here was 'confusion worse confounded.' I found Phillips and Hyde with the men of the Battery dismayed but not discouraged. We could not do more than we had done. The rebels with their superior force and flushed with victory, had driven the forces of Porter to the river. Cavalry were stationed with drawn swords to prevent the panic stricken men and teams from blocking the bridge.

About sunset the Irish Brigade, with other troops, crossed the bridge to the support of the Fifth Corps, and night coming on the Corps was saved from a complete rout.

Never was night more welcome. I can never forget the scene as we viewed it that sultry afternoon.

I learned from Lt. Phillips that after I left him near the foot of the hill, the enemy had a flank fire on him from the woods vacated by our brigade. His horse was shot from under him and the horses of two pieces shot, and the guns had to be abandoned.

My left piece was lost. I gave my sergeant credit for saving my right piece in taking the course he did, had he followed me with Phillips, which was his duty to do, the fate of the gun and ourselves might have been far different. My right piece joining us, between us we had two guns left, and strange as it may seem we had not lost a man of the Centre or Left sections. The men did their duty manfully.

Lt. Hyde reported that the enemy came down through the peach orchard on his two guns, and he only had time to fire one round when he was overwhelmed. Corporal Milliken and Edward Gustine of New Bedford, were killed at their posts. Five men were taken prisoner, three of them badly wounded, the rest escaped, taking sponge staffs with them.





As we waited near the bridge at dark for a chance to cross the Chickahominy, we were a sorry set. We had fought our first battle, when would the next one be? Men had done their duty, and we did not feel that we were entirely responsible for our loss of guns, but the artilleryman's defence is his guns, and their loss is deeply felt.

Why we met with no loss in our first engagement at the first line of battle, was that no artillery in front was posted; the flanking fire we received from their batteries passed harmless over our heads, in fact the noise of our own was so heavy that we did not notice the shrieking noise they had caused in their flight through the woods. The brigade being below us the enemy's infantry fire was against them; the woods and the orchard protected us. If we had been in view as the enemy passed us beyond the orchard we would likely have been captured where we stood. The Fifth Corps lost 24 guns. One of Martin's guns was capsized, crossing the bridge, bottom up, and had to be abandoned. They also lost three of their caissons, the horses being killed. His 1st Lt. (Mortimer) was taken across the river wounded, and died the next day. Five thousand prisoners were taken by the enemy and nearly four thousand were killed and wounded on our side.

The rebel loss in killed exceeded ours.

Demoralization seemed to possess all, but it is remarkable how soon men recover from such scenes.

The Fifth Corps crossed the river during the night, the bridges were blown up and destroyed, and the enemy were left to count their spoils.

Dr. Gaines was kind enough to say that he would willingly give his whole farm as a burial place for Yankee soldiers.

On the morning of the 28th, (June, 1862,) the Battery took up its line of march with the 5th Corps, passing Savage's Station, where the fields around were covered with the wounded from the previous battle, and the corps of



surgeons were doing their best to relieve suffering humanity. It was a gruesome sight to us, and we felt thankful we were not numbered with them. The Battery moved on, not knowing where we were going. It was rumored that McClellan was making a 'masterly retreat' to the James River.

As the 5th Corps had been so roughly handled it was put on the advance, while the other Corps were left to bring up the rear with a victorious army soon in pursuit.

Passing through White Oak Swamp, the Corps moved as rapidly as the roads would permit, the way being lined with baggage teams, droves of cattle, and artillery; the enemy attacking our flank whenever they could get a chance. We saw no enemy near us in this movement, but often heard cannonading at different times at various points.

Camping one night in a large opening with the Corps, with teams in harness, we sought sleep on the ground. No lights were permitted. We eat our 'hard tack' but not much sleep did we get. The night was black, with heavy claps of thunder, and sharp flashes of lightning. The enemy were said to be near us. Some army mules stampeded; a mule flying through the Battery among the sleepers, a small panic ensued. Every one was on his feet, and a few shots were heard, but soon things quieted down and we tried to sleep again.

Nothing impeded our march, and the last day of June found the 5th Corps camped on Malvern Hill near the James River."

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. SCOTT.

FEB. 22, 1901.

"I had charge of the Left section that day, as Lieut. Dillingham was sick across the river. Lieut. Hyde's Right section was captured where it was placed in Battery.

I fired the first Gun of the Battery at Gaines Mills. On



the morning of the 27th I was ordered up to the woods with one Gun, and it was served the best we knew until ordered back to the Battery, by whom I do not know. I had no more than taken my place in the Battery, than Phillips and myself were ordered up with the two sections of the Battery. As I had been up on the line before, Phillips followed me, and went into position on my right. While here the rebels captured Hyde's two Guns, and when we were ordered to the rear Lieut. Phillips led, and I followed. As we came to Hyde's Guns, the rebels had them. Phillips passed quickly by and my right piece being in the rear left Phillips' line and passed to the left and was stuck in the mud. Here is where I went back to see what had become of it. As I took in the situation, with the enemy's line of battle so near, I then thought the lives of the men were of more importance than the Gun. As I could not see how we could remain there 5 minutes, I told Serg't. Spear to take the horses and abandon the Gun, and left to look after my left piece, which I never saw. It was a miracle or Interposition of Providence that any of us escaped."

#### LETTER OF CORPORAL SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, JAMES RIVER,

16 MILES BELOW RICHMOND, VA.

Friday, July 4, 1862.

One week ago today the Right wing of Gen'l McClellan's Army before Richmond gave way at Mechanicsville before the Confederate Army, and came retreating down across Gaines Farm to the Chickahominy River.

Our Battery was ordered to the top of a high hill above a bridge to assist in covering the retreat of our Army. This hill was on the left of the Gaines house, near the river. The last to cross the bridge were two batteries of flying artillery, and after they had crossed, the bridge was torn



up, and we were ordered to 'Limber to the Rear' and retire. After retreating half a mile, we found our Division viz. Porter's, drawn up in line of battle in a dense wood, with a nice barricade in front of it, and everything in readiness to meet the Confederates' advance.

After passing through the woods, the order came 'Into Battery' and hold ourselves in readiness. We remained 'In Battery,' without firing a gun, until about 3 o'clock, when the rebels formed in line of battle and down they came upon us, both on our right and left. The second time they advanced the Left section was ordered into the woods, and we were soon in sight of the rebel line, and in a short time were throwing shot and shell amongst them.

Again the rebels were repulsed, for the second time, and we limbered up and went 'Into Battery' in our former position, but were not allowed to remain silent long, for in less than fifteen minutes they came down upon us with a double, aye, thrible force. Then the Centre section was ordered to move down into the woods; also, the left piece of the Left section, and all three pieces commenced firing shot and shell. The fight was general the length of our lines, and such a ring of artillery and musketry! Shall I ever forget it?

No: but it was no use, our troops gave way, and down came the Confederates upon our batteries. The 5th Mass. Battery was on the extreme left, and when our infantry line gave way in front of the three remaining pieces, we fired 2 rounds of double canister and were ordered to 'Limber to the Rear,' and save the Gun and ourselves if a possible thing, for the rebels were now only a few rods from us.

As the men of my Detachment were limbering up the gun, I could see the rebels advancing upon us with their little red flags to the front, and it was then that I put spurs to my horse and ordered the drivers on the Gun to do likewise and follow me. I took a quick glance over to my right where our artillery and infantry were fleeing, and I saw that





the road was completely choked up, and that if I wished to save the piece and the men's lives I must go in some other direction. So I started across the field, but had not gone more than 3 rods, before we landed in a deep ditch, and then the Lieutenant came up and ordered us to leave our piece and cut traces, as it was impossible, he said, to attempt to try and pull the piece out from the ditch. But instead of cutting the traces we started the horses up, and they becoming so terrified and frightened, as quick as lightning pulled the piece out, and were soon directly in front of our artillery, which had re-formed, and were blazing away at the rebels as they came down upon our retreating Division.

On reaching the hill where the line of artillery was formed, under command of Gen'l Charles Griffin, we were ordered to open upon the Rebs., and after firing ten or twelve rounds the order came for us to 'Limber up' and retreat; this being the second time within fifteen minutes, or perhaps less. And such a retreat! Everything was confusion, no regularity. Men, artillery, infantry and cavalry, all mixed up!

After retreating about half a mile they formed in line of battle, and we came 'Into Battery' again, and fired a few rounds. Then reinforcements came up and completely routed the rebels, and drove them back from the ground which they had gained within the short space of one hour.

That night we crossed the Chickahominy River and encamped, and the next morning I found the remnant of the Battery, and when we came to sum up what was left, ascertained that all our pieces were lost except Serg't. Blake's and mine; that 4 men were killed, 4 or 5 wounded, and about 30 horses killed and disabled.

There were two Quincy Boys in the fight, besides myself, —W. H. H. Lapham and H. E. Shaw. They both came out all right. Lapham was acting cannoneer, and Shaw was driving the pole horses on the piece which were shot from under him."



## NOTES OF LIEUT. SPEAR

JULY 24, 1901.

"The greatest credit for the saving of the Gun of which I was acting Sergeant, should be given Corporal Warren, Charles Jay leading Driver, the Swing Driver, I forget his name, and Brownell the Pole Driver, all of whom thought only of their favorite gun and its safety.

When we commenced to retire with our Gun the Confederates were at the Right piece of the Battery,—Corporal Milliken's Gun,—and had planted one of their battle flags on it, and as we left our position we were obliged to pass parallel with the guns left, and for a short time were not five hundred feet from the rebel skirmishers advancing."

## NOTES BY SERGT. E. T. WILSON.

With relation to the gun which was pulled out of the ditch, Sergt. Edward T. Wilson, who was No. 6 on the Gun that day, says in a note dated New Bedford, Mass., September 8, 1900:—

"It was the right piece of the Left section. Billy Warren, a Boston boy, was the gunner. The drivers, all but the one on the swing horses, remained by them. L. D. Brownell was on the pole. Charles Jay had the lead horses, and upon him a great deal depended. His horses got a footing on the other side of the ditch, and although the swing and pole horses were pretty well mixed up in the ditch, we managed to pull the old gun out. It was during this mix-up that Lieut. Scott ordered us to leave the gun. In scrambling across, Brownell fractured a bone in his right leg, one of his horses was hit by a Minie ball, which maddened the animal, and at one time it looked as though we would have to quit. But Brownell pluckily stuck to his horses, and, reaching firm footing, we made for a battery



that was located on a hill just ahead of us. It proved to be the Fourth Rhode Island, and reaching the hill we placed the gun in position and again began firing at the enemy.

This was one of the two guns which were saved, and nearly every man who was in that detachment was from New Bedford. William Warren was not a New Bedford man, and one other I do not remember about, whether he was from New Bedford or not, or what his name was.

At Savage's Station Brownell was sent on a hospital train for surgical aid, and with others was captured and placed in Libby Prison."

#### NOTES OF FRANCIS P. WASHBURN.

Francis P. Washburn, a driver on No. 6 gun, Sergt. Harrison O. Simonds, the left piece of the Left section, every horse attached to which was killed, obliging the men to seek a place of safety with all possible speed, recalls in Notes written in New Bedford Mass. October 9, 1900, a remark of General Fitz John Porter in relation to the loss of the guns of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

Washburn was sick but on duty all through the Seven Days' Battles. A man was not sick in those days as long as he could sit in a saddle or stand on his feet. During the inspection that followed at Harrison's Landing he was sitting with the sick and wounded under a tarpaulin put up for shelter, and when General Porter came to them, he as well as the other officers dismounted before a group of officers and men,—“General Porter,” writes Washburn, “was a man among men,”—and, among other things, the General said—“If I could have sold all my guns at the price paid for those four, I would have been in Richmond tonight.”

A day or two later, Washburn was sent to the General Hospital at Harrison's Landing, and was subsequently put on board the hospital ship “S. R. Spaulding,” and taken to



the Episcopal Hospital in Philadelphia. Afterwards he returned to the Battery.

#### LETTER FROM SERG'T. PELEG W. BLAKE.

"JAMES RIVER July 4, 1862.

17 MILES BELOW RICHMOND.

I wrote three letters on the 26th, but could not send them, for we were ordered to Old Church. Our forces let the rebels cross the river 12,000 strong at Mechanicsville, and our troops fell back to Dr. Gaines's plantation, where we were encamped—our Right wing. Two-thirds of our army were across the Chickahominy. Porter's Division and McCall's 30,000 engaged 70,000 under the rebel general Jackson. The rebel general Jackson is said to have been shot.

I have been in my saddle for eight days and nights, only getting about two hours sleep at midnight. The battle commenced the 26th when we were ordered out. It was a strategic movement to fall back and join the main army across the river.

Our Battery guarded the bridge at Dr. Gaines's till the last thing crossed the stream, and that was the mounted artillery. The bridge was then destroyed and we limbered up, and crossed another stream, and then we had to hold our position; this being the 27th day of June. At 3 o'clock they attacked General Porter's Division, and General McCall's Division, 30,000 troops.

Three times we drove the rebels.

Every time the rebels came up they had fresh troops, every time filled with whiskey and gunpowder, drunken devils, but we mowed them down by the thousands. The fourth time they came up the whole force of the rebels, 70,000 strong against 30,000 of ours, was a hard struggle.

They turned our Left flank where our Battery was, and





our troops had to fall back, but we stayed a few minutes too late and lost four pieces, that were close to the woods, of our Battery, within 100 feet of the rebels. Our horses were shot down so we had to leave four of our pieces.

I came into Battery and fired three shots after the other pieces left, but my horses did not happen to be shot, and I was the only sergeant of our Battery who saved his piece that afternoon, but 2 o'clock at night Serg't. (Charles H.) Morgridge's piece in charge of Corporal Spear came up, so we had two pieces, out of six, left.

I lost two men of my Detachment, Edward F. Smith and Richard Heyes, Englishmen, who worked in the Wamsutta mills [in New Bedford] 'dresser tenders.'

[The following marked "Continued, 3d page" though found detached among Lieut. Blake's papers is presumed to be a continuation of the foregoing:—]

As I came down the hill the rebels had planted their flag on the hill and were firing down upon us. The whole six pieces started: one went one way and one another, and so did the whole six. I happened to see the right way, but four of them were run up to a deep ditch, and drove into the ditch, and only one escaped.

Serg't. Page who followed me had his horses shot and lost his piece.

As I came down the hill one of my swing horses stumbled, throwing my swing driver 20 end over end down the hill, but I could not stop for him to mount, so I left him, and kept right along on the dead run, driving, dragging his nigh horse up on to his feet, I got towards the bottom of the hill.

General Butterfield says, 'For God's sake come into Battery and fire on that rebel flag!'

I says to the General, 'My men have all left me but the Gunner.'—

That was Corporal E. B. Nye, the fruit dealer who used to be on Second street (New Bedford), he is my Gunner



and he makes the best shot of any of the gunners in the Battery.

When reinforcements came from across the river our forces drove them the fifth time way past our camping ground. The stream or ditch ten feet deep in front of the woods where we were,—about a hundred feet through these woods,—was filled with rebels who were killed, so that they did not have to build any bridge to come across on, but we fell back and crossed the Chickahominy towards the James and joined the main army on the Left. The next day we started for the James."

#### NOTES OF LOUIS E. PATTISON.

Nov. 2, 1901.

"The Left section got across the run first, and the Centre and Right sections had to wait to cross, and the horses were shot in their tracks by the rebel infantry. The saving of the guns was simply accident, as every gun was limbered, but could not get over the run,—a dry water course 8 or 10 ft. deep and when they crossed filled up with rails.

Blake was all right, a brave and cautious man."

#### FROM CHASE'S DIARY.

"June 27, 1862. Packed up all our equipage and prepared to leave about 2.30 a. m. Were soon ready and left our bivouac and proceeded to the brow of the hill just in the rear of the camp we left yesterday to cover the retreat of our forces. Placed our guns 'In Battery' and remained there till all the artillery had crossed the millstream and destroyed the bridge. Cannonading and musketry commenced again this morning at daylight. The enemy's firing sounds nearer and nearer and their battery of 32 pdrs. throws several shots at us but made wild shots.

After the bridge was destroyed we limbered up and went



about half a mile farther to the rear and placed our guns 'In Battery' on the brow of a hill, and changed our position several times on the same ground.

The enemy gradually advanced and drove in our skirmishers and charged on our front at least three times and were repulsed.

The infantry felled the trees in front of us to prevent the advance of the enemy's artillery and cavalry. Our infantry met and repulsed the enemy in the woods in front of us.

Our batteries and guns from the forts of General Smith's Division shelled the enemy vigorously, and the enemy's shot and shell struck all around us; musket balls whizzing like bees over and round us, and a spent ball hit the writer's elbow—and brought home.—The Left section advanced and fired canister into the enemy when they made their second charge on our front.

About 6 p. m. the enemy again rallied, and attacked us on the front and left and an awful battle ensued. The infantry checked them for a while, and in the mean time the Left and Centre sections took a new position at the edge of the wood behind the infantry, and commenced firing shrapnell at the enemy with one second fuze, and at last the infantry in front of us began to yield to the enemy's murderous fire, and a general and most disorderly retreat commenced. We poured the shrapnell into the enemy until they were almost upon us, then limbered up and drove off.

The enemy closely followed up our retreating army, and kept up a most destructive fire, which made great havoc with our forces. Horses and guns were left, and the whole army was panic stricken.

Many of our horses were shot and four guns left on the field. The whole of the retreating army crossed the Chickahominy, and the fragments of the different regiments and batteries bivouacked near General McClellan's headquarters on the south side of the river. . . . All the caissons



were sent across the Chickahominy early in the afternoon, and were all saved.

June 28, 1862. Another false alarm in camp tonight caused by some loose horses running about camp. Bugles were blown and the infantry ordered in line to repulse the supposed guerillas. It proved only a 'scare' and soon all was again quiet.

A false alarm in camp this morning occasioned by the infantry firing their guns previous to cleaning them. Left camp about 12.30 p. m. with the *remains* of our Battery, and marched about eight miles towards the James River."

#### NOTES OF PRIVATE LOUIS E. PATTISON.

OCT. 1, 1901.

"At the battle of Gaines Mills the Battery was placed in position on a knoll, with General Daniel Butterfield's Penn. Reserves in the woods directly in front. To get to this position a bridge was made over a run, or dry water course, with a rail fence, only wide enough for one team to cross at a time, which as we were to fall back behind another line of battle on a hill in our rear, showed gross negligence either of our own officers or some one higher in command.

When the time came our Battery commenced firing, and very soon the Reserves commenced falling back through our guns, saying that we were shelling them, and they were followed up by the enemy, and as the enemy came out of the woods we gave them three or four rounds of canister, and then came orders—'Limber to the rear,' and all the guns were limbered and getting out of position as fast as possible, but the enemy followed up so quickly that only two guns got over the run and were saved, the other four being captured, some, if not all, being spiked.

The right detachment under Sergt. Wm. B. Pattison had a hard time, nearly all the men being killed, wounded or captured. Lieut. Phillips had command of our section.





Mason W. Page was serg't. of our detachment, William H. Baxter gunner, and George O. Proctor, Louis E. Pattison and Amos Blanchard drivers on gun in the order named. The outcome of the loss of their guns was the resignations of Lieuts. Hyde and Dillingham, leaving only Lieuts. Phillips and Scott."

#### NOTES OF D. HENRY GROWS.

"Friday, June 27, 1862. Went on post at 2 this morning. At 3, an order came to pack up and fall back to a hill in the rear of our old camp. Arrived there at about half past 4, and went into battery, with orders that as soon as our flying artillery passed the bridge to tear it up and open on the rebels with shrapnell and canister. After waiting two hours the artillery passed. We then tore up the bridge and waited for the rebels, but they did not make their appearance. So we limbered up and fell back about 1½ miles, and went into battery. In about an hour the 'Secesh' opened on the Right, but were repulsed, in this way: they tried the Centre and Left, but could not break them. About 5 this afternoon they received fresh troops, and threw them on to the Left where we were stationed. For three times they tried us, and were driven back, but at the fourth time they turned our Left, and we opened upon them with canister, our troops falling back all the while. The last round we fired was at 35 yards, a double charge of canister. It mowed their ranks awfully. The order came to limber up and fall back. We did so, but they were close upon us. We lost four of our pieces and twenty-five horses. Three of our men were shot dead: Charles Barnard, Corporal Miliken, and E. F. Gustine. Seven others are either killed or taken prisoners. The bullets flew like hail. I kept up with the gun till I was knocked down by a rail into a deep ditch. I was helped out, and kept on my way looking for the caissons that were in the rear. I soon found them and



sat down to rest. Saw James Tuttle: he was safe. Harry Simonds lost his piece, and was struck with a piece of shell.

About 8 o'clock we crossed the Chickahominy, and laid ourselves down to sleep.

I received a letter from my wife today during the battle!

Saturday, June 28, 1862. Got up feeling very sore, had some water to drink. I was awfully dry. My face and hands are black with powder and sweat, and I have no chance to wash.

About 8 this morning we fell back about a mile, and there found two of our guns; the other four having been taken by the rebels. Most all the men are tired out. The buildings near by are used for hospitals, and are filled with the wounded. It is an awful sight. About noon we hitched up and fell back. At Savage's Station there were a great many cars loaded with the wounded who are being moved away. The roads are lined with sick and stragglers. Got into camp about 11 o'clock. Was routed out at 3 o'clock in the morning."

Reviewing this Diary in Charlestown, Mass., October 1, 1900, Grows added the following:—

"There is one thing I did not mention: It was how the gun I worked on at Gaines Mills was saved. A bullet struck the right wheel horse, while the gun was stuck in a rut, the pain caused the horse to jump to the right, and the driver struck the off horse, and the wheels of the limber were free. And so we got out of a bad place."

#### NOTES OF CHARLES D. BARNARD.

FEBRUARY 1, 1901.

"I was wounded at Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862. While trying to save the gun we held, we got into the woods. The Confederates had charged 3 times on us before they got the gun. When Corporal (Albert F.) Milliken sent up the last charge to the gun, he sent word to the gunner Corporal (Charles)



Macomber, that that was all the canister he had. Corporal Macomber told us that when we had fired he should give the order 'by hand to the rear,' as we only had one horse standing, he being the high pole horse, the other 5 horses were down, having been shot.

As soon as we had fired, the order was given:—

'By hand to the rear!'

We each sprang to our posts.

No. 1, between the Wheel and Gun.

No. 2, opposite, between the Wheel and Gun.

No. 3, grabbed the Wheel.

No. 4, the opposite Wheel.

The rest of the gunners ran to the trail.

No. 2, William H. Ray had a ball pass through him.

No. 3, was myself. The ball entered the right thigh coming out  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch from the spine. The force of the ball threw me over the trail into No. 4 man's place. I got up standing on one leg, and said to Corporal Macomber:—

'They have shot my right leg off, Charley!'

At that William Ray came running up with a sponge staff, and Corporal Macomber said:—

'Billy, you are wounded.'

Billy said no, but upon unbuttoning his jacket the blood began to show, and Billy says:—

'They can't have this sponge staff to use on us.'

This was the only sponge staff we had left. So he took it, and when he came to the ditch in going to the rear, he made 3 pieces of it and threw it into the ditch.

Then Corporal Macomber came to me, and I threw one arm over his neck and he tried to take me to the rear, and as we were trying to go to the rear he said to me:—

'Help yourself all you can, Charley, for there lays poor Corporal Milliken.'

We both looked down on him. The ball had struck him in the head, killing him instantly. There was no mark of



blood on him. Corporal Macomber and myself were the 2 last men of our Battery that ever saw Corporal Milliken.

We had not gone 50 feet from him when a ball struck me in my left foot and stopped under my knee, the force of the ball throwing me out of Corporal Macomber's arms to the ground. He bent over me and said:—'Charley, I am going to throw you over my shoulder.'

I said, 'No, Charley, there is only one of us to be killed, and I am that man. You run around the foot of the hill, under the protection of our heavy guns that are on the hill.'

'No,' he says, 'I am going to shoulder you.'—

I fainted away from the loss of blood, and he got to the Battery and reported me killed.

#### WITHIN THE ENEMY'S LINES.

The first sound I heard was,—

'Don't tread on that man!'

I looked over my shoulder, and saw coming towards me a solid line of Confederates, and as they came up to me they opened enough to pass me. Not a man touched me. In a short time the stragglers began to come back. I was choking, and as they came near me I begged for water. Some of them said they had no water; others took no notice of me; others cursed me. At last when I did not care what they did to me, a very tall Confederate came along, and said he had no water, but would give me some whiskey and water. He knelt down and passed me his canteen, and said 'Drink all you want.' A little seemed to quench my thirst. I told him I was a thousand times obliged to him, that was all I could do, but he said that was not all I could do, I could 'the first time I had a chance do the same thing.'

I shall never forget his words and have tried to do so. I lay where I fell the second time about 2 hours, then a Confederate officer and a Private came along. The officer said to me—'Come, get up!'





I said 'I can't. I am wounded in both legs.'—He said, 'You can't play any of your Yankee tricks on me. If you don't get up, I will cut you down.'

I told him if he would give me 2 sticks I would try to walk, but I put one arm on each of their shoulders, as the Private asked me to, and they carried me through the gap where we had repulsed them 3 times that they had charged on us, into the yard where there was a large house, and as we entered the yard there was a number of Confederates making coffee. They began to make fun of me and I answered them back. Then it was the Private who was helping me told me to take all that they might say, for I was a prisoner and it was better not to answer back.

I thanked him and afterwards found out that he was right. They laid me under a tree and a doctor came and put some cotton in my wound near my spine, and put a bandage round me. In a few minutes the bandage was up under my arms. He said he would come in the morning and take off my leg.

#### THE RED BLANKET.

I was cold, and asked a Confederate if he had a blanket he would lend me. He said 'yes,' if I would give it to him the next morning. I told him I would, so he lent me one. Next a man came along and wanted to know who wanted water. I did, and had found a canteen, and he took it, filled it, and brought it back to me. I then dropped off to sleep, and in the morning when I awoke I saw that I had a red blanket. I looked it over, and found the name of Serg't. William B. Pattison sewed on it! When the Confederate called for his blanket, I told him that it was one of my Serg't's blankets. He said,—'You promised to give it to me this morning.'

I told him that I should do as I told him I would, and he took it, and I don't know as I ever saw him again. They



gave us that morning for breakfast boiled rice, and it did taste good. About 8 or 9 in the morning, an old man with long, white hair came and sat down and commenced to talk with me. He asked me where I was wounded, and I told him. He asked me how my leg felt, and I told him it felt 'queer.' I could not move my foot, and it felt like a foot that was 'asleep'; kind of prickly. He then told me he was a doctor, and asked me what I was going to do. I told him I had asked the doctor to take it off for me, but he advised me not to have it taken off, and asked me if I wanted to go home. I said yes, as I was no good to the army now. 'Then,' he said, 'tell them when they come after you that you have concluded not to have it done, and they won't take it off. It is better than a wooden leg, and if they take it off, they have got to unjoint it at the hip, as it will do no good to take it off below the wound.'

He then said that the ball had cut the leaders to my foot, which caused the foot to drop, and had injured the sciatic nerve, which caused paralysis, and that it would always trouble me, that many times I would be hurrying along and would stub my toe, as the foot had dropped and caused me to fall. This I have done a great many times. He said,— 'You may think it strange for me to give you advice, but if you ever want to go home don't have your leg taken off, for there is only one chance in a thousand of your living.'

I took his advice, and his words have proved true in regard to my leg.

#### THE DEATH OF PRIVATE GUSTINE.

Soon after he left me, one of our own surgeons came along and said to me:—

'One of your boys is over there.'

'What is his name?' I asked. He said he did not know but would go and see. He came back and said his name was Gustine. I raised myself up on my elbow and asked Gustine



how he was wounded. 'O, Charley. I am wounded through my left lung. I can't stand it a great while.'

'Don't give up so,' I said, but he answered:—'O, Charley, I'm a goner. I can't talk any longer.' He laid down and I never saw him again to talk with him. The next day I saw 2 men carrying an artilleryman into the next field to bury him. I think it was—poor Gustine.

### TALKING IT OVER.

That day a Confederate came and sat down by me and said:—

'Well, Yank, what do you think of the war?'

'Well,' I said. 'Did you start it?'

'No.'

'Neither did I. Can you stop it?'

'No.'

'Neither can I. You won't agree with me?'

'No.'

'Neither will I with you. Now we are good friends, what is the use of our arguing the question? Neither you nor I can stop it.'

'You're right,' he said, and from that time out, as long as he was there, he would come every day and ask me to lend him my pipe. He kept me in tobacco as long as he was there. I was then moved into the cellar of the house, and put into a little room with 2 others. One man's name was Smith. He belonged to a New York regiment. He was terribly wounded, and kept calling for his wife and children all the time. They came after him to take off his legs a number of times, and he would keep putting them off, saying, 'Let me lay a little longer, please, I am so comfortable.' At last two attendants came in and said 'The Doctor says bring you, dead or alive.'

'Well, please give me a drink of water.'

They gave him water, he drank a little, and then for the



first time in my life I heard the death rattle. They carried him out.

### HANDY WITH HIS NEEDLE.

I lay in that cellar 3 days. Then they took me out, and laid me under a tree on the other side of the house, where I heard 2 Confederates talking about the poor fellows who had legs and arms taken off, how they suffered pain and had nothing to rest the stumps on. I called them and told them if they would bring me some old bags so I could cut them up into smaller ones, or some cloth, so I could make some small bags out of that, they could stuff them with grass, and they could lay their stumps on them and it would ease the pain. They did, and I made a number of them. I made the bags for Confederates as well as Union men. I, being a harness maker, was handy with my needle, and I always carry my thimble in my pocket, even today. I still have my needle-book that I carried with me in my jacket pocket.

I enlisted as an artificer, and when we were in Washington, encamped on Capitol Hill, the paymaster came and said that the Government only allowed 2 artificers, a blacksmith and a harness-maker, and as I was the second one to enlist as a harness-maker, I could take my discharge and go home. But I preferred to stay, so asked Serg't. (O. B.) Smith if I could have No. 3 man's place on the gun, which he gave me.

I was the first man wounded in the Battery, and the first badly wounded man to return to New Bedford.

### TO RETURN TO THE PRISON YARD.

Next a very tall Confederate came to me, and said:—  
'Yank, where did you enlist?'

I told him I enlisted in New Bedford, but I was a Nantucket boy.





'New Bedford? Why, I used to be a coaster, and I have been there.'

He then told me all about that city, and how pretty it looked at night all lit up, as you come up the river. Every day, as long as I was there at Gaines Farm, he would come along and put something under my blanket and say, 'Don't touch that till after I am away.' I would find either crackers, or a piece of 'salt horse' as we used to call corned beef.

### THE NO. 1 GUN.

There was on the day of the Malvern Hill fight, a little boy came and said to me,—'You ones will be taken back before long, for you ones are driving our men. What gun was that that held the gap in the woods?'

I told him it was No. 1 gun of the Fifth Mass. Battery. I asked him how they got by that gun, and these are exactly his words:—

'General Jackson rode up and asked the general in command "Why don't you go on?" The general answered "I can't. I have got a piece of artillery I can't pass. I have charged three times on it, and have been repulsed each time."

Jackson told him to 'Charge, Halt, Fire, and then *Charge in your smoke!*'

By charging before the smoke rolled away their advance was unobserved, and that is how No. 1 gun was lost.

### THE CORN-POPPER.

'How is it?' asked the little boy, 'You ones kill our men and we only wound yours. You ones did not play it on we uns did you? You ones left a trap for us, but we did not touch it. What did you do with it? You ones came and took it away.'

It seems that it was what we boys used to call the 'Corn-



popper,' a gun that you put the cartridges into a hopper, and by turning a crank the cartridges would fall into the barrel of a rifle attached to it, and did good work. They thought it a trick we were playing on them, and did not dare go near it, and our men came and recovered it.

### A CONSULTATION.

While the boy and myself were talking, a number of officers rode into the yard and stopped a little way from where I lay and held a consultation. I should think they talked a half an hour or so, then they galloped off, some in one direction, some in another. In a little while from that they turned our men and won the day.

A soldier from a Maine regiment lay near me, and every morning he would ask me to lend him my testament which I did. One morning after he passed back my testament, some 'Johnnies' came along and began to plague him. He commenced to swear, and called them everything he could think of, and when he got them as mad as they could be, they threatened to kill him and he laid back and commenced to sing. Well, he was one of the best singers I ever heard, and after that they would come every day and stir him up, and it always ended in his singing.

### TO SAVAGE'S STATION.

We were put into army wagons and sent to Savage's Station where an officer came and asked what our names were. After that we were put on flats—such as we send wood into Boston on—and sent to Richmond. When the cars stopped, 2 Confederates came to the car where I lay, and asked me if I had anything to eat. I told them I had 2 hard tacks and that was all. They begged me to give them to them. I told them I would if I thought I could get anything to eat in the city. They said 'They will feed you ones when they won't feed us.' They said 'O, we are so hungry!'—



I told them I would give them one and keep the other for myself. When I opened my havresack I found I had 3 hard tacks, so I gave each one of them. They were mouldy, and wet, as it had rained hard all day, but you should have seen them eat, and then they begged for the other one. I told them I had done the square thing by them and wanted the other for myself. They said they knew it but they were so hungry. They did not take the one I had left, but thanked me for what I had given them. Soon 2 Confederates put me on a litter and carried me into the depot, laying me down on the narrow platform near the engine. When they had lain me down I found they had left my havresack and asked them to get it for me, offering them a ring I had on my finger if they would bring it to me, as I had my mother's and sister's pictures, and some few things I wanted to save. They went, and soon returned with it, and wanted to see the pictures. I showed them and then took off the ring and offered it to them. They were looking at the pictures, and when I offered them the ring they said, 'What do you take us for? Put the ring on your finger again.'

Soon a little boy came to me, about 12 years old, and said,—

'Soldier, what can I do for you?'

I had just had another hemorrhage and asked him to get me some cotton to stop it. He did, and then found me a small dry twig for me to keep the flies off. He then got me a fresh canteen of water. After that, every morning he would come and get me a fresh canteen of water. One morning he came and put his hand under my blanket and said 'Don't touch it till I am gone. It is something Mother sent, and there she is on the back of that car.'

I looked, and all I could do was to bow to her. After he had gone, I found a nice, clean, white crash towel, and while I was looking at it, an officer came up and wanted to know where I got that. I told him some one dropped it and I picked it up. He took it from me and when the boy came



again I told him, and he said, 'Some one told on Mother, yesterday, and she liked to got caught.'

The last morning he came he left something under my blanket and said 'Mother sent you that.' He said all the badly wounded were to be sent north, and the slightly wounded were to be sent to Belle Isle, and true enough about the middle of the forenoon they commenced to load up.

I heard an officer say 'Well, that's all.' I began to holler and the officer got mad, and told two men to 'take the fool and lug him off.'

They put me in an open wagon with springs under it. I made the 6th one. When the team got to the outskirts of the city, the driver turned round and said—'I am a Union man. I have got 2 boys down to the steamer looking out for good places for you.' He told us that they came after him to take us to the steamer, and he told them he would not take a Yankee in his wagon. He said they paid him \$10 a piece in Confederate money, to take us to the steamer.—'But,' he said, 'I would have taken all I could carry for nothing, only I dare not say so.'

On our way we went through a Confederate camp, and there was a bread cart standing near some tents. The teamster stopped his team and said he was going to buy some bread for us. While he was gone, an officer rode up and wanted to know where the driver was. I told him he was buying bread. He asked 'Are you hungry?'—I said 'No, my friend,' and he swore and said 'I am no friend to you.' He followed us almost to the boat. The driver gave us each a loaf of bread, and said the officer was watching him. He had a ten dollar U. S. bill and said he would give that for a picture of A. Lincoln, if either of us had one, but none of us had one. We finally reached the steamer, and as we got where we could see it and 'Old Glory,' what a shout went up! I could not keep back the tears, and great, stout men cried like babies to see the dear old flag again. One who





never was deprived of the sight cannot realize how good it is! The joy was beyond describing.

Well, true enough 2 stout young men came running up and said, 'Father, we have got some nice places for your men.' I was the last one to be taken out of the wagon, and I was placed in the gangway of the steamer. A man came in and sang out,—'Are there any Massachusetts men here?' I hollered out 'Yes, come here.'

He came and asked my name and put it in a little book. I asked him if he knew W. W. Caswell of the Fifth Mass. Battery. He said 'Yes.' I said 'Tell him that Charley Barnard is badly wounded, bound north.' He went to one of the streets of the Battery and hollered out:—'Does any one know Charley Barnard?' Ephraim B. Nye was writing a letter at that time to his wife. He stepped out of his tent and said,—'Yes, I know him.' He then gave him my message, and he wrote it to his wife, and that was the first that any one knew that I was living.

I was taken to Baltimore, put in the Hospital, No. 80 Camden St. One day a gentleman came in and looked at the card over my head and says—'From New Bedford?'—'Yes, sir.' 'Well,' he says, 'So am I, my name is Rodman (Edmund Rodman) and I am going back in a few days.'

Then I asked him if he would go and see my mother and tell her just how he found me. Some one had told her that I had had a large piece of my hip taken off, and they only took out about three inches. She was worrying about me. He went to see my mother and told her, and I never shall forget his kindness."

#### THE FIELD REVISITED.

In letters dated South Boston, September 24th and October 3, 1900, Corporal Thomas E. Chase thus refers to a recent visit to this battlefield:—

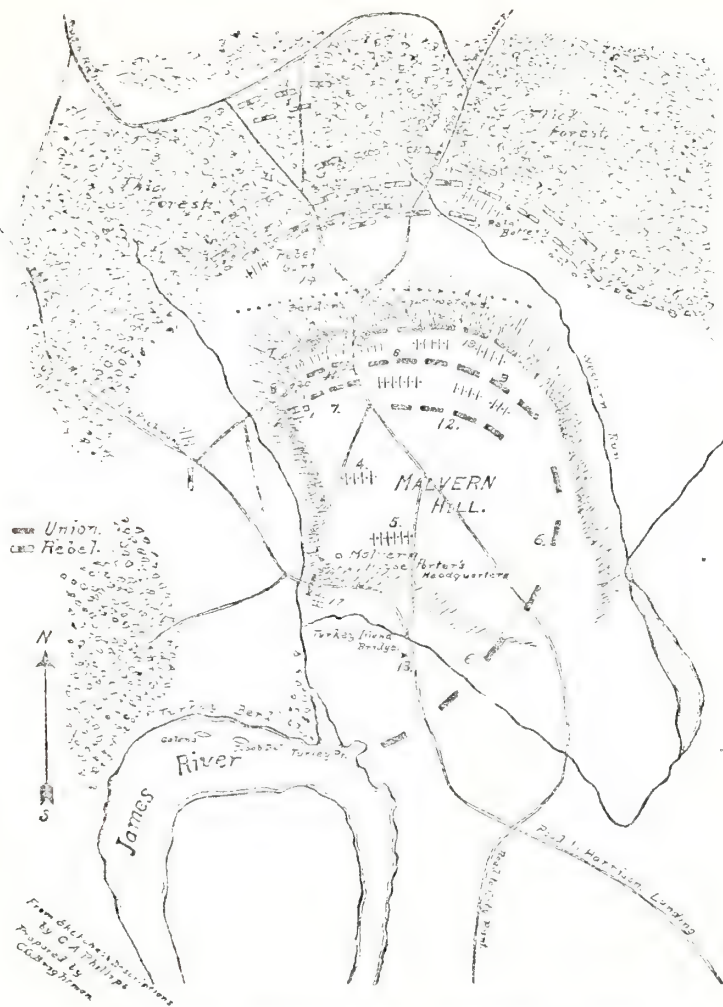
"I have just returned from Richmond, Va. and the old



battle ground of the seven days' fights. I could not make it seem possible, as I watched the farmer tilling the battle-fields, that the last time I was there all was the roar of artillery and the rattle of musketry. Strange thoughts came to me as I strolled over that quiet square mile of peace,—Gaines Mills,—with only seven people in sight, as I pointed out to wife and daughter where sixty-five thousand Confederates fought fifteen thousand of our men that sultry afternoon of June 27th, 1862, for Nature is doing her best to hide the scars and lines of battle, but I had no trouble finding our positions."



# MALVERN HILL.



1. Dr. J. H. Mallart's house, Headquarters of Gen. Morell. 2. Morell's and Griffin's position. 3. Sykes' position. 4. Hunt's Reserve Art. 5. Colonel Tyler's siege guns. 6. General Franklin's Command. 7. Gen. Porter's Command. 8-9. McIntosh's Kegs' Commands. 10. Couch's Command. 11. Gen. Martindale's Command. 12. Sumner's Command in Reserve. 13. Place where Gen. Morell's Command bivouached June 30, 1862. 14. Wheat fields. 15-16. Kingsbury's Ames's Batteries. 17. Martins. 18. Weedon's 1st position, 19. Weedon's 2nd position, also Kingsbury's. 20. Fifth Mass.



## CHAPTER XI.

### THE BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL.

JULY 1, 1862.

"Forget not our wounded companions who stood  
In the days of distress by our side;  
While the moss of the valley grew rich with their blood,  
They stirred not, but conquered and died."

—*Thomas Moore.*

It now became the duty of the Fifth Corps to guard the roads leading from Richmond toward the White Oak Swamp, over which they had passed on June 28, 1862, and on the next day to proceed to Turkey Bend on the James River, cover the Charles City road to Richmond, and open communication with the gunboats on the James.

Porter's orders were to move by the direct road to Malvern Hill, an elevated plateau a mile and a half long and about three quarters of a mile broad, free from any growth of timber. Towards the north and east it sloped gently till it reached a thick forest. On the west was a deep ravine running down to the James River. Along the front the land is uneven, making the hill difficult to approach except by roads built across the low places. Porter was to select and hold this position, continuing the line to the right. Time was lost by the guide mistaking the road, and the 1st Division did not reach James River until 10 a. m. of the 30th. The Divisions of Morell and Sykes were given the Left of the position, with Colonel Henry J. Hunt's Artillery Reserve and Colonel Robert O. Tyler's siege guns on Malvern Hill; Porter's command holding the Left and Left





Centre of our forces upon which the enemy made a most determined attack. This was successfully resisted by the infantry, which the superior position and strength of the artillery placed so as to sweep all the approaches, and, to some minds, the proximity of the gunboats, made invincible.

Brig. Gen. William F. Barry, in his account of the operations of the Artillery of the Army of the Potomac, from July 25th, 1861, to August 29, 1862, dated September 1, 1862, says:—

“For the artillery of the Army of the Potomac, it is but simple justice to claim that in contributing its aid to the other two arms, as far as lay in its power, it did its whole duty faithfully and intelligently, and that on more than one occasion, the Battle of Malvern Hill particularly, it confessedly saved the Army from serious disaster.”

If the “lay of the land” had been more in his favor McClellan might have here shown the advantage of the co-operation of the water with the land forces, as first suggested by him, and which he endeavored to demonstrate as soon as it was in his power.

Some time previous to this battle, he had consulted with Commodore John Rodgers, and it was supposed that he knew what position could be taken on the river, for conveniently opening fire upon the flank of the enemy attacking our forces at Malvern Hill.

General William B. Franklin held the Right resting on the James River, General Fitz John Porter the extreme Left: General E. D. Keyes and General S. P. Heintzelman the Centre, and General E. V. Sumner's Corps was in reserve.

The Right was to be supported by the gunboats “Galena” and “Jacob Bell,” the duty of whose 100-pounders it was to sweep the woods and prevent the advance of rebel reinforcements. But it has been confidently asserted that the co-operation of the gunboats at this point was of doubtful utility on account of the height of Malvern Hill, which obstructed the view of the troops from the river; in other



words the Hill was in the way. And yet, it would be hardly fair, perhaps, to say that the gunboats were of no advantage, especially as the victory was ours and nobody was to be blamed.

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, June 29, 1862. Packed up, and at 4 were on our way: went about 3 miles and stopped, on account of some trouble ahead. It is very hot. In about a couple of hours we got under way and went a short distance, when we stopped and rested till 4 o'clock this afternoon when we began the march again, and arrived in camp about 7, put up tents and turned in.

Monday June 30, 1862. Broke camp about 4 this morning and started to go ten miles to City Point on the James River, but did not go more than three, when we went into park on a place called Turkey Island, put up our tents in the edge of the woods and laid down. I am very hungry, for I have not tasted meat for a number of days.

I soon fell asleep and awoke to find that we were on the move again to get out of the way, as a battle was going to be fought. We moved about one mile. After getting there we rested a little. In a very short time the fight began, and never did I hear such noise!—the cannonading was awful. In about an hour the firing on the rebel side ceased."

General McClellan stayed with the Fifth Corps all night on the 30th and inspected the line at 8.30 next morning.

#### REPORT OF GEN. GEORGE W. MORELL.

General Morell's Report dated Harrison's Bar, Va., July 21, 1862, has the following:—

"At daylight on the 30th June, 1862, Monday, I started for Turkey Bridge and James River via the Quaker road and Malvern Hill, and bivouacked about 10 a. m. on the bank of the river below the bridge, but was soon recalled to Malvern Hill, as the enemy was approaching. . . . On the



west edge of the field, not far from the Richmond road, and overlooking the field and valley, is a large white house, Dr. J. H. Mellert's, which was my headquarters. My Division occupied the extreme left of the line, and in this field bore its part in the battle of Malvern."

General Charles Griffin was charged by General Fitz John Porter with a general supervision of the artillery line, in addition to the command of his brigade; Captain William B. Weeden retaining the immediate command of the artillery attached to the Division. In his report General Griffin, after designating the artillery engaged, says:—"The batteries were excellently served. The greatest coolness and bravery were displayed by officers and men, and my only regret, is my inability to mention the officers by name."

General Morell, in his acknowledgments for his indebtedness to certain officers, includes Captain Weeden whom he says "besides performing his peculiar duties, joined me whenever he could do so, and acted as one of my staff."

#### A RECENT COMPLIMENT.

In a letter dated Providence, R. I. September 19, 1899. Captain William B. Weeden says:—

"A section of the Fifth Mass. Battery under Lieut. Phillips, was posted next Battery C., R. I. then under my immediate command, in the heaviest shock of the battle of Malvern Hill. It did excellent service, both command and men."

#### REPORT OF GEN. JOHN H. MARTINDALE.

General John H. Martindale in his official account of the battle, after referring to the retirement of the rear guard of the day before, which left Porter's Corps and Couch's Division to cover the front, describes the conflict as "an affair of artillery," and proceeds to say,— "None of Porter's Corps had yet engaged the infantry. Couch, however, was



pressed severely on the right, but held his ground. I had encountered artillery before, but now it opened as I had never yet seen it. It was obvious that the whole Army of the Potomac was resting there for safety on the steadiness of the portion of it which was then confronting the enemy. I went along the line of my regiments, and told them my dispositions for battle, and reminded them that a retreat would be annihilation. It would be better to face the enemy to the last, than to retire,—that there was no Washington to fall back on as at Bull Run, no Chickahominy to cross as at Gaines Mills. We must be victorious or perish!"

FROM THE REPORT OF BRIG. GEN. DARIUS N.  
COUCH.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 5, 1862.

"At 9 o'clock [July 1, 1862] Berdan's sharpshooters were driven in. The rebels were driven off by artillery alone. From this time until about 1 p. m. the contest was on both sides in the hands of the artillerists; then they pushed forward a column to carry the Left of the line held by Griffin. They were driven back disorganized and cut up by our artillery alone. Their batteries played upon us without intermission, but owing to the care used in masking the men, our loss from it was not serious, with the exception of a battery to the right, that enfiladed my position. . . .

At about 4.30 p. m., after an incessant cannonade, they boldly pushed forward a large column from their Right in the open field to carry Griffin's position. The fire of three batteries was concentrated upon them. Kingsbury's [Battery D, 5th U. S.] battery having been withdrawn for ammunition, was relieved by three guns of Battery C, Rhode Island Artillery and two guns,—Allen's Fifth Massachusetts,—under Captain Weeden. The attacking column kept





on, continually reinforced until within range of Griffin's Rifles, when it was stopped and formed line.

From this time until 8 p. m. there was enacted one of the sublimest sights ever presented in war, resulting in a glorious victory to our arms."

The action now became general and General Couch assumed command of the entire line for the time, ordering up the reserves etc. etc.

"Night closed in upon us," he continues, "still fighting: the opposing forces only known by their lines of fire, that of the rebels gradually slackening until 8.30 p. m., after which an occasional cannon shot from our batteries only broke the stillness that pervaded this bloody field.

Thus ended the battle of Malvern Hill, which caused great carnage and demoralization among the best divisions of the enemy, with comparatively small losses on our side. . . . Having received orders from General McClellan to fall back, my troops were gradually withdrawn from the field. Captain Benson [Captain Henry Benson Battery M, 2d U. S.] who had relieved the Massachusetts and Rhode Island batteries after dark, left one section of his artillery. . . . Both armies retreated, the one because it was beaten, the other because it was a part of the plans of our general."

Powell's History says of Allen's [Fifth Mass.] and Weeden's [Fourth R. I.] Batteries:—"About 4 p. m. July 1st, [the hour at which the assault on Morell's lines was expected, information to that effect having reached Porter's Head Quarters.] the Fourth R. I. Battery [Weeden's] commanded by Lt. Richard Waterman, was withdrawn from the left, and later on, in connection with Lt. [John B.] Hyde's section of Allen's Battery, relieved Kingsbury's [Battery D, 5th U. S.] Battery, on General D. N. Couch's left, and rendered admirable service, having a whole company of experienced gunners to man his three guns."

At 4.30, McClellan came upon the field again to consult with Porter at his Head Quarters, the Malvern house. At



9 p. m. the battle was over and McClellan had a consultation with Commodore Rodgers in relation to the movement to Harrison's Landing which was then decided upon. So very pleased was he with the outcome of this encounter, that he closed his official report with the following words:—

"My mind cannot coin expressions of thanks and admiration warm enough or intense enough, to do justice to my feelings towards the Army I am so proud to command.

To my countrymen I confidently commit them, convinced they will ever honor every brave man who served during those seven historic days with the army of the Potomac. . . . I will simply call attention to the invaluable services rendered by the artillery, and say that its performances have fully justified my anticipations, and prove it to be our policy to cherish and increase that arm of the service."

#### FROM "RHODE ISLAND IN THE REBELLION."

"The battle began at 3 o'clock p. m. by a heavy musketry fire from the rebels upon our centre, and soon a general engagement ensued. Our line was in the form of a semi-circle. For several hours the conflict raged with unmitigated fury. Here, as at Gaines Mills, Porter's Corps did some splendid fighting. . . . At half-past eight o'clock in the morning the three remaining guns of Battery C, (Weeden's) with a section of Allen's Massachusetts Battery, all under the command of Captain Weeden, moved to the hills and proceeded off to the Left of the line to protect the left flank. The Battery (Weeden's) with Allen's section, was stationed on the brow of a hill, and commanded a plain below. A sharp look-out was kept along the edge of the woods beyond the plain, to see that no rebels came out, and if they did, to give them a becoming reception. Shot and shell from the rebel batteries on our right were constantly flying over our heads, but we had, for the moment, less to fear from them than from some of our own guns on the extreme Left of the line, which were obscured from our view by woods, and were shooting over our heads. Some



of their shells were fired at too short range, and a 32-pounder shell burst close by one of our pieces, instantly disabling six of its men, and fatally wounding Lieut. Waterman's horse and that of Serg't Hunt. It was little less than miraculous that their riders escaped. Two of the men were instantly killed, and four wounded, one severely.

The explosion was stunning. Shells were coming from Right, Rear, and Left, and our position being too hot we were ordered to retire: and, moving farther to the right, very soon relieved Griffin's Battery, which had expended all its ammunition. After getting in battery, firing was commenced, dropping shells in various directions in the woods in front of us. A rebel battery somewhere in front of us, responded to our civilities, and sent us specimens of their ordnance stores, but as most of them overreached, no injury was done.

In a short time a rebel regiment was seen coming down a road to our left and front and deploying into the field as skirmishers. Attention was also arrested by a rebel battery, just in the edge of the woods in the rear of the regiment, whose position could be discerned only by the smoke of its discharge. A few well directed missiles put a stop to impertinences, and firing from that quarter soon ceased. Most of its shots overreached and did comparatively little damage. One was made, however, which told on our ranks. A shrapnell burst splendidly,—for so are death missives often viewed on the battle field,—and one of the fragments struck Corporal William B. Thompson in the thigh, making a mortal wound. Another man, working the guns, was struck in the arm by a piece of the same shell, and died in twenty minutes. The rebel infantry came within 300 yards of our Battery, but we could not poke canister at them from fear of wounding our own men in front, so we gave them shrapnell, shells filled with sixty bullets and nearly as destructive, which were fired over the heads of the infantry.

The batteries, in their several positions, mowed down the



rebels with terrible certainty, as did our infantry along the entire line, but life seemed of no consequence to their officers, and relying on their superior numbers they filled every breach made in their ranks with fresh men, maddened and made reckless by whiskey and gunpowder.

Though they numbered three to our one it was in vain that they rushed upon our men. It was only to meet certain death and final repulse.

Our men stood up bravely to the work, as they did six days before, and when they saw the rebel infantry deploying, cheered and waved their hats; crying 'Give it to them!' 'Give it to them!' and it was done. . . .

About half past seven o'clock we were relieved, and returned to the camp we left in the morning. Late in the night the Battery proceeded on its way to Harrison's Landing where it arrived at 4 o'clock a. m., very much exhausted.

At midnight terminated a week of battles, the enemy driven back, and the Federal army holding the field. The Federals captured twenty-nine cannon and lost twenty-eight."

## THE SEVEN DAYS BATTLES.

### REPORT OF LIEUT. JOHN B. HYDE.

"I was ordered by Captain Weeden to take my remaining pieces, with his Battery, to the front and on the brow of a hill about 2000 yards from the enemy who were in the edge of the woods, with artillery and infantry. We began to shell them, and after about half an hour, in connection with other batteries, silenced the enemy, and was then ordered with Weeden's Battery to take position in the field on the opposite side of the road, and again began firing in the direction of the enemy. This was kept up till dark, when we were relieved and returned to camp.





Amount of ammunition expended. 300 rounds.

Robert King wounded in breast.

Jacob Peacock wounded in the leg.

Three horses shot.

During the engagement all the men behaved remarkably well.

All of which is respectfully submitted

JOHN B. HYDE *Lieut.*  
Commanding Battery."

#### FROM PHILLIPS' DIARY AND LETTERS.

"Monday, June 30, 1862. Marched at 3 a. m. to the James River and camped at noon on Turkey Island near Malvern Hill.

The whole army is coming this way.

About noon as we passed through a wheat field, the wheat was stacked all over the field, and we took advantage of this to secure some feed for our hungry and tired horses. Sending our cannoneers over the fence the wheat travelled in a very short period on to our caissons, while the owners looked from their windows, rather startled at this demonstration of the Army of the Potomac. I am happy to say I saw no guard over the property. The next field was an immense corn field, the corn already four feet high. Intermixed with the corn were most delicious blackberries, which tasted sweetly after a diet of hard bread and water. Arrived at the farther limit of this field we stopped and rested awhile; our men pulling up the corn to fodder their horses. On Tuesday night [July 1st, after the battle of Malvern Hill] I could not see a blade of corn in the whole field. Close by us was a large cherry tree, but this was soon stripped. Some of our men brought me some cherries from a tree by the house close by, black, dead ripe, and delicious. After a short delay we marched on down the hill and came into park



in a very pleasant corn field, where we supposed we should stop all night, but late in the afternoon we moved back on to the hill again near our former position, but the appearance of things had changed. What we left a large green corn field was now an immense dry plain, all bristling with arms, and surrounded with batteries of artillery. Away beyond the wheat field we could hear the roar of artillery, and the rattling of musketry and everything looked like a grand fight the next day. At one time the enemy appeared in our vicinity, making a small attack on our left and got a terrible thrashing.

They dragged a few guns into position and opened on us, when, as the poet says, they were answered from the hill, and with a vengeance too. Probably nobody was ever in a hotter place,—on earth at least,—than the rebels were for the next 20 minutes. Siege guns, Parrotts, and everything else poured into them a tremendous fire, while the gunboat shells burst amongst them. The next day Captain Martin brought in two of their guns all covered with blood, while the dead horses and broken caissons showed the effects of our fire. Gradually as darkness settled upon the earth all became quiet, and we went to bed with great anticipations of the morrow.

#### THE BATTLE OF MALVERN HILL.

The sun was well up Tuesday July 1, 1862, before the reveille roused us to our day's work.

During the forenoon all was still and quiet, but we knew that the stillness might at any time be broken by the rattling of musketry and the roar of cannon. So we breakfasted on hard bread and waited for events.

Soon came the order to hitch up, and we started out toward the wheat field.

At noon they made their first attack, our artillery being arranged as follows:—



On the Right Griffin's Battery, Lt. Kingsbury com'd'g: six 10 pdr. Parrotts, 3 inch calibre;

Next on the Left:—(Adelbert) Ames's Battery [Battery A, 5th U. S.] of six Light 12 pdrs. smooth bore, otherwise called the Napoleon Gun;

Next:—5th Mass. Battery 2 pieces;

Next:—Captain Weeden's remaining 3 guns,—3 inch Rifled Guns.

On the right of Kingsbury, and hidden by a piece of woods, were some other batteries.

Our two pieces were formed into one section and placed under me, Lt. Hyde taking command of the whole battery. Dillingham took charge of the caissons, and Scott was placed in command of the Battery wagons and forges belonging to Griffin's, Weeden's and Allen's Batteries.

Martin's Battery had been detached and sent to the left, and I saw nothing of it during the day. Well, we started out, and first came into line behind Martindale's brigade which was sheltered behind a little wood. Close by us was the Mass. 22d, which had suffered terribly on Friday [Gaines Mills]. Of course they were rather down-hearted, and the officers tried to keep up their spirits by singing &c. It was rather affecting to hear this regiment, cut down by disease and bullets to a mere fraction of its original numbers, strike up the John Brown song, and proclaim their determination to hang Jeff Davis on a sour apple tree, as sturdily as they did when their ranks were full. After waiting here a short time we, together with the brigade, moved a short distance to the left, and rested alongside of Weeden's Battery, Kingsbury having come into battery on the right; the brigade resting in front of us in column of Division lying on the ground. Here we waited and dined on hard bread and coffee, and shortly afterwards moved to the left and came into battery.

In front of us was the large level field about 1700 yards across. On the opposite side was a ridge, behind which the



A hand-drawn map of a farm area. The map is divided into several sections by a central vertical line labeled "Road". To the left of the road, there is a large area labeled "Wheat Fields" with diagonal hatching. Above this, there is a small area labeled "Barn" with a square symbol. To the right of the road, there is a large area labeled "Woods" with dense, wavy lines. Below the road, there is a small area labeled "House" with a square symbol. At the bottom, there is a small area labeled "High Ground" with a shaded rectangle. The map also includes several small symbols: a cluster of dots labeled "3", a cluster of dots labeled "2", a cluster of dots labeled "1", and a cluster of dots labeled "4". The text "Woods" is written in the top left and top right sections. The text "Wheat Fields" is written in the middle left section. The text "Barn" is written below the "Wheat Fields" section. The text "House" is written below the "Wheat Fields" section. The text "High Ground" is written at the bottom left. The text "1. 2. 3. 4." is written at the bottom right. The text "Road" is written vertically along the central line.

1. Kingsbury's 2. Ames 3 Fifth Mass. 4 Weedens, pointing across the River. 5 Martindale. 6. Rebel Guns.





rebels placed their guns out of our sight, and blazed away, now from one place and now from another. In the woods beyond was an indefinite number of rebels. On our left the ground sloped rapidly down to a low level meadow bounded by woods. We were charged with the duty of protecting our Left from any flank movement.

No infantry was in sight; theirs being hidden in the woods, and ours being hidden behind the hill in rear of our guns.

Suddenly out the rebels poured from the woods in front of Kingsbury, and down the road, their red flags flying, and charged across the field.

Our infantry rushed out to meet them, and back they went with diminished numbers.

An intervening hill prevented us from participating; we could see them only for a few minutes.

Soon afterwards we were ordered to the right, and having to cross under a heavy fire of shrapnell, the enemy shooting very well, we had two men wounded by fragments of shell: Robert King in the shoulder, and Jacob Peacock in the leg.

While waiting for a few minutes to change our limbers, I had an excellent opportunity to dodge. A shrapnell burst right in front of me; the fragments striking the ground about 20 feet off. One piece about an inch square ricocheted, and came in the most spiteful way straight for my shoulder, but, by a most graceful right oblique, I got out of the way. About this time I missed Lt. Hyde, who was looking after the caissons, I presume, and so I took command and marched the guns at full gallop to the right, and came into line with Captain Weeden, behind Kingsbury, who was firing his last shots at the retreating rebels. Soon after we were ordered forward to relieve him, everything else remaining *in statu quo*, and we came into battery and waited. General Couch, General Abercrombie and General Griffin,—commanding Morell's old brigade,—were all in



our neighborhood, but I do not know the exact disposition of the infantry.

Late in the afternoon the rebels made another attack on our Left and Centre. Just previous to it they got six pieces of artillery into a new position, and opened on us, intending apparently to disable us. The result made the attempt very ridiculous; though they made some good shots and threw some shrapnell between our guns, they did not hurt anybody, and in 15 minutes we had silenced them so completely that they did not fire another gun. What on earth induced them to try such a ridiculous proceeding I do not know. If they had kept their guns masked until their infantry charged, and then had used them to distract the attention of our artillery, or to operate against our infantry, they might have accomplished something, but they ought to have learned by this time that they stand no chance at artillery practice.

As soon as they made their appearance from the woods, our artillery opened on them with terrible effect. The air over their heads was filled with the smoke of bursting shells whose fragments plowed the ground in front. Half way across the field, and already their ranks show many a gap, while wounded men are straggling fast to the rear.

They had got within 800 yards, when out rushed the infantry on our left, and the rattling of musketry mingled with the roar of cannon. Then the rebels poured out fresh troops from the woods in front of us; then we sent in more, and so the fight went on until 50,000 men were fighting in the field in front of us. We fired as fast as we could get fresh limbers full of ammunition; piling up our canister alongside of the gun, so as to be ready for them.

When two hours had passed away, we had fired 250 rounds, our men were tired, and three horses were killed, when another battery came to relieve us. [Colonel Henry J. Hunt sent Battery M, 2d U. S. Captain Henry Benson, and



Battery G, 1st New York Light, Captain John D. Frank, to relieve Waterman and Hyde on the left.] So we limbered up and came off.

The fight still kept on, but about dark we drove them back.

Going a mile to the rear I found the caissons all safe. We waited without unhitching till midnight, when we started for James River, arriving at 3.30 a. m. on the large plain where we encamped.

Our men came out of this fight in very good spirits; they thought they had paid the rebels somewhat for Friday's loss, and they cheered and hollaed at a great rate."

#### FROM SCOTT'S NOTES.

"June 30, 1862. After leaving the Chickahominy our spirits revived. Found the 5th Corps camped on Malvern Hill near the James River.

Parked away from the river in the lee of some outbuildings, we eat our hard-bread, heard a few experiences of narrow escapes during the day, and slept on the ground the night of the 30th of June unmolested. Most of the army were arriving, and with the gunboats on James River we felt secure.

In the rear of the Malvern house facing north, was a level plain or plateau.

Our lines were formed on the outlying hills of the plateau, with our flank on the river protected by the gunboats.

The enemy followed closely.

On the morning of the 1st of July, 1862, the weather was fine. Corps were getting into line of battle.

As the Battery stood on the plain near the Malvern house, solid shot from the enemy came pounding around us.

I was put in charge of the wagons and caissons, with orders to take them to a safe place, and they were taken past the Malvern house, into a hollow, where we remained all day, only listening to the heavy firing of the battle.



The 5th Mass. Battery, having only two guns, with Lieutenants Hyde, Dillingham, and Phillips, was sent to the front. I saw none of the fighting, but the guns were fouled for all they were worth by Lt. Phillips who achieved for himself and his men high honor.

The gunboats sent their shots past the Left flank of our Corps into the enemy's Right. They made a fearful noise passing through the air, to the demoralization of the enemy, who did not like those 'lamp posts' as they called them.

As night began to close in, Lt. Hyde having come down to where I was stationed with the trains, I ascertained from him where the two guns were, and said I would go and find them.

Mounting my horse I started across the plains.

The artillery fire was terrific. In the darkness I could see the flashes of our guns and those of the enemy, and soon bullets came flying through the air. Meeting a mounted officer, and making inquiries of him without getting any further news, I thought, as I was there without orders, my safest place was out of the line of fire, and returning to the Malvern house I found the two guns had preceded me. The battle was over for the night."

#### FROM LT. BLAKE'S LETTER.

In a letter dated July 4, 1862, Lt. Peleg W. Blake then sergeant, but promoted to 2d Lt. on the 13th of that month, wrote:—

"On a splendid field near the James River, on the 1st of July came the tug of war.

We were ordered out with our two pieces, my piece and Spear's piece, all we had, at 12 o'clock m. We took our position on the Left of the field and commenced firing, the rebels coming out of the woods one mile distant.

Seventy-five pieces of artillery were firing on the rebels who were mown down by the thousands, not by the hun-





dreds, and at one time I should think there were 5000 rebels who came out of the woods under all of our fire of artillery and musketry.

On they came, and still kept coming, but soon began to run back for the woods, but I am sure, and I heard two generals say, that there were none ever got back to tell the tale.

Soon after, they made their general attack, and there were said to be 100,000 rebels under Beauregard. We whipped them bad.

We then fell back to the James River, and started down the river 10 miles. We are now on the James River."

#### LETTER OF ACTING SERG'T. SPEAR.

"Friday July 4, 1862.

Saturday morning the Army commenced retreating again and kept falling back, and falling back, until Tuesday, when it had another battle.

The two remaining pieces were engaged, and I was in the fight about 4 hours Tuesday afternoon."

#### AT MALVERN HILL

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. SPEAR.

JULY 24, 1901.

"The two remaining pieces went into position under command of Lieut. Phillips, nearly to the extreme left of the Army, on the right of the road, near a small farm house, remaining there until about noon, then changing to the left and rear about one-half mile, into a wheat field on the side of the hill commanding an extended view of the enemy's right, as it advanced in line of battle. This was the first best position that we had for execution, to my knowledge, during the war, the second being at Gettysburg when on the left of Hancock's Corps, the third day of the fight." [See p. 651.]



## LETTER OF ACTING SERGT. SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Thursday, July 17, 1862.

Last night, also on the night before, we had thunder showers, and they cooled and purified the air, and the mornings following the showers were delightful. Every morning Bill Baxter and myself take a morning ride down to the river and have a swim. In my letter I stated that there were only three of the Quincy boys in the fight at Malvern Hill. There were four, viz., Joe Whitcher, H. E. Shaw, Bill Lapham and myself.

Joe Whitcher was driving a pair of lead horses on Tuesday, when the last fight occurred, and came directly on the battle field, to supply us with ammunition, conducting himself nobly, and managed his horses in good style, for it was a hard and difficult task to keep the horses in their proper places, when the bullets were whizzing, and the shells bursting about us."

## FROM CHASE'S DIARY.

"June 30, 1862. Routed out and packed up at two o'clock this morning, and after waiting three hours, again resumed our march towards James River, and later reached the river, and camped until about 3 p. m., when we again received marching orders. General McClellan hastily reviewed the troops this p. m., while in line to march. He was greeted by roars of cheering.

Cannonading heard in a northerly direction towards the Chickahominy.

At the foot of a hill to which we marched back, after marching over it this morning, an artillery duel ensued. A rebel battery commenced shelling our troops from the woods, but our artillery and the gunboats on the river, shelled them out in about thirty minutes. Several of the enemy's bat-



teries were taken, and about 200 prisoners passed our camp.

July 1, 1862. Cannonading heard in front this morning. A battery of twelve 32 pdrs. and the gunboats on the James River, opened on the enemy.

Hitched up and went 'In Battery' at the edge of a piece of woods just to the right of the 22d Mass. Regt. while they were singing 'John Brown's body &c' and the shot and shell flying over them, and us, both ways.

Nothing but hard bread and water to eat with one exception since June 26th until today, when we had beans. A general engagement began about 3 p. m. and lasted until about 9 p. m.

Our two remaining pieces advanced and took position on the left of the line, and commenced shelling the enemy in front: fired fifteen shots at them and then went to the rear, but afterwards took a new position on an eminence in front of the enemy, and held our ground until 7 p. m., when we were relieved by another full battery of 10 pounders.

A fearful battle! The enemy charged on our lines and were mown down with canister and shrapnell shot, and the infantry,—a constant roar of cannon and musketry. Lost two horses. Retired to the rear in good order, and took the march to Harrison's Landing, James River: reached a halting place about 3.30 in the morning of the 2d. [July, 1862]. Lt. C. A. Phillips very gallantly took us into our second position in front of the enemy."

#### NOTES OF D. HENRY GROWS.

From Notes of D. Henry Grows No. 6 man [to deal ammunition] on the 5th Gun:—"Tuesday, July 1, 1862. Got up about 6. Had some coffee. In a short time firing was heard on the Right, and we were ordered to take the pieces out on to the front. We went out and laid down to rest as the firing had ceased. Stopped here till about 3 this afternoon, when we were ordered to take our position in line of



battle, which we did on a beautiful hill, a large, level plain beneath, with woods in the rear in which the rebels were concealed.

We soon opened upon them, our position being on the Left, and they returned it in good earnest. We had about thirty pieces of artillery against them. They sent a brigade of infantry out against us.

I was sick of blood! We were exposed at one time to a heavy cross fire but we soon got it down.

There has been a great slaughter to-day! I stood at my post till I dropped, owing to the heat, and was sent to the rear. I shall go out again as soon as I am able. A man took my place. We fired some 300 rounds. We lost one horse, and one of the men was struck with a piece of shell. About dusk we went into camp and turned in. Had not slept but a short time before we were turned out and marched all night till 4 o'clock in the morning."

#### FROM GEN. THOMAS W. HYDE.

Gen. Hyde in his book "Following the Greek Cross," thus describes his emotions on this battle field:—

"I soon found myself on Malvern Hill, where I could admire the stern array of what was left of the 5th Corps, shattered but dauntless still, and wonder at the grand massing of its batteries, supported by the artillery reserve, and listen to the deafening roar of the great guns from the war vessels far down on the James. . . . We heard afterwards how the best chivalry of the South had for hours dashed themselves upon Porter's lines in vain, how Hunt's unsurpassed artillery had not allowed the enemy's attacking columns to keep their formation long enough to get near his guns."

It was "by the light of the fires," in the words of General Martindale, "reflected on the clouds over the woods, and the report of the pickets," which revealed to our forces that "the enemy was using the night to retire out of reach of our cannon, toward Richmond."





## CHAPTER XII.

### THE BATTERY DIVIDED.

#### OFFICERS AND MEN TRANSFERRED, PROMOTED, AND DIS- CHARGED FOR DISABILITY.

"What is honor? . . . Who hath it? He that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible then? Yea, to the dead. But will it live with the living? No. Why? De- traction will not suffer it."—SHAKESPEARE, *King Henry II.*

The Battle of Malvern Hill closed the Peninsula cam- paign. Halleck as general-in-chief gave peremptory or- ders, which were reluctantly carried out by McClellan and Hooker, to withdraw the Army from the Peninsula with all possible dispatch.

Governor Andrew in an address referring to this period says:—

"July 2, 1862, the President called for 300,000 men. The unfor- tunate campaign in Virginia, which results in the return of both our armies within the defences of Washington, aroused and inflamed the zeal of the whole people. The requisite number of men were speedily raised."

General McClellan wrote the Secretary of War that to accomplish the task of capturing Richmond reinforcements should be sent to him "rather much over than less than one hundred thousand men." and then followed six weeks of inactivity while he waited.

The Army had all "turned in" on the ground, after the battle of Malvern Hill, expecting to get a night's rest, but, talking over the day's fight while their excited nerves were recovering from the strain, orders came to move on, and they were again on the march.



In pursuance of the retrograde movement southwest they marched ten miles, to Harrison's Landing, arriving about daylight July 3d, and the Battery went fast asleep, at last, in a field where they had dropped down between the rows of corn. The horses stood in harness as they had been since the 26th of June.

The enemy had not followed in force, and the weary soldiers slept on far into the forenoon, unconscious that they were lying in six inches of water [Scott's Notes]. The rain beat upon them, but they paid no heed, and lay on the ground all day, side by side with the sick and wounded, obliged to lie, if they lie at all, in this quagmire, exposed to the weather, until the sick and wounded were taken on board the transports, which was accomplished during the day and the wagons came up with shelter for the weary ones.

Reinforcements also arrived, and stragglers came in. Among the fresh troops was the 32d Mass. Infantry, assigned to General Griffin's, late Morell's, Brigade. The enemy had not yet ceased harassing our recreating columns, for on July 3d in the morning, shells from two guns which they had placed in position, were seen bursting in the air; three of them going to pieces within 200 yards of the Battery and one striking in Captain Martin's camp near them. The Battery's two remaining guns were hitched up for action, but after waiting two hours they were unhitched again. The rebel guns were so near that they were easily brought in by our flying artillery.

Grows' "Journal": "July 3, 1862. . . . We soon got word that our troops had flanked them taking 40 pieces of artillery and 8000 prisoners. In a short time 600 of the 32d Mass Reg't. arrived and were loudly cheered. Fresh troops have been coming in all day. After being in harness all day, towards night we were told to unhitch and go into camp again. .

Friday, July 4, 1862. About 10 this forenoon we broke



camp and moved to a better camping ground, so as to give the men and horses rest, of which we are greatly in need. Got some nice straw and laid it in my tent. Fixed up things, then laid down."

On the Fourth of July, General Henry W. Halleck, having come down from Washington, reviewed the troops, and the national salute was fired, at each Corps Head Quarters, in honor of the day.

General McClellan anticipated an attack, and was expecting recruits. In his address to the troops on that day he said:—

"The enemy may at any moment attack you.

We are prepared to receive them.

I have personally established your lines.

Let them come, and we will convert their repulse into a final defeat.

Your government is strengthening you with the resources of a great people.

On this our nation's birth-day, we declare to our foes who are rebels against the best interests of mankind, that this Army shall enter the capital of the so-called Confederacy: that our national constitution shall prevail, and that the Union, which can alone insure internal peace and external security to each state, must and shall be preserved cost what it may in time, treasure, or blood."

At the inspection of July 6th by General Fitz John Porter and Captain Weeden, the Fifth Mass. Battery was in line.

"It seemed to be well understood by General Porter," wrote Scott, "what the condition of the Battery was:—'You have lost four guns at Gaines Mills' he said, 'but you lost them honorably, and as soon as practicable they will be restored to you, and the service demands them.'"

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, July 6, 1862. It is a very hot morning. There was an inspection of the Battery by General Porter and staff this forenoon [See p. 341 F. P. Washburn] and he told us when Richmond was ours we should go home.

This afternoon went to the Doctor: he told me I would not pass, and to have my discharge. I am almost worn out with fighting and marching so much.



Monday, July 7th. Went to the Doctor with Serg't Smith. He instructed me to tell my officer to have me go before the Brigade Surgeon and for him to sign our papers. Lieut. Hyde went to see him but he was away, so we will have to go tomorrow.

Tuesday, July 8th. A very hot morning. After eating I with three others went to the head doctor. He told our lieutenant to send us home, and he will do all he can for us, for which I am very thankful."

### A REVIEW OF THE BATTLES.

From a Letter of Thomas E. Chase:—"Harrison's Landing, Va. July 7, 1862.

Since I last wrote you we have been in two desperate field engagements, besides much danger on picket duty. At two o'clock p. m. Thursday, 26th ult., we received marching orders, and were soon on the march to White House. Cannonading had already commenced toward Mechanicsville, and we knew that there was to be hot work on the morrow. We marched about two miles towards White House, and then countermarched nearly back again, and bivouacked for the night in a field with General Butterfield's Brigade. The firing continued until about 9 p. m., and we left the horses all night hitched to the pieces, and laid down near the guns ready for duty at a moment's notice. At early dawn the fight commenced again, and troops began to move. We left, too, but instead of approaching the scene of action we marched back nearly to the spot we had left the day before, and placed the guns 'in battery' on the brow of a hill commanding a large tract of land around us. Lieut. Hyde then told us that our troops were retreating in good order, and that we were to cover their retreat, and that a battery of flying artillery would be the last to cross the mill-stream below us. We were to hold our position and repulse the enemy





until all the troops had crossed and destroyed the bridge. The enemy's cannonading and musketry sounded nearer and nearer, and at last the battery crossed and the men began to rip up the bridge. The enemy across the Chickahominy spied us, and opened on us from their 32 pdr. battery, but as the distance was great they did us no injury, their shells striking at least 100 yards from us. The bridge was destroyed before the enemy made their appearance, and we trotted off to a new position about half a mile distant, also on a hill, at the edge of a piece of woods. Here we were out of the range of the enemy's 32 pdrs., and began to think we could rest, but—Hark! The enemy have crossed the mill-stream, and are already at work! Our infantry commence felling the trees in front of us, and preparations are made for a general engagement. The enemy threw some shells into the infantry behind the woods, but did but little injury. Soon they—the rebs—formed a line of battle, and on they came, but were quickly repulsed by our troops. After a short delay, they again rallied with increased numbers. The Left section of our Battery took a position at the edge of the woods on this charge, and blazed away at them. The enemy were repulsed the second time as splendidly as the first, and they tried it for the third time with great force but with the same success. Redoubling their force, on they came again, yelling like devils. Our brave but exhausted troops held them in check for a few moments, and in the meantime we advanced with the full Battery, and began to pour canister and shrapnell into the solid ranks, but on they came, and our troops were overpowered and a general retreat had commenced. Many of the infantry had passed us before we ceased firing, but we finally 'limbered up' and drove off. The horses began to fall, the enemy were close upon us, and we were obliged to leave four of our guns on the field.

We retreated across the Chickahominy over Bottom's



Bridge, and camped for the night near McClellan's Head Quarters. . . . Our Battery fired about one hundred rounds at them at short range. . . . Porter's Division was forced to retreat across the river. They were overwhelmed by superior numbers. Our troops fought bravely and well. We suffered a severe loss, but probably not more than half that of the enemy. We have been retreating towards the James River, and on Tuesday, 1st inst. we had another desperate battle. Before the fight McClellan rode along the lines, and was loudly cheered and greeted with music. Many of the troops thought it was good news, but something told me that it meant fight, and well I knew that ere long many of the voices that then cheered so loudly would be hushed in death. Although I was glad to see our Chieftain with us, well I knew his mission. That music was not harmony to me, for I knew that the interludes were to be the groans of the dying. This was on Monday, 31st, and the enemy had already made an attack about 5 p. m., but were soon repulsed."

Notes of Francis P. Washburn: "I send you a picture of the old sword picked up at Harrison's Landing. It was not carried by an officer but by a cannoneer. When we were equipped by the state of Massachusetts, the cannoneers were armed with swords like the one in the picture, and the drivers with sabres. Later in the War the drivers only carried side arms."

The mails had recommenced, and the usual order of camp was resumed, but it was not an ideal camp, for there was no drinking water within a mile. The question of comfort was not, however, paramount at that time for the destiny of the Battery was being determined.

A Special Order was issued from Head Quarters which for a time distributed its forces into other, but not new channels, as the batteries with which the fortunes of the members of the Fifth Mass. Battery were cast, had been near







neighbors in many camps and on many fields.

John Galvin in a letter of Nov. 27th, 1899, referring to the life in camp of the Rhode Island and Massachusetts men, says:—

“How often we partook of their hospitality of a Sunday morning! The 5th Battery boys would not forget us. The Rhode Island boys did not know how to bake beans. I suppose they might be able to bake clams, but they could do nothing with beans.”

Of their fighting after the Battle of Gaines Mills he says:—“How nobly they fought, with their two guns and their handful of men, in every battle until we reached Harrison's Landing.”

SPECIAL ORDER No. 200.

HEADQUARTERS, ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 11, 1862

Special Orders

No. 200

16. The officers and men of Allen's Battery E, Mass. Artillery [Morell's Division, 5th Provisional Corps], are assigned to duty with Martin's Battery C, Mass. Artillery, the battery still retaining its company organization.

The Commander of the 5th Provisional Corps will make such disposition of the material and horses as he may deem proper in the batteries of Morell's Division. A sufficient number of men will be detached from Allen's Battery and attached to Weedon's Battery C, Rhode Island Artillery, to render the latter efficient. The Chief of Artillery will make arrangements at once to supply Martin's Battery with a light 12 pounder and Weedon's Battery with a 3 inch ordnance gun.

By command of Major General McClellan:

S. WILLIAMS,  
Assistant Adjutant General.





## CAPTAIN A. P. MARTIN'S ORDERS.

COMPANY ORDERS,

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 12, 1862.

In compliance with orders from Head Quarters Army of the Potomac, the officers and men of Allen's Battery E, Mass. Artillery, will be temporarily attached to this Battery, and until further orders will form one command. Officers and non-commissioned officers in both batteries will hold their present rank, and be respected and obeyed accordingly.

In future the roll will be called in company line. The company will assemble, and when the order is given to call the roll, each Sgt. will step 2 paces to the front, call the roll and return to his place, in the ranks, and report to the First Sgt. as he passes down the line, who will return opposite the centre of the line and report to the officer of the day, after which the company will be dismissed.

The guard will hereafter be formed with sabres and inspected by the old officer of the day, the old guard will form and be properly relieved. Every man must appear at Guard mounting in uniform with pants turned down at the bottoms, brasses clean, with a tidy appearance generally. Every man will take his place in the ranks, remain silent, and keep his head square to the front, and his hands down by his sides.

Each sergeant will at one hand in to Hd. Qrs. a list of his detachment; designating those present for duty, and those sick; also make a distinction between drivers and cannoneers.

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*,  
Battery C, Mass. Art'y.

## OFFICERS RESIGNED.

July 12, 1862, First Lieutenant John B. Hyde and Junior First Lieutenant Robert A. Dillingham resigned and were discharged.

## NOTES OF LT. JOHN B. HYDE, MAY 22, 1900.

"Lt. Dillingham was enlisted a private by me, and at my request was commissioned junior second lieutenant, and afterwards was promoted to senior second lieutenant.

He was a faithful, efficient officer, always discharging his duties in a satisfactory manner. At the time he resigned he was far from being a well man, and on the way home



became seriously ill. He was assisted through the journey by Lt. Daniel S. Tompkins of the signal corps who was also ill and on sick leave, and myself.

After he arrived at his home in New Bedford, he grew worse, and was sick a long time with the dropsy, and died with that disease on January 1st, 1868, aged 40 years."

#### LT. HYDE'S COMING HOME.

Lt. Hyde did not resign as a sick man, but the nervous strain through which he had passed produced typhoid fever, the effects of which still remain (1902), and while disposed to return to the service his physical condition would not admit of it.

His relations with the Battery were always very pleasant, he looked after the men when they were sick but when well held them strictly to the performance of their duty.

The horse "Black Charley" was sent home by express, and in the fall of 1864, at the New England Horse Fair held at Saugus, Mass., took the prize as a saddle horse for action and beauty. The prize was twenty-five dollars, and with it went a diploma, which neatly framed is still (1902) preserved among his master's souvenirs of the war.

In later years he became the property of the distinguished lawyer Peleg W. Chandler of Boston and Brunswick, Maine, and occupied a stall in a stable as fine as a dwelling house.

#### FROM A LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 12, 1862.

In compliance with my request Capt. Martin went up to see Gen. Porter yesterday. Gen. Porter said that the company would be assigned to Capt. Martin, still retaining its company organization under my command. Yesterday an order arrived from Gen. McClellan for officers and men of



the Battery to report for duty to Captain Martin, a sufficient number to be detailed to fill up Weeden's Battery, the company still retaining the company organization, and Martin and Weeden recruiting up to the maximum, regardless of us. So you see how the thing stands now. We still remain a battery, without guns or horses, and most of the men detached for other duty. I shall retain my commission, and be in command of the Battery, having our mustered pay rolls, and act as a kind of supernumerary to Martin's Battery. Scott ditto."

Diary of Lieut. Phillips: "July 13. Sunday, 25 of the men were detailed to Captain Weeden's Battery."

### OFFICERS PROMOTED.

Several officers went up. July 13, 1862, Second Lt. Charles A. Phillips was promoted First Lt., Junior Second Lt. Henry D. Scott was promoted Junior First Lt., and Peleg W. Blake was commissioned Second Lt. All of the Fifth Mass. Battery.

August 1st Frederick A. Lull was commissioned Junior Second Lieutenant.

On July 13th, Scott and Phillips moved their tent to Captain Martin's camp, and from this time till Sept. 12, 1862, the fate of the members of the Battery and of the remaining commissioned officers was identified with the organizations to which they had been assigned, viz., the Third Mass. Battery and the Fourth Rhode Island, special regulations being made for several non-commissioned officers and privates (see p. 915), but after Captain Martin became acting chief of the Artillery Brigade, Lieut. Phillips received from General Morell, commanding the Division, the appointment of acting assistant adjutant general and was assigned to the staff of Captain Martin. Lieut. Scott was appointed acting assistant quartermaster of Morell's Division and was assigned to Martin's staff.



Corporal Thomas E. Chase whose Diary is so often quoted, went with Captain Martin's Battery.

July 14, 1862. General Halleck, who had been ordered to Washington, assumed command as general-in-chief of the U. S. Armies, and the Army of the Potomac was recuperating.

Grows' "Journal": "Monday July 14, 1862. About 8 this forenoon the Doctor came round to see us. He told some of us he would send us North as soon as he could, as this was no place for us. There are a great many men here sick, but they are being sent away quite fast.

Wednesday, July 16th. Went out towards evening to see the process of embalming two bodies to be sent home."

Lieut. Phillips wrote on the 16th July from the camp near Harrison's Landing:—"We have been spending a fortnight in this locality in great peace and quiet compared with the fortnight which preceded. We have been stopping here on a level plain, baked as hard as a brick in dry weather, and as sticky as putty in wet. Yesterday we were mustered for pay, and the heat was terrific. Captain Martin's Battery was mustered just before we were, and one of his sergeants was sun struck. Although we have been mustered for pay, we have as yet seen nothing of the Paymaster. By the regulations troops are to be paid off every two months, if possible. You see how theory and practice agree in this matter. People at home who see regiments marching off 1000 strong, have no idea of the skeleton regiments out here. It was sad enough before the last row, but that finished us up. Morell's Division was one of the largest in the Army, numbering when filled to the maximum 15,000. Before we left Gaines's Hill the regiments had been reduced to an average of less than 400 effective men. The Massachusetts 9th and 22d were quite large, numbering 800 and 600 men. At Gaines Mills the 22d lost 11 officers and 350 men, at Malvern Hill 75 men. They have now 304 men





on their rolls, and of these probably less than 200 are effective. There are now with the Regiment 7 officers.

A great many officers are resigning, and things are in pretty bad shape. Strategy of the kind we have had lately is all humbug. The Army of the Potomac have fought the bloodiest battles of the war, and they have decided nothing. Fair Oaks may have shown good fighting on the part of our soldiers, but beyond killing so many hundred men nothing was accomplished. The same may be said of all the battles of the Peninsula. As far as loss of life was concerned Gaines Mills cost us nearly, if not quite, as much as a successful assault upon Richmond would have done when we first arrived, and has cost us immeasurably more in moral effect here and abroad, in time, and money, and all owing to the 'slow and sure' policy."

#### LETTER OF ACTING SERG'T SPEAR.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 17, 1862.

Some of the men have been put into Captain Weeden's Battery, and the rest were put into Captain Martin's. We are getting along well, although we have nothing to do, to speak of. Some of the men are in the Detachments in Martin's Battery, and some do not do any duty. Bill Lap-ham has been sent North to a hospital."

The sick and wounded were sent to various hospitals: David's Island Hospital, New York; U. S. Hospital, 16th and Filbert Streets, Philadelphia; Convalescent Hospital, Alexandria; to Baltimore, to Cumberland, Md., to Fort McHenry Hospital; Finley Hospital, Washington, D. C.; Armory Hospital, Washington, D. C.

Between February 10th, 1862, and December 31st of the same year besides the three commissioned officers, as many as 32 members of the Battery were discharged for disability. Of these 24 were Lieut. Hyde's recruits, and 5 were Lieut. Allen's.



## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"HARRISON'S LANDING.

July 18, 1862.

Hyde and Dillingham left yesterday. Their resignations took effect on the 12th. Scott and I and the men except 28 assigned to Weedon moved over to Captain Martin's camp last Sunday. We act as officers under Martin, taking our turn as Officers of the Day, and the men are incorporated with his battery. Nominally the 5th Mass. Battery still exists, having its officers and non-commissioned officers, and its own muster and pay rolls, but it is a very slender existence. I cannot sign a requisition or act in any official capacity as commander, and have nothing to do with the men."

Friday July 18, 1862, on account of heavy rains which "drowned out the whole camp" and flooded the tent of Scott and Phillips, the camp of the Third Mass. Battery was moved to a hill near by, and the next day C. D. Barnard, supposed to have been killed in the battle of Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862, came down the river from Richmond among other wounded soldiers on board the steamer "Louisiana" with a flag of truce. See p. 358 C. D. Barnard.

Among other changes wrought by time, Captain A. P. Martin appeared in his new capacity of Chief of Artillery; Captain William B. Weedon having resigned and gone home.

Grows' "Journal":—"July 20, 1862. Soon after dinner Harry Simonds and Joe Knox came over to see me. Had a very pleasant time talking with them. They stopped about an hour. . . . Some more have died today with the fever. A great many are embalmed and sent to their friends."



## MARTIN'S PROMOTION.

HQ. QUARTERS MORELL'S  
DIVISION, CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S  
LANDING, VA. July 24, 1862.

## Special Orders.

No. 215.

Captain Augustus P. Martin, Battery C, Massachusetts Artillery, is hereby designated as Chief of the Artillery attached to this Division. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. Gen'l Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY,  
Ass't Adj. Gen'l.

## ENLISTED ABOVE THE NUMBER.

By Special Order No. 89, Head Qrs. 5th Corps, camp near Harrison's Landing, Va., July 24, 1862, Thomas B. Stantial and James A. Wood, privates in the Fifth Mass. Battery, having been enlisted as artificers above the number authorized by law and deprived of their positions without any fault of their own, are discharged from the military service of the United States by command of Brig. Gen'l F. J. Porter.

## THE FIFTH ARMY CORPS.

July 24, 1862, Morell's Division was reviewed by General Morell preparatory to a grand review the next morning of the Fifth Army Corps, Brig. Gen'l F. J. Porter commanding, by General McClellan.

The term "Provisional" having been dropped on July 22, 1862, by General Order No. 84 from the War Department, the "Fifth Army Corps" was permanently established.

On the 25th the review by McClellan took place, and in the afternoon General Halleck arrived at Harrison's Landing.



## LETTER FROM PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

July 25, 1862.

. . . Our camp is pitched in a very pleasant spot on a little knoll about a mile from the river. Our tents, that is, the officers, are pitched in a line on the crest of the hill, and in the same line is our dining-room. This is formed of a tent fly surrounded by boughs of trees. An elegant table of pine boards occupies the centre, and a number of ammunition boxes placed around form our seats. We use it for a writing apartment, and I am at present in it writing on a sheet of paper borrowed from Lt. Walcott [commanding Third Mass. Battery] who is writing alongside of me. Until lately we were pretty well removed from water, having to go to the river to get it, but a few days ago the infantry of the Division who were encamped near by, on the edge of the woods, moved down nearer the river, leaving their wells and springs, which proved quite acceptable. Still the water out here is poor at the best, clayey, and tasting of the swamp. I would give a great deal for a glass of pure cold Massachusetts water! . . . All would be very well if we could only get some soft bread. We got some the other day but it only served to aggravate things. . . . I am afraid recruiting is not going on very brisk at home. We need more men or more generals or different ones, I don't know which. The troops here are gradually gaining health and strength, but the officers appear to be backing down. General Martindale has gone home on a furlough and has probably resigned. [General Martindale never resumed this command but was given one near Washington.] Butterfield has gone home [on leave]. Kingsbury [Lt. Kingsbury of Griffin's Battery] is promoted colonel of Conn. 11th and everybody else is resigning, going home on furlough, or sick leave, or getting cashiered."





Grows' "Journal": "Friday, July 25, 1862. Had breakfast of coffee and bread. I drank some of it and soon after laid down to hear the news read, which was very interesting. There are only seven of us in a tent now, the rest have been discharged. One of the men gets a paper and reads to us. Had for dinner some meat and potatoes. I eat the potatoes and let the meat alone. After eating I went out under the shade of a cherry tree to get cool. The sun is very hot, and there is little air. Remained out most of the afternoon. Came into the tent about  $4\frac{1}{2}$  o'clock and had some rice and sugar for a lunch. Took a light smoke. Tea was ready at 6. I drank a little and laid down. Had a severe night of it."

#### GEN'L. PORTER TO GOV. ANDREW.

Major General Fitz John Porter, commanding Fifth Army Corps, Harrison's Landing, Va., July 26, 1862, to His Excellency John A. Andrew, Governor of Massachusetts.

[Extract.] "It affords me great gratification to express to you my admiration for the noble conduct of the troops from your state under my command, in the late actions before Richmond. No troops could have behaved better than they did, the ninth and 22d Regiments and Martin's Battery, and portions of Allen's, or done more to add to our success. Their thinned ranks tell of their trials, the brave men lost, their heroic dead, and gallant conduct and devotion to their country. Their discipline was never excelled, and now with undaunted hearts they await with confidence of success the order to advance. I hope you will be able to send on men to fill their depleted ranks, even in parties of ten, as fast as recruited. A few men joining us now gives great heart to all men, and adds to our strength nearly five times the same number in new regiments."

Grows' "Journal": "Sunday, July 27, 1862. The Doctor came around and ordered me to have tea and farina whenever I wanted it. He is a very kind man.

Church services were held here by the officers of the Hospital, and the singing did sound splendid. The air is nice.



and cool enough to make it comfortable. I wrote a letter to Lieut. Phillips in regard to my case, and shall send it as soon as I can get an opportunity tomorrow, and trust it will do some good."

### ENLISTED ABOVE THE NUMBER.

By command of Maj. Gen'l Fitz John Porter Hd. Qrs. Morell's Division, July 27, 1862. Special Orders No. 93, two privates in the Fifth Mass. Battery, Christopher B. Tripp and Charles D. Barnard, having been enlisted as artificers above the number authorized by law, and deprived of their positions without any fault of their own, were discharged from the military service of the United States.

Grows' "Journal":—"Monday, July 28, 1862, there were four steamers in the river with sick and wounded brought down from Richmond. They will have good care and treatment.

Tuesday, July 29, 1862. Yesterday afternoon we had some new cots brought into the tent for us. The nurse put them up and I slept nicely last night. Had a little tea for dinner, and this was all I could bear. Had some nice tea with milk in it for my supper."

### BATTERY QUARTERMASTER.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 30, 1862.

Special Orders.

No. 222.

Second Lieut. Henry D. Scott, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is hereby appointed Battery Quarter Master of the Artillery force attached to this Division. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. Gen. Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY.

Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.



## ARTILLERY ADJUTANT.

HEAD QUARTERS MORELL'S DIVISION.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

July 30, 1862.

## Special Orders.

No. 223.

Second Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is hereby appointed Artillery Adjutant of the Artillery force attached to this Division.

He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Brig. General Geo. W. Morell.

R. T. AUCHMUTY,  
Ass't Adjt. Gen'l.

Lt. Phillips in a letter dated Harrison's Landing, July 31, 1862, says with reference to his position as adjutant of the artillery force attached to General Morell's Division:—"This does not interfere with my commission [as lieutenant of the 5th Mass. Battery] nor with the reorganization of the Battery, but it relieves me from the duties of Officer of the Day, and I circulate the orders from Hd. Qrs. with an 'Official: Charles A. Phillips, Adjutant' added. Scott is appointed Quartermaster, so that our Chief of Artillery has quite a staff.

The commissary at last has some soft bread, and we are living gayly now. We have also some vegetables, and today we had for dinner, soup with meat, potatoes and desiccated vegetables in it, beets, pickles, soft bread and tea. We also had Colonel Ritchie of Governor Andrew's staff to dinner, and he seemed to enjoy the fare. In an interview which he had with General Porter, General Porter said that the Battery would probably be reorganized as soon as they could get the guns."

## AN ARTILLERY DEMONSTRATION.

The Union fleet extended for two miles above and below Harrison's Landing when the rebel general Pendleton opened fire upon the Union camp and shipping, and the Union artillery on shore and in the gunboats replied, after



which the enemy returned to Petersburg where they came from, and our forces occupied the position and commenced constructing earthworks to guard against further surprise. An attack on Petersburg was contemplated and plans made for the destruction of the railroad bridges over rivers, in order to cut off connection between Richmond and the South. When this plan was carried out the war was over.

Grows' "Journal":—"Thursday July 31, 1862, I got a nice dipper of chocolate.

Friday, Aug. 1st. Was awakened at 1 o'clock this morning by heavy cannonading and the whistling of balls and shells. Got up and looked out of the tent. The opposite bank of the river looked on fire with batteries. The rebels had, during the darkness of the night, planted several light batteries upon the shore and were trying to sink our transports. For half an hour the cannonading was awful. Our gunboats soon got into position, and in a few minutes silenced them.

A beautiful morning. Have ascertained that the rebels did not do much damage. Several shot and shell have been dug up this morning. About 10 this forenoon, a poor fellow was brought to the Hospital wounded with a piece of shell. Have ascertained that 14 of our men (men of our Army) were killed during the firing by the rebels: some of the Cavalry, Lancers, and a few of the Zouaves. It was a surprise and will probably teach our folks a good lesson. There are 10 men here, 9 besides the nurse."

#### PHILLIPS' VERSION.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Aug. 2, 1862.

"Supplies of stationery have been drawn for the adjutant of the Artillery and also for the commander of the Fifth Battery. Night before last we had quite a little excitement here. About midnight, as we were all sleeping soundly,





half a dozen guns suddenly banged away, disturbing the silence of the night, and kept up the noise for several hours. It was full as noisy as anything at Yorktown. Of course this brought us up and out in a very short time, and we found that the rebels had planted some field batteries across the river, and commenced banging away with perfect looseness. Some of the shots fell among the infantry of Morell's Division, two hitting the tents of the Mass. 32d, who are not yet accustomed to this style of thing, and among the cavalry encamped near the river, and I presume the vessels on the river received an uncomfortable share of attention. We were too far off to be troubled and we stood and enjoyed the show. I suppose our batteries had something to say on the subject, but the affair was mostly noise. Last night the houses and woods on the other shore, which had sheltered the rebels, were burned, making quite a brilliant conflagration, and some of our troops are now sent over to the other side every day.

Lieut. Col. (Arthur F. see p. 37) Devereaux called to see me. He seemed to be quite excited at the slowness of the enlistments, and like a good many others round here, went in for a draft at once. . . . We can now get unlimited soft bread of the commissary at 10 cts. a loaf, and with onions, beets, potatoes, desiccated vegetables, fresh and salt beef and occasional baked beans, we live pretty well. . . .

Dr. Schell, the surgeon of the Batteries, has arrived, having spent a month among the Rebels. He was in the hospital at Gaines Mills and remained after we retreated, and was taken prisoner. The rebels kept him at the hospital three weeks attending to their wounded. He says the rebel loss was at least half as much again as ours. . . . Massachusetts is doing right in recruiting the old regiments &c. but after this I hope people will see that regiments must be *continually* recruited, as long as the war lasts. These grand uprisings of the people at a new call for troops may



be all very well in a moral and æsthetical point of view, but in my opinion are not half so useful as a steady volunteering. Still I do not know that we can recruit in any other way. I am glad Halleck has been appointed commander-in-chief, though I do not know exactly what effect it will have. General Morell has been made a major general. . . . Just dined on sardines, stewed tomatoes and Scotch ale. . . . The contrabands are encamped near the shore here, and the way they skedaddled when they found the shells falling around their camp was slightly amusing. Artillery practice at night is as good as fireworks. . . . Adams Express has tons of stuff at Fortress Monroe that they cannot bring up the river. They talk of increasing their facilities, and I hope they will. As it is now it is rather a matter of luck for anything to come through, and the time of transportation varies exceedingly, from a few days to a few months.

Sunday, Aug 3, 1862. Rainy. Troops moved across the river. . . .

Lull is now 1st Sergeant and first in line of promotion, and has done more work than any other non-commissioned officer in the Battery. Blake will make a good officer, and I am glad of his promotion."

Grows' "Journal":—"Saturday, Aug. 2, 1862. General McClellan has been looking through the tents for the past two days, to see how the sick are, and how they are getting along. Several ladies have called to see us, giving cakes, lemons, &c. They were from the (steamer) 'S. R. Spaulding.'

Monday, Aug. 4, 1862. The Doctor came round and took down my name, to be sent North. About 3 this afternoon the Orderly came over with the Rolls for me to sign. Harry Simonds came to see me soon after, and bade me good bye. About half past 5 this afternoon the order came for me to get ready. In a short time I was in the ambulance ready for



the boat. I soon arrived on board the steamer 'Vanderbilt, and was shown to a good berth. After putting my things away I had some good beef tea and bread—soon after a large cup of tea, and bread with butter. The nurses are very kind; all being men, with the exception of three ladies who wait on the worst cases. There are many aboard who are very sick, and out of their heads (delirious) and they require a great deal of watching."

The President called for 300,000 more men to serve for nine months.

The reinforcements, which the President and General Halleck, after their visits to the Army of the Potomac assured General McClellan should be provided, did not come. and August 4, 1862, after McClellan had occupied the position he had secured on the James River for a month, he received orders from General Halleck to proceed to Acquia Creek, between Fredericksburg and Washington, thus relinquishing the hope of the capture of Richmond, and of assisting in the protection of Washington by holding the attention of the enemy, so as not to admit of their detaching any large force to attack Washington.

General McClellan protested. The order was reiterated, and the Army of the Potomac, transportation by water to Newport News not being convenient, marched to that point.

#### FROM A LETTER FROM PHILLIPS.

"Monday, Aug. 4, 1862. The mail boat leaves here at 9 o'clock in the morning, but I generally mail my letters the evening before, writing them in the daytime. . . . Last night we received a notification that the commissary was prepared to issue fresh bread to the troops. This will set up the sick men in a very short time, and if the army should be kept much longer on hard bread and salt beef the men would not be good for much. Sickness, I presume incipient scurvy, is very prevalent here. Everybody seems to lose



all strength. I do not know of anything which set me up so much as the tomatoes. From feeling weak and languid I became quite lively and strong. . . . The only variety we have is in the way of flies, which are very thick and very troublesome. The flies here look like the common flies at home, but they have a much more insinuating way with them, biting just like mosquitoes. Their quantity, too, is perfectly astonishing. The tent is generally full of them, not to mention other bugs and creeping and crawling things, which abound in great variety. It is quite an occupation every evening to catch the bugs and throw them out of doors.

Yesterday (3d Aug.) we had inspection and I turned out as usual with Martin's Battery. . . . Recruits and soldiers returned from furlough, come in, a few every day, though whether more than enough to make up for the exodus of the sick I do not know. There is a little too much of getting up companies. If men won't recruit without a commission, send home some of the officers here on recruiting service, but do not get up new companies to please the vanity of towns and the martial glory of untried men."

---

In the following words Napoleon Bonaparte expresses similar sentiments:

"It has been said that the victories of the French Republic were won by the new volunteers, who were inexperienced in war. There could be no greater mistake; they were won by the 180,000 old soldiers of the monarchy. You will not soon see me going to war with recruits."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Aug. 5, 1862: Yesterday afternoon some batteries of horse artillery went by with forage as if going on a reconnoissance, and at midnight we got orders to be ready to move at short notice with two days' rations. So the un-





lucky adjutant had to arise, copy the order, and send it to the other batteries. This morning there was some artillery firing. . . . We were probably put under marching orders so as to be ready to support the reconnoissance if necessary. . . . Let me explain the two kinds of Light Artillery:—‘Horse Artillery,’ or ‘Flying Artillery’ has all the cannoneers mounted on horseback. In ‘Mounted Artillery’—the common Light Batteries,—the cannoneers walk or ride on the carriages. We are ‘Mounted Artillery.’ There are only a few batteries of ‘Horse Artillery’ in the service, and they are all attached to the Artillery Reserve. They are used to manœuvre with cavalry on reconnoissance &c. General Stoneman in his flying expeditions uses Cavalry and Horse Artillery. The Fifth Battery is not yet remounted and equipped.”

### THIRD MASS. BATTERY.

COMPANY ORDERS.

HARRISON'S LANDING, VA.

Aug. 5, 1862.

Lieut. Valentine M. Dunn, having been commissioned as Senior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Philip H. Tyler as Junior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Aaron F. Walcott as Senior 2d Lieut., and Sergeant Thomas M. Cargill as Junior 2d Lieut. of Battery C, Mass. Art'y, they will at once assume command of their respective positions and be respected and obeyed accordingly.

Lieut. Charles A. Phillips, having been commissioned as Senior 1st Lieut., Lieut. Henry D. Scott as Junior 1st Lieut., Sergeant Pelco W. Blake as Senior 2d Lieut. of Battery E, Mass. Art'y, they will be respected and obeyed accordingly.

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*

Battery C, Mass. Art'y.

Grows' "Journal":—"Tuesday Aug. 5, 1862. About 9 this morning the ambulances began bringing more sick aboard. Got filled up about noon and then got ready to start as soon as the water is high enough. . . . Got under way about 4 o'clock this afternoon, and went down the river. The scenery is very fine. We had a flag of truce flying, and the rebels did not fire on us. The other boats, such as the



mail and transports, go up and down the river accompanied by gunboats.

Arrived off Fortress Monroe about 8 o'clock in the evening, and anchored for the night.

I cannot describe my feelings on beholding this place again! 'Burnside's Fleet' are in Hampton Roads, and the several men-of-war.

On board, six have died since yesterday, and I do not know how many are dead in the after cabin. There is one poor fellow near me, who cannot stand it till morning.

Wednesday, Aug. 6th. The poor fellow near where I laid on deck, died at 12 last night. Since we started twenty have died. About 10 this forenoon, we received orders to go up the river to Norfolk, and there take in coal and ice to last us to Philadelphia. The trip was quite pleasant.

Passed the old rebel batteries on Sewall's Point; also the place where the 'Merrimac' was blown up, and the old U. S. Frigate 'United States' burned by the Secesh. I also saw Portsmouth, a very fine place. About one o'clock, we hauled alongside the wharf, and began taking in coal and ice. My goodness, how hot it is! Got aboard about 40 tons of coal, and about 5 tons of ice. We laid here till about 4 in the afternoon, when we swung off from the wharf, and 'steamed up' for the Fort for orders. A nice breeze sprung up, and it is very pleasant. Arrived off the Fort about half past 6, 'lay off and on' for about an hour. Got orders to go to Philadelphia. This was cheering to me, knowing that Massachusetts would send for her sick and wounded. Soon got under way, passing the Rip Raps, and proceeded out to sea by the large 'Light Boat.' It is a fine evening, and the stars are beginning to come out. Large porpoises jump out of the water and play around the steamer. The sea breeze has already begun to revive the sick. It does seem good to me!

Five more have died, making in all since last Monday



night twenty-five, mostly fever cases. They were kept too long at the Landing before they were sent away for the North, and many, I think, who have died on board would have been alive if they had been sent away before."

### PRISONERS EXCHANGED.

"Aug. 6, 1862. [Chase's Diary, Corporal Chase being with the Third Mass. Battery.] Thirty thousand prisoners returned from Richmond; among them Richard Heyes and Edward F. Smith of the 5th Mass. Battery, taken prisoners at the battle of Gaines Mills."

---

Grows' "Journal":—"Thursday, April 7, 1862. I only got about two hours' sleep last night. I laid down on deck. Excitement is now keeping me up. About 8 this morning passed the capes of Delaware, Cape May and Cape Henlopen, and entered the mouth of the river. We are now 100 miles from Philadelphia, and expect to get there about 3 this afternoon.

It does look splendid to see the farms on the banks of the river, Delaware on one side and Pennsylvania on the other; Philadelphia being on the left hand side, going up the river. Such neat houses and barns made me for the first time realize that I was coming near home. We arrived at 'quarantine' about 3 in the afternoon, and waited some time for the Doctor to come aboard before we could go to the city. He came at length and in a short time left us, when we proceeded up to the city, only 10 miles.

Arrived at the Pier in about an hour and made fast. After waiting almost an hour, everything then being in readiness we began to go ashore.

On landing I once again found myself in the presence of a vast throng of white men and women in citizens' dress. Some of the ladies grabbed my knapsack, others my canteen, and haversack, and overcoat, offering me tea, coffee.



cakes, wine, and water etc. I endeavored to get away from them, but it was of no use. I took a few cakes and some strong tea, and accepted a handkerchief from a young lady and started to go ahead, but soon found myself in the hands of two ladies, who passed me over to some gentlemen, who put me in a carriage to be sent to the Hospital. Such kindness I can never forget. On the way, a little boy came up to the carriage with a lot of nice pears, and threw them in, to us. After a drive of an hour we arrived at the Hospital, and I was shown to 'Ward W.'

Friday, Aug. 8th. At  $\frac{1}{2}$  past 10 this forenoon the surgeon's call was sounded, and those who were able, got up, put on their dressing-gowns and sat in the chair at the end of the bed.

I was greatly astonished to find the Doctor so kind. He soon came to my bed and talked with me. He ordered iron and lemon juice, and then passed on."

#### LETTER FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP AT HARRISON'S LANDING,  
Aug. 8, 1862.

I received a letter from Mayor Taber of New Bedford last night, asking me to give him an account of things in the Battery, and I am preparing a long memorial on the subject.

Glad to see that Serg't. F. A. Lull has been commissioned Junior 2d. Lieutenant. . . . Lull's claims and qualifications were so much superior, that I was very much excited at the idea of his being overlooked. He is a good hearted, willing, and smart man, and will make a good officer." [Lull's commission was dated Aug. 1, 1862.]

Grows' "Journal":—"Saturday, Aug. 9, 1862. The Doctor came round at the usual hour and ordered me to continue with the same medicine. In each ward there are two men nurses, a ward master, and two Sisters of Charity,





and they are very kind, doing a large amount of good in relieving the suffering of the men.

About 8 this evening I was obliged to call the Doctor. He gave me some medicine, also some laudanum to make me sleep. Had a hard night of it—greatly distressed for breath.

Sunday, Aug. 10th. There are 1300 sick to arrive here today. Listened to the church bells. It made me feel blue. About 3 this afternoon, the sick began to arrive. I sat at the end of the ward, looking at them. They looked bad enough. Two were brought into my ward, both of them speechless, one of them looked dead, he was so far gone. The Doctors gave him some wine to revive him, but he could not speak, or take any notice. Poor fellow, we do not know where he belongs nor who he is."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Sunday, Aug. 10, 1862. No rain, no shade, no clouds, but day after day the same hot sun shining down from the same cloudless sky on the same parched earth. The heat tells on everybody. For the last few nights I have been trying to solve the problem how to cover up my head and feet with a short blanket, and I invariably give up in despair.

Our table is set in a rustic arbor, and we have white china cups, plates &c., and unlimited 'contrabands' to tend table and keep off the flies.

We have quite a large mess now: Captain Martin and his officers,—Lieutenants Dunn, Tyler, Walcott and Cargill.—Lieutenants Scott and Blake, and myself.

One of our men arrived here a day or two ago, discharged from hospital at Georgetown and ordered to report here for duty, and within 24 hours after his arrival our doctor reported him insane, and sent him to the hospital.

We keep two or three regiments over on the other side, and



a signal officer who was here yesterday told me that there were no signs of the enemy over there. Captain Henry Benson, who was wounded the other day at Malvern Hill, was the commander of one of the best Horse Batteries in the service. He was orderly sergeant at Bull Run, and got his commission for services there. He was at Hanover Court House and annoyed the enemy terribly.

One of our men picked up a shell thrown across the river by the rebels, which must have been taken from us at Gaines Mills or afterwards. It was a 3 inch Schenkle shell, which had been furnished to us only a few days before the fight. We left 15 rounds of these in our limbers, and Weeden left about as many more. Not understanding the nature of the projectiles the rebels had neglected to arrange the percussion faze plug properly, and consequently the shell did not explode.

There is a most intense craving for a variety of food, and I hope our government will not furnish any more such hard bread as the men have had to eat for the last six months: hard, tasteless, and indigestible. I think it has killed a great many. It seems to me that Government might at least furnish as good bread as the common ship bread. The rebels are wise in this respect. They do not issue any hard bread, but serve out flour, and many a captured haversack has been found full of hot biscuit.

Sunday afternoon, August 10th Seymour's, formerly McCall's, Division went across the river. This being the other Division of the Corps we supposed we should follow. Sunday evening we got an order to be ready to march at 2 p. m. the next day on temporary service, with 5 days' rations and forage, 40 rounds of ammunition in cartridge boxes, 60 in the wagons. After various conjectures where we were going, we came to the conclusion that we were going on a reconnoissance to Petersburg.

The next morning the order was countermanded. I went



down to the shore to buy a thin flannel blouse but did not succeed. Sutlers, Quartermasters and Commissaries were packing up and sending their things on board steamers and schooners. Adams Express has been ordered to bring no more packages to Harrison's Landing, and everything looks like an evacuation. Meanwhile the weather continues hot and we are gradually shrinking away. I weighed myself (Aug. 11th) and found I had lost 15 pounds since leaving Gaines Hill."

#### THE BATTERY TEAMS.

CAMP NEAR HARRISON'S LANDING,

Aug. 11, 1862.

Captain Martin to Capt. Auchmuty A. A. G.

CAPT. AUCHMUTY.

Sir,

I have received orders to turn in 3 teams out of the number with which the Batteries are supplied. I beg leave to make the following statement in regard to this:—

There are four batteries in this Division; one [Captain Allen's] is without guns, but the men are mostly here, and the present supply of teams—13—gives merely three to each Battery and one Hospital team loaded exclusively with hospital stores.

The number of men attached to the Batteries is 477; according to the regimental allowance of one team for 200 men, it would require two and one half teams to carry rations &c. for these men. In addition to this we have 5 days' forage for 380 horses to carry,—This being the total number of horses actually with the Batteries. This amount of forage would weigh 20,100 pounds, and, if the number of teams is reduced, as the orders contemplate, we should have but  $6\frac{1}{2}$  teams to carry this amount, for which purpose each team would be loaded with 4,092 pounds, a load which would render it impossible for the teams to follow troops in light marching order.

I respectfully request that under these circumstances, there being a full complement of officers and men for four batteries, we may be allowed to retain the teams we now have.

Very respectfully,

Your ob't. serv't.

A. P. MARTIN, *Capt.*  
Com'd'g Division Art'y

---

Captain Martin was allowed to retain the teams.



Grows' "Journal":—(Philadelphia) "Monday, Aug. 11, 1862. One of the men brought in yesterday died in the night, the other is very low, and has not spoken yet. He had watchers all night.

Tuesday, Aug. 12th. Went to dinner at 12. Mutton chops, potatoes, gravy, bread etc. The Doctors tell us to eat all we can, and then it will take a great while to get the men up."

From a letter of Lieut. Phillips: "August 12, 1862. This forenoon some gunboats lying near the ordnance wharf opened on the opposite shore, bursting their shells somewhere up among the woods."

LETTER OF MAYOR TABER OF NEW BEDFORD  
AFTER RECEIVING THE MEMORIAL  
OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"MAYOR'S OFFICE,  
CITY OF NEW BEDFORD,  
Aug. 14, 1862.

LIEUT. CHAS. A. PHILLIPS.

*Dr. Sir.*

Accept my sincere thanks for your full and frank letter of the 8th inst.

In stating to you that it corroborates in every particular a statement I have received, signed by seventy-five of the Battery, you can estimate its value to me. Every account I have received has been of one tenor. You are probably aware of the strong interest I have felt in the welfare of the Battery. The majority of its members I am personally acquainted with, and know them to be reliable men, who would not under any circumstances shirk a duty; brave men and hardy. Tell them all that my best exertions shall be used for its recuperation.

In the meantime, I would be pleased to hear from you any suggestions you feel inclined to make, and in anything that





may tend to restore the confidence of the men,—which appears to be unlimited in you,—or to promote the interests of the Battery, command me in any way.

Very sincerely Yrs.

I. C. TABER.

I shall see Gov. Andrew within a few days, and with his authority will endeavor to obtain some recruits."

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"HARRISON'S LANDING, JAMES RIVER, VA.

Aug. 14, 1862.

I wrote you on the 25th ult., I think, and after I had finished my letter I found that my last stamp was a 1 cent one, and I could not beg, borrow, or steal one, so I sent it without a stamp, signed by our Lieutenant, as I frequently do. Perhaps it did not reach you. Myself and 25 others are with the 3d Mass. Battery, but when Captain Allen comes, we expect to be reorganized. The Captain will, if possible, return on the 26th instant. . . . The Army, or portions of it are preparing to leave the Peninsula, and our knapsacks were taken from us last Sunday, and our tents, with the knapsacks, are already on ship-board. Where we are going we know not. . . . The weather is scorching hot and the 'light weights' are in great danger of being carried off by the mosquitoes. They are well drilled and make furious charges and make night hideous with their infernal buzzing."



## CHAPTER XIII.

### FROM HARRISON'S LANDING TO ACQUIA CREEK.

#### THE BATTLE OF SECOND MANASSAS OR SEC- OND BULL RUN.

AUGUST 30, 1862.

"But north looked the Dictator;  
North looked he long and hard."

—LORD MACAULAY.

#### THE RELIEF OF MAJ. GEN. JOHN POPE.—THE PROTECTION OF WASHINGTON.

They were ten days getting ready to move, and on August 14th, 1862, at 5 p. m. the Army was set in motion, Porter's Corps marching to Williamsburg, halfway between Yorktown and the Chickahominy River, according to orders there to await the arrival of the next Corps.

All superfluous baggage had been packed up and put on board a schooner, and on Thursday, August 14th, just after supper, Scott, Phillips, Chase and others being with the Third Mass. Battery, orders were received to get ready to start immediately, so they hitched up, packed up, and waited till about 10.30 p. m. when they moved forward parallel with the river towards Fortress Monroe.

"By midnight," wrote Phillips, "the Division had got stretched out on the road and we halted in a jam. I lay down on a limber, with my reins in my hands, and got what sleep I could.

At 3 in the morning of the 15th the column again started. Sykes was ahead of us. The weather was beautiful and cool, the road was very good, and the Provost Guard not



being such an institution as formerly the corn fields which were abundant, were pretty well stripped. At every halt fires were lighted and ears of corn roasted. Peaches were plenty but not ripe. There were tomatoes enough to furnish at least one meal a day, and on the whole we lived well. About 5 o'clock in the afternoon we crossed the Chickahominy, near its mouth, on a pontoon bridge over seven hundred yards long, and camped a mile from the shore."

This pontoon bridge, it has been said, surpassed in construction, skill and capacity, anything that had been attempted in the annals of military bridge building.

On August 16, 1862, news was received at Porter's Headquarters, that the main body of the enemy was moving north, intending to crush Pope before McClellan could come to his relief, and to proceed directly to Washington. General Porter sent this information to McClellan, and reported that, unless otherwise ordered, he would leave Williamsburg at 4 a. m. August 17th without waiting for the arrival of the next Corps; would complete the march to Newport News, and hasten to General Pope's relief. This he did, and in pursuance of this plan, the Division moved on the 16th, passed through Williamsburg and camped at 5 p. m. close by Fort Magruder, about half a mile outside the city.

Only the Fifth Corps went to Acquia Creek, the remainder of the Army of the Potomac went directly to Alexandria, Va. seven miles from Washington.

On Sunday, Aug. 17th, Porter's Division marched at 7 a. m. and encamped within a mile of Big Bethel. "Reached Yorktown (Chase's Diary) at 1 p. m. and made coffee at our old camp ground of April 5, 1862."

Phillips refers to this revisiting of old scenes in the following words:—"As we passed through Yorktown I rode into our old camp. Everything was changed. Grass and weeds growing everywhere. My bedstead still remained.



and the grove around our tents. My chair was gone. The house that we built at Wormley's Creek was all gone, the ruins of the chimney still remaining."

The same day they marched three miles beyond Howard's Mills and camped, reaching Newport News on the 18th and going into park about 1.30 p. m. "A bath in salt water" writes Chase, "was a luxury enjoyed by some."

Meanwhile the sick and wounded waited in the Hospitals.

Grows' "Journal":—"Sunday, Aug. 17, 1862. (Philadelphia.) Prof. W. B. Rogers of Boston, came into the ward with his brother who is our surgeon. He talked with me, took my name, and residence when at home. He starts for Boston tomorrow, and will attend to my being transferred to a Massachusetts hospital. Divine service was held this afternoon, but I did not attend, not feeling able."

Chase in a letter of the 18th says his health is "tip top."

Tuesday the 19th, at 7 a. m., the Fifth Corps marched to Hampton, and taking the three batteries of the Division and Thompson's Battery of the Artillery Reserve on board the "City of Norwich," hauled into the stream off Fortress Monroe. In the morning of the 20th they sailed up Chesapeake Bay towing two schooners and three barges, bound for Acquia Creek, Va., a point of advantage between Fredericksburg and Washington, and anchored that night in the Potomac River.

On Thursday, August 21st, they landed at Acquia Creek, and with relation to the accommodations, Lt. Phillips writes: "the Colonel commanding the Post taking compassion upon us, we spread our blankets on his office floor, and slept there all night."

On Friday, Aug. 22d, about 5 p. m., leaving Waterman's Fourth, R. I. Battery, which included the 30 members of the Fifth Mass., at Acquia Creek, the Third Mass. Battery and its contingent marched 8 or 10 miles beyond, towards Fred-





ericksburg, Va., which is 55 miles from Washington, and about equidistant from that city and Richmond.

They camped on the road.

On Saturday, August 23d, General Porter started his command in a southerly direction at daybreak, and marched to Falmouth on the opposite bank of the Rappahannock River from Fredericksburg. Here they stopped to rest until 4 p. m., and during the interval Lieut. Phillips called upon General Ambrose E. Burnside, and went over to Fredericksburg. See p. 443 Burnside.

In the afternoon, the march was resumed for 10 miles towards Culpeper Court House, Va., on the Orange and Alexandria railroad, 69 miles from Washington and 12 miles north of the Rapidan River. The roads were very hilly and rocky, and crossed frequently by beautiful little brooks. They camped near Deep Run. The next day, August 24th, was Sunday. In the Hospital, at Philadelphia, Grows wrote in his journal: "About 3 this afternoon Surgeon Dr. Hays came through the ward for inspection, which lasted a short time. A Doctor was buried 'under arms' this afternoon. There are not many deaths here now."

In camp by Deep Run reveille sounded at daylight. The Third Battery marched in company with Sykes's Division to Culpeper Court House, hearing reports of rebels ahead between them and General Morell's Division: countermarched about one and a half miles, recrossing Deep Run, and went "In Battery" on the brow of a small hill behind Regular Battery D, 5th U. S. (Griffin's). "Changed positions" (Chase's Diary) "with Battery D, about 11 a. m."

Lt. Phillips speaks of the battle array as "making a most formidable appearance spread over the hills." At 3.30 the Battery again limbered up and for the third time that day marching over the same road, joined Morell's Division.

Grows' Journal:—"Aug. 25, 1862. (Philadelphia)



Orders came today for none of the men to be allowed 'passes' till after the 1st of September, and this makes it very hard, as many of the men have families living here in the city."

The evolutions of August 25th were much the same, the Third Mass. Battery starting out at 6 a. m. They marched a mile, halted till 12 o'clock, turned round, marched back, and camping on the same ground they left, remained there that day.

And here is the first mention of the restoration of the guns to the Fifth Mass. Battery, all that was lacking to place it upon its former footing in the army. Lieut. Phillips wrote home in a letter dated "Vicinity of Deep Run or Barrett's Ford, or *somewhere*":—"General Burnside is rather interested in the Fifth Battery, and I think I shall get some guns pretty soon."

On Tuesday, Aug. 26th, at 3 a. m., reveille was sounded, and they marched with the Division to Kelly's Ford, about 9 miles from Deep Run and 12 miles above Barrett's Ford. Lieut. Phillips put one section on picket, and sent Lieut. Scott and three wagons to Falmouth for forage. Heavy cannonading was heard in front. The next day they marched past Bealton to Warrenton Junction.

#### MET POPE AND GOING NORTH.

It was on August 27th, 1862, at 10 o'clock a. m. that General Porter joined General Pope at Warrenton Junction on the Orange and Alexandria railroad, 48 miles from Washington. General Pope finding his Right turned by General Ewell, had fallen back towards Warrenton, where he was joined by General Joseph Hooker. Overtaking the rebels under Ewell at Haymarket a severe fight ensued, terminating at night in the defeat of the enemy. On that day the Federal gunboats destroyed the rebel works at City Point, Va.



## THE SECOND BATTLE OF MANASSAS.

The first battle of Manassas or Bull Run was fought July 21, 1861, and the Union troops under McDowell were defeated by the Confederates under Beauregard. The stream called Bull Run was described at the time as a mere rivulet, dry in many places, but containing from four to six feet of water in the channel after heavy rains. It extends for about six miles north and south, and is crossed by the Manassas railroad. A Confederate battery which made great havoc among our troops was situated on a slight eminence in a ravine on the west side of the Run.

The only places besides the fords at intervals of a mile or two, where the stream could be crossed, were three bridges, viz., a stone structure, over which passes the Warrenton turnpike; a wooden bridge at Blackburn's Ford seven miles below, on the direct road from Centreville to Manassas; and a mile or so below this, the bridge by which the Orange and Alexandria Railway is carried over Bull Run. Three miles beyond Bull Run is Manassas Junction where the rebels had intrenched themselves, the stream itself forming a defensive line eight miles in length from the Stone Bridge to the railroad; the wooded slopes of the hills furnishing masks for batteries. Sudley's Ford across Bull Run was two or three miles above Stone Bridge.

The battlefield of Manassas or Bull Run, is 34 miles from Washington, about four miles from the railroad station at the junction of the Orange and Alexandria and Manassas Gap railroads.

"Aug. 28, 1862. (Chase's Diary.) Reveille at 1.30 a. m. Left camp about 3 a. m. Marched half an hour and halted an hour for troops to pass; halted near the railroad cars. Saw the ruins of a train burned by the rebels the night of August 26th. Heavy cannonading heard in front



p. m. Marched to Bristoe Station, reaching there at 1 p. m."

The night of the 28th Sigel's command was just south of the Warrenton turnpike, the portion running from Gainesville to Centreville, part on the left near Newmarket, the remainder near the junction of the turnpike and Sudley Springs road at Groveton. Kearney was at Centreville. Heintzelman was with Hooker at Bull Run. Porter was at Bristoe. Part of McDowell's Corps had contested unsuccessfully the passage of Longstreet through Thoroughfare Gap in the Bull Run Mountains, through which passes the Manassas Gap R. R. from the country west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, through Manassas Gap and Thoroughfare Gap, to Manassas Junction, and part had been engaged with the enemy near Groveton.

Banks with his Corps was guarding the army trains at Bristoe.

On the rebel side, Longstreet was encamped at the foot of the mountain, on the eastern slope, having passed through Thoroughfare Gap.

On the morning of the 29th of August, the position was as follows:—The rebel general Jackson had marched round Pope's right flank, gained his rear, captured large supplies at Manassas, cut his railroad communication by the Orange and Alexandria R. R. with Washington, and was awaiting the arrival of other rebel forces under Lee on the old battlefield of Bull Run.

The Fifth Mass. Battery men with the Third Mass. Battery left camp at 6.30 a. m. when the advance met the enemy. They opened one or more batteries on our troops but fired slowly. Our batteries and infantry were placed in position to give the enemy battle. "We marched," wrote Phillips, "to Manassas Junction, then up the Manassas Gap R. R. towards Thoroughfare Gap, and Morell's Division formed line of battle on the hills in a splendid position, our





pickets being within hearing distance of Thoroughfare Gap, and hearing the Rebel troops passing. Our infantry was formed in plain sight and the rebels opened a battery on them, killing one or two. The infantry then retired under cover and Hazlett's Battery [5th U. S. Battery D, Lt. Charles E. Hazlett] shelled a little. While I was expecting an attack on our part I learned it was proposed to retire as we came. However, after commanding and countermanding we stayed there that night."

On August 30, 1862, at half past three in the morning, Major General Fitz John Porter received from Major General John Pope orders, written in the field on the previous evening at 8.50, to march his command immediately to the field of battle of that day, and to report to him in person for orders.

"You are to understand," so ran the despatch, "that you are expected to comply strictly with this order, and to be present on the field within three hours after its reception, or after daybreak tomorrow morning."

To reach the field within three hours after the reception of the orders at 3.30 a. m. would be before half past six, but daylight came so soon after that Porter, in order to obey instructions, was obliged to make a flank movement with his entire force in the presence of the enemy. Orders coming to Morell from Porter to lose not a moment in carrying out these instructions, Morell issued his orders to his command, and at the head of Griffin's Brigade which Martin's Battery followed, took the direct road to Centreville.

General Pope was at Groveton. It is said that Morell's caution and circumspection with reference to Griffin's Brigade, waiting till he had called in his skirmishers, caused him to lose sight of the rest of his Division, and in going to Centreville he supposed he was following Sykes according to instructions, but Sykes had gone to Groveton. Orders



were sent to Morell on the Gainesville road which of course did not reach him.

General Porter reported to General Pope as directed, and placed his Corps north of the Warrenton turnpike near the Dogan house, facing toward the west. Next him was Sigel, then Reno, then Heintzelman. Ricketts and King were in reserve. South of the Warrenton pike was Reynolds' Division. Sykes occupied a corn field in front of the Dogan house on both sides of the Warrenton road. Morell's Division was on the right of Sykes. Immediately in front and to the left of Reynolds was rising ground covered with timber and scrub oak. On Porter's right front was a forest, and between the two was cleared ground a half mile in extent, across which was an elevated ridge occupied by the enemy's artillery commanding this cleared space and the turnpike, and in a position to concentrate a direct flank fire upon our forces in case we made the attack. The enemy's forces were concealed; the Union forces were in plain sight of the enemy.

It appears that it had been the design of General Pope on the day before to possess himself of the coverts provided by these forests, but his efforts were unsuccessful, resulting in much loss; his only gain being the knowledge, too dearly bought, that the rebel general Jackson was present in large force especially on the Left, and that he had the advantage at the north of a railroad embankment to add to the strength of his position. It is said that General Porter learned at General Pope's headquarters, that the efforts of the 29th had been mainly a series of skirmishes, artillery contests at long range, and a few attacks, after strong protests and delay, by Brigades and separate Divisions resulting in repulses and heavy losses.

Between 12 and 1 p. m. of the 30th, Porter was ordered to push forward on the Warrenton turnpike to be followed by King and Reynolds, while the Division of Ricketts would



pursue the Haymarket road followed by the Corps of General Heintzelman. The cavalry was to be assigned by General McDowell.

Orders from McDowell directed Porter:—

“Organize a strong advance to precede your command, and push on rapidly in pursuit of the enemy until you come in contact with him. Report frequently. Bayard’s brigade will be ordered to report to you: push it well to the left as you advance.”

Reynolds and Porter, it is affirmed, were confident that the enemy with numerous artillery were massing their forces on the left.

General McDowell believed the enemy was retreating when they had merely withdrawn from the Right in order to concentrate on our Left.

General Porter prepared for a strong attack, which Butterfield supported by Sykes commenced at 3 p. m., charging across the open field nearly to the woods, hoping to sweep round to the left and take the guns of the enemy, but were repelled by musketry fire on the right and front, and an incessant cross fire of artillery. They held their ground 30 minutes assisted by Hazlett’s Battery.

General Porter had desired the help of Sigel; he again asked for it after Butterfield’s repulse, but the necessity was comprehended too late. The enemy was in a position to sweep the entire ground, over which the Fifth Corps had to pass, with its numerous artillery, and its musketry protected by the railway embankment, and four desperate attacks, most gallantly made, were repulsed, in the attempt to take the embankment, our men being fired upon by many with stones, time being too pressing to admit of loading firearms. The rebel general Longstreet attempted to cut the Union troops off from the turnpike by pressing upon Warren on our Left.

Porter’s attack with proper support might have broken Jackson’s line but with the terrible fire from the enemy’s guns it was madness to continue, and the order was given



to retire to the plateau in the rear of the Henry and Robinson houses which commanded the Stone Bridge over Bull Run, which was saved. It was at the Henry house on the right of the turnpike that General Morell joined the 1st Division having ridden from Centreville.

Weeden's Fourth R. I. Battery, Captain Richard Waterman commanding, in which were thirty of our Fifth Mass. Battery men, took position on the heights near the Warren-ton turnpike, commanding the field, over which Butterfield was to advance to the attack. One section, the remainder staying on the hill at the Henry house, advanced later to within canister range of the woods, but returned soon after and fired shrapnell at the enemy's infantry in the edge of the woods, limbering up to fall back with the infantry. (Sigel.) Subsequently they went into position on the top of Bull Run Hill, covering the charge on the Left of our lines, and at 7.30 p. m. moved with the Army to Centreville.

Louis E. Pattison served as cannoneer throughout the campaign.

The Adjutant General's Report of the state of Rhode Island, 1865, in its casualties gives "one man wounded."

It is recorded in the official reports of the Adjutant General of the state of Massachusetts, that the Fourth R. I. Battery was engaged in the Second Battle of Bull Run, and "one of the men of the Fifth (Mass.) Battery was wounded."

The name of this soldier was Francis Oldis, and he was taken to Washington, D. C., and placed with the wounded in "Ward P" of the Armory Hospital. He subsequently rejoined the reunited Fifth Mass. Battery.

#### NOTES OF LOUIS E. PATTISON.

Nov. 2, 1901.

"Only one section of the Fourth R. I. Battery went into action on the Bull Run field. The whole battery went into





position when Longstreet was coming through the Gap, but my recollection is that no shots were fired. On the next day on the old Bull Run field, General Sigel ordered Captain Waterman to proceed to a position near the R. R. cut, and Captain Waterman replied that he must have orders from General Porter. Sigel replied angrily that Porter could fight his men, and he would fight his own, and you can readily see why our forces were unsuccessful."

---

The Captain called for volunteers from the Left and Centre sections to help man the Right section to go into action near the R. R. cut, and Sergt. William B. Pattison and his brother Louis E. Pattison of the Fifth Mass. Battery volunteered to go with the Right section into action.

Lieut. Richard Waterman in command of the battery was promoted to captain July 25th, 1862, receiving his commission in the field.

Colonel J. Albert Monroe of the 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery of which the "Fourth" was "Battery C," says, in a paper published by the Soldiers and Sailors Historical Society of Rhode Island:—

"Our northern historians when it has been necessary to mention the artillery, have not been so painstaking [reference to the Southerners who mentioned them with great accuracy] and have generally only incidentally mentioned that 'a battery' here or there did so and so, ignoring entirely what particular battery it was, or who commanded it, unless it was a regular battery, and in that case it is designated by its commanding officer's name. The exceptions are comparatively few, and they seem to be accidental, rather than intentional!"

He observes,

"the marked contrast between the honorable mention of infantry and cavalry with that of light artillery batteries."

Having by long and careful reading been impressed with the justice of this criticism, pains have been taken in the present work to make conspicuous the well authenticated movements of the light artillery, to give the complete official designations of the batteries, and whenever they are called



by the names of their commanders, the full name is given at the first mention.

Anxiously the men in the hospitals north and south were looking for news on that day. Grows wrote in his journal: "Saturday, Aug. 30, 1862. (Philadelphia.) Got the papers to see about the Army. The news is not very encouraging, but still we all hope for the best."

Lt. Phillips's notes of the event now before us contain the following observations:—

"Saturday, Aug. 30, 1862, we began to retire at 3 a. m. Griffin's Brigade and Martin's Battery forming the rear guard. I waited till the pickets were all drawn in, and the troops gone, but no rebels appeared.

#### AT CENTREVILLE.

Returning to the Junction we marched up the railroad, forded Bull Run and went into park near Centreville with Griffin's brigade, the rest of the Division having got out of sight and hearing. Some cannonading was going on, but this was too common to excite attention. We started a plum duff, but before it was finished we got orders to hitch up and started for Bull Run,—finally going on across Bull Run. By dark we reached Stone Bridge, Franklin's forces marching with us. Here we found our troops retiring, and halted till General Franklin ordered us to return, and we camped in Centreville about midnight. Butterfield's and Martindale's brigades badly cut up. Fletcher Webster reported killed."

From the Notes of Corporal Chase of the 5th Mass. then with the 3rd Mass. Battery:—"August 30, 1862. Hitched up at 4 a. m. and relieved Battery D, 5th U. S. (Hazlett's) in front, and remained in position half an hour, then left for Centreville, Va. Reached Centreville at 11 a. m. Caissons sent to the rear this morning. Saw about 150 prisoners at



Centreville. Hitched up at 5 p. m. and started to reinforce the troops in front; advanced about a mile and a half to the front when we met teams and wounded soldiers coming to the rear. In a short time the whole army appeared to be retreating in the wildest confusion. For about three hours the troops both able and disabled continued to pass us; 3rd Mass. Battery countermarched and camped on heights at Centreville."

Captain Waterman's battery moved by order of General Morell from Centreville, on the morning of August 31st towards Alexandria, to procure forage for the horses, they being in a very exhausted state, not having had any grain for five days. It moved as far as Fairfax Court House and encamped; three of the horses having dropped dead from exhaustion as the battery moved into camp. In front of the Third Battery cannonading was heard, and the smoke seen. Hacks were arriving from Washington to remove the wounded. The Battery advanced about an eighth of a mile to the front about 11 a. m., and went "In Battery" supported by a large force of infantry. Several lines of battle formed and skirmishers were thrown out, remaining in position all day and night, but all remained quiet until late in the evening, when the advance batteries began to shell the woods, and the pickets and skirmishers fired several volleys of musketry. Generals Pope and McDowell passed the Battery in the evening. No mail was received, no newspapers, and all interest seemed to be centred in the wagons which had been sent to Alexandria and Falmouth for supplies which were sorely needed, when the alarming news reached the waiting lines, so advantageously placed upon the hills of Centreville, that the enemy was between the Army of the Potomac and Washington!

Soon after the first battle of Bull Run the Richmond *Whig* of July 24, 1861, published the following under the head-line of "The Devoted Band":—



"The shortest path to peace is that which carries havoc and desolation to our invaders. It is believed that there are five or ten thousand men in the South ready and willing to share the fate of Curtius and devote themselves to the salvation of the country. It is proposed that all who are willing to make this sacrifice, shall arm themselves with a sword, two five shooters and a carbine each, and meet, on horseback, at some place to be designated, convenient for the great work in hand. Fire and sword must be carried to the houses of those who are visiting those blessings upon their neighbors. Philadelphia, and even New York, is not beyond the reach of a long and brave arm. The moral people of these cities cannot be better taught the virtues of invasion, than by the blazing light of their own dwellings. None need apply for admission to 'The Devoted Band' but those who are prepared to take their life in their hand, and who would indulge not the least expectation of ever returning. *They dedicate their lives to the destruction of their enemies.*

A. S. B. D. B.

Richmond.

All Southern papers are requested to give this notice a few insertions."

Now, after a year had passed, and another Bull Run battle had been fought, the "long and brave arm" was actually stretching out its hand very near indeed to Washington, with the index finger pointing to Baltimore.

A few miles northwest of Fairfax Court House, Kearny was desperately opposing its force at Chantilly, where he made the gallant dash which cost him his life.

#### "THE SYMBOLS OF GOVERNMENT."

Hunger and fatigue so lately controlling emotions, passed out of mind. Chagrin at the second failure at Manassas lost its sharpest sting in the actual presence of the peril, which had so long threatened the citadel which held the "symbols of government," the treaties and seals, for the safety of which Edwin M. Stanton then Buchanan's attorney general, had trembled, long before the first rebel gun was fired.





## THE PROTECTION OF WASHINGTON.

General McClellan wrote General Porter September 1, 1862, 5.30 p. m.:—

"This week is the crisis of our fate. Say the same thing to all my friends in the Army of the Potomac, and that the last request I have to make of them is, that for their country's sake they will extend to General Pope the same support they ever have to me. I am in charge of the defenses of Washington."

At the close of General Porter's acknowledgment of this letter, he said:—

"Our killed, wounded, and enfeebled troops attest our devoted duty."

It was McClellan who disposed the troops around Washington, placing the Fifth Corps on Hall's Hill. Not being able to procure either rations or forage, the Fourth R. I. Battery moved on the 1st of September to within five miles of Alexandria, where part of one day's rations of grain was secured.

"The morning of that day," Chase wrote, "was cloudy and windy. Guns of the Third Mass. Battery still 'in Battery.' Went with horses, for hay, about a mile, with several regiments of infantry and a section of a battery for protection against guerillas, a. m. Thunderstorm with cold, heavy rain at 5 p. m. Left position about 12 p. m."

Phillips says of this tempest, "It began to rain just after we had got orders to be ready to move and had struck our tarpaulins. I lay down with my overcoat on, on a wet pile of hay, and tried to persuade myself that I was not wet through, but did not succeed." On that day (Sept. 1st) he afterwards wrote, "there was something of a fight. I have learnt no particulars."

## THE EXPEDITION OF LT. SCOTT.

The historian of the Third Mass. Battery thus describes the expedition for rations [see p. 417] in charge of Lt. Henry D. Scott:—



"Our army started to re-enforce General Pope's army then at Centreville.

General Lee was advancing to meet General Pope. The artillery brigade carried ten days' rations from Falmouth then the base of supplies. When out twenty miles they had used seven days' rations. Captain Augustus P. Martin, chief of the Fifth Corps Artillery, sent eighteen wagons belonging to the batteries of the Artillery Brigade in charge of Lt. Scott of the Fifth Mass. Battery back to Falmouth for rations. John D. Reed of the Third Mass. (Battery) was ordered to report to him as his assistant.

They started at four o'clock in the afternoon, run within four miles of the ration depot and went into park at nine o'clock: started at daylight for the depot. Met an extra supply train at Falmouth Heights loaded with rations for the Fifth Corps: 75 wagons. We loaded our train with forage and as soon as possible started for the batteries. . . . Orders to hurry along and reach the army at Bealton before dark 29 miles from there. Rebel cavalry had crossed the river 25 miles above. General Burnside had returned from Newbern, N. C., and with a part of his army was encamped at Fredericksburg and Falmouth. There were several hundreds of wagons on the road. An orderly on the dead run ordered the trains to turn back. The enemy had captured over three hundred wagons, and destroyed the telegraph station three miles up the road.

The Fifth Corps supply train that we met was among those captured.

We were then 15 miles from Falmouth, halfway between the Army of the Potomac and General Burnside. About dark a cavalry force and a flying artillery battery were sent out by General Burnside for our protection. At 12 o'clock at night we arrived inside the picket line at Falmouth, men and animals played out. At daylight started for Acquia Creek, arriving there at noon. A rebel battery followed us



and at intervals shelled the train. The wagons and mules were loaded on steamers and sailed for Alexandria. When we arrived there the army was retreating back from Second Bull Run. The batteries camped at Upton's Hill, where we reached them with the forage six days after starting for it. The horses in the batteries had been four days without grain or hay, having only that which they could graze in the fields."

The trains of stores which were collected at Warrenton and Warrenton Junction, and were at Bristoe, Sept. 1, 1862, were stopped at that place on account of the bridge at Bristoe having been destroyed by the rebels. Sept. 2d, the Fourth Rhode Island Battery moved to Alexandria.

Gen. McClellan was appointed to the command of the troops for the defence of Washington.

From about 12 o'clock midnight, September 1st, the Third Mass. Battery marched to sunrise of the morning of the 2d, going three-quarters of a mile from the bivouac of the previous day. They marched with a large body of troops—among them General Piatt and Battery H, 1st Ohio Artillery, who joined them on the route having been attached to the Division,—and a large baggage train, to Fairfax Court House, where they halted about 11 a. m. for breakfast. Here Lt. Scott met them having come from Alexandria. Marched again at 2 p. m. : halted on the way while skirmishers were thrown out and line of battle formed : waited about an hour and a half, then proceeded : the rear guard attacked and heavy cannonading heard. John G. Sanford and Thomas E. Chase were obliged to straggle in the rear with disabled horses. In the evening the Battery arrived at Chain Bridge. On the 3d of September the Fourth Rhode Island Battery marched to Miner's, near Hall's, Hill, and rejoined the Division. All other divisional batteries had remained with the commands.

Chase and Sanford, minus one horse etc., found the Third



Mass. Battery after much trouble on the morning of the 3d. They hitched up at 9 a. m., marched to Hall's Hill, Va., with other troops and camped in the old camp of the Mass. 22d. Regiment. Rickett's Division was occupying Captain Martin's old camp.

Lt. Phillips closes a letter with the words:—

"I went down to our old camp and looked around.

'The King of France with 40,000 men

Marched up the hill and then marched down again.'"

#### SCOTT'S SUMMING UP.

Lt. Scott thus comments on the situation:—"The enemy got tired waiting for McClellan to decide what to do, and started for Washington. The Army of the Potomac was ordered by the President to the protection of that city. The feeling of McClellan and his admirers seemed to be that they wanted to get General Pope, who was guarding Washington, driven into the Potomac.

The Army moved at once to Hampton, and were transported to Aquia Creek, moving to Fredericksburg and from there to Kelly's Ford on the Rappahannock to assist Pope. The final result was that Lee drove both armies on to Washington."





## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE BATTERY REUNITED.

"The great art of war consists in knowing how to separate in order to subsist, and how to concentrate in order to fight."

—NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.

### THE FIFTH MASS. BATTERY REUNITED AND REINSTATED.

RE-ASSIGNED TO THE FIRST DIVISION.

#### 5TH ARMY CORPS.

On September 3d, 1862, the enemy was no longer to be seen in front of Washington, but was far on its way north, and McClellan, with all the troops not needed in Washington, was in pursuit.

Our pickets having been driven in, about 4 p. m. of the 4th, the Third Mass. Battery hitched up and marched with the whole infantry force towards Falls Church, Va., to meet the enemy. "Marched about three-quarters of a mile (Chase's Diary), then countermarched with the other troops to our camp; the enemy who had but a small force, withdrew after a few shots from their batteries.—Countersign 'Yorktown 5th.'—[Other countersigns given on p. 797 contributed by General A. P. Martin, November, 1899.]

Grows' Journal: "Sept. 1, 1862. The Doctor took my name for a discharge. 5th. I was much pleased at seeing my papers this forenoon. They will be sent to General Montgomery to sign today. 7th. About 3 this afternoon Surgeon Gen. Dr. Hayes and his assistant came into the



ward for inspection. This is done every Sunday, for the purpose of seeing that things are kept clean and in their places."

David Henry Grows was discharged for disability Sept. 10, 1862.

#### LETTER OF SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"HALL'S HILL, VA.

Sept. 6, 1862.

Here I am in the old camp we left last spring. Everything looks about as we left it. We have had a hard time of it since leaving James River—constant marching and fighting for over three weeks. I was all through the Bull Run fight with Lieut. (Thomas M.) Cargill and the Third Mass. Battery caissons. These were upon the battle field while the guns went to Centreville.

It is a sad sight to see Porter's Division at the present time, worn out and ragged. Camps that held one Reg't. six months ago, now accommodate two Brigades! The 83d Penn. that left in March with 1100 men, now numbers 90, and no one Regt. over 200 men.

Our Battery is 75 men short by sickness and death. We expect to leave here in the morning to be recruited up and reorganized. Our knapsacks were sent off at Harrison's Landing over a month ago, so about all we have is what we stand in.

P. S. We go from here to Fort Corcoran."

---

"In the afternoon of September 6, 1862, the 5th and 3d Batteries [Corporal Chase still keeping the distinctive titles] were mustered for pay by Lt. C. A. Phillips, commanding. Received orders after supper to strike tents. The 3d Mass. Battery was to go to Alexandria to refit. Hitched up at 8 p. m. Marched towards Alexandria about 12 p. m. (a



silent, rapid march through the darkness) and halted near Alexandria at sunrise on the morning of the 7th, Sunday. Arrived about noon at Fairfax Seminary [A theological institution occupied as a hospital for the sick and wounded of our Army] and went into camp. All the Army except Morell's Division seemed to have disappeared."

From a Letter of Lieut. Phillips: "Sunday Evening Sept. 7, 1862. Fairfax Seminary:—I was not very well at Harrison's Landing, but a march always cures me. . . . When we left Hall's Hill for the Peninsula, I left my bedstead with Mr. Osborn, not expecting to see it again. Our unexpected return to this locality prompted me to look after it, and I found it all right, and I intend to stick by it hereafter."

On Monday the 8th they marched to Upton's Hill near Washington, and camped with Griffin's Brigade.

#### LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"UPTON'S HILL, VA.

Sept. 10, 1862.

Well, here we are again, just where we started from last spring. We have been within 4 miles of Richmond and now we are in sight of the National Capital. Little did we think, last spring, that the Army of the Potomac were to drive the enemy to the wall and after a tedious campaign and hard fighting, we would return to our old camping ground and the enemy still unconquered. We left Harrison's Landing on the night of the 14th ult. and marched to Hampton where we took a steamer to Acquia Creek, on the Potomac, and from there we have marched here by way of Fredericksburg and Manassas. . . . We have had no change of clothing since the 7th ult. and until our arrival here—Sept. 3d—we did not have time to wash our clothing and sufficiently dry it. We washed it and put it on wet



and thanks to the hot sun it was soon dry. This is what old braggadocio Pope calls 'light marching order.' We have marched over many miles of the road between Fredericksburg and here *three* times. We would advance eight or ten miles in the morning, then halt for two or three hours, then countermarch, and in the night of the same day advance again, and take position in line of battle with other troops and expect an engagement every minute. Some days we would go ahead all the way from six to twenty-five miles a day. We have escaped all the fights by mere luck or accident, but we have seen all their horrors. At the battle of Manassas we were ordered to the front about 5 p. m., and after we had advanced about a mile, we met large numbers of the wounded coming to the rear. Soon they came in crowds, and finally the whole Army. The road was blocked up with troops, and we were obliged to countermarch. The wounded passed us in every stage of mutilation, some of them on horseback with their legs and arms amputated, and the naked stumps exposed to the view of those just ordered to the front. We are here to rest and recruit, and if old Jackson will be civil for a few days, our Battery will in all probability be recruited, for we have had new officers lately commissioned for our old Battery. Twenty-eight new recruits have arrived, some for the 3d Battery; among them is one D. C. Chase of Charlestown, Mass.

Thursday morning, Sept. 11, 1862: We have our guns 'in battery' at the outposts at Upton's Hill with Griffin's Brigade. We are under the same restrictions here that we were on the Peninsula, although within two miles of the National Capital. We have a good place to camp and have plenty of soft bread served out to us. We are having a good rest and fast recruiting."

---

On Thursday the 11th Lt. Phillips went to Washington





and had a short interview with General Fitz John Porter, who requested him to address a paper to him in relation to the reorganization of the Fifth Mass. Battery. Lt. Phillips accordingly drew up a short memorial, concluding with a request for the members of the Fifth Battery to be placed in camp by themselves and supplied with guns. In Lt. Phillips' own words:—"I did not expect an immediate compliance with this request, but I had it forwarded so as to reach him that afternoon. I then went into the city and returned about dark. As it had commenced to rain I concluded to stop over night with Blake who was camped with the wagons near Fort Corcoran. The next morning, September 12th, Scott rode down before I was up, and gave me a telegraphic order, which Captain Martin had received Thursday evening, as follows:—

UNITED STATES MILITARY TELEGRAPH.

Received Sept. 11, 1862.

From Fort Corcoran

To Capt. A. P. Martin Chief of Art'y.

Direct Lt. Phillips to make requisitions for a new battery without delay.

GEO. W. MORELL

M. G.

At the same time, Scott told me, the whole Division had got marching orders and were probably on the road then. I saw at once that to get my guns I must stop behind, but this order gave no directions whatever.

I immediately rode up the road till I met Captain Martin, and we went to General Morell's Hd. Qrs. and succeeded in getting a verbal order to keep my men here in camp till I was supplied.

Captain Waterman was not over much pleased at losing the men [from the Fourth R. I. Battery] but I thought I had recruited his battery long enough."

George L. Newton of Weymouth, Mass. secretary of the Fifth Mass. Battery Association, was one of the number of those who were transferred to the Fourth R. I. Battery.



When asked to furnish the names of the others which were subsequently supplied by Gideon Spencer First Lieutenant 1st Rhode Island Light Artillery, he replied under date August 15, 1899:—"While I was one of that number I cannot recall the names of the others. If I remember correctly there were about 30 of us, and Captain Waterman was very sorry to lose us when we were ordered to report to Captain (then Lt.) Phillips at Arlington Heights after the Second Battle of Bull Run."

LETTER OF DR. GIDEON SPENCER, SECRETARY  
STATE BOARD OF SOLDIERS' RELIEF  
OF RHODE ISLAND, PROVIDENCE,  
OCT. 18, 1899:—

"I enclose list of 5th Mass. Battery men who were attached to Battery 'C' 1st R. I. Lt. Art'y. This was the 4th R. I. Battery, but 'C' in the regiment of batteries. The enclosed record was taken from the Adjutant General's Report of R. I. 1861 to 1865. This report was revised and compared with the War Department records within the past five or six years, and must be nearly perfect. It will give you at least the date of their transfer. I hope this may be of some service, as I know from experience, at this late day, the writing of history of the War of the Rebellion is a severe task."

Agan John, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Allen F. D. Priv't. Battery C; July, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Almy A. W. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from the 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Alton J. H. Priv't Batt'y C; July, 1862, attached to this Battery. Sept., 1862, transferred to 5th Mass. Battery.

Champlin E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Cooper H. D. Priv't. Battery C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

Crapo H. D. Priv't. Battery C; temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to 5th Mass. Battery.

Denham W. H. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Flynn Michael, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.



Freeborn G. H. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Gilbert J. A. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Graham B. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Gunning William, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Hathaway J. F. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Jordan S. R. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Kay J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Kiel E. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

McVey D. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Munroe J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, temporarily detached from 5th Mass. Battery.

Murray J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Newton G. L. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Oldis F. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to Battery.

Pattison L. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Pattison W. B. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Rice E. E. Priv't. Batt'y C; July, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Tucker J. C. Bugler, Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Waddington J. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Welsh Patrick, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 1862, returned to regiment.

West Benjamin, Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery, and borne on extra duty as teamster until Sept. 1862. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

Wilcox W. S. Priv't. Batt'y C; July 4, 1862, detached from 5th Mass. Battery. Sept. 12, 1862, returned to regiment.

---

To proceed with Lieut. Phillips' Letter:—"Luckily our



three wagons [see p. 410 Captain Martin] were still with the Batteries, having been turned over to the Battery quartermaster (Scott), each battery having the use of one. So Scott started off and emptied the stuff out of them while I got the men together.

As soon as we got straightened out, I marched them to a spot a short distance from Fort Corcoran, and pitched our camp. Scott and I have a brand new wall tent, which I foraged at Upton's Hill, Blake and Lull a small wedge tent, while the men have a most motley assortment of poncho tents &c. Our camp is in a very pleasant spot, in good order, and altogether looks quite well.

Having pitched our camp and sent after forage and rations I felt that I was fairly started as an independent corps."

Sept. 12, 1862. (Chase's Diary.) "Reveille at 3 a. m. Hitched up and marched to Fort Corcoran, Va., and halted near Georgetown. Soon after halting we were agreeably surprised by seeing the remains of the old 5th Battery again assembled to be reorganized.

Went into camp on a hill near Fort Corcoran, and the Third Battery left us and continued the march to Antietam, Md.

Received knapsack well stocked with clean clothing, the first change of clothing since we were stripped to light marching order August 10th (1862), and with soft bread and rest, happiness reigns supreme."

The next thing for Lieut. Phillips to do was to get his ordnance requisitions approved.

"I had some doubts" he wrote, "whether I could find anybody to do it, but having found out from the commanding officer at Fort Corcoran that General Heintzelman was in command, I started off the first thing in the morning of the 13th for his headquarters at Arlington House. I got his signature without any difficulty, and started for the city.





Having put the requisitions through the usual routine of the 'circumlocution office' I got my orders for the various articles, and shall get them as soon as they are on hand. At the corral I found about 200 horses and orders for about 600 ahead of me.

They had plenty of guns at the Arsenal,—no carriages, but were expecting a supply every day. Harnesses are plenty, the only trouble is the horses. I have required for 3 inch guns, the same that we had before. Meantime the Division has gone."

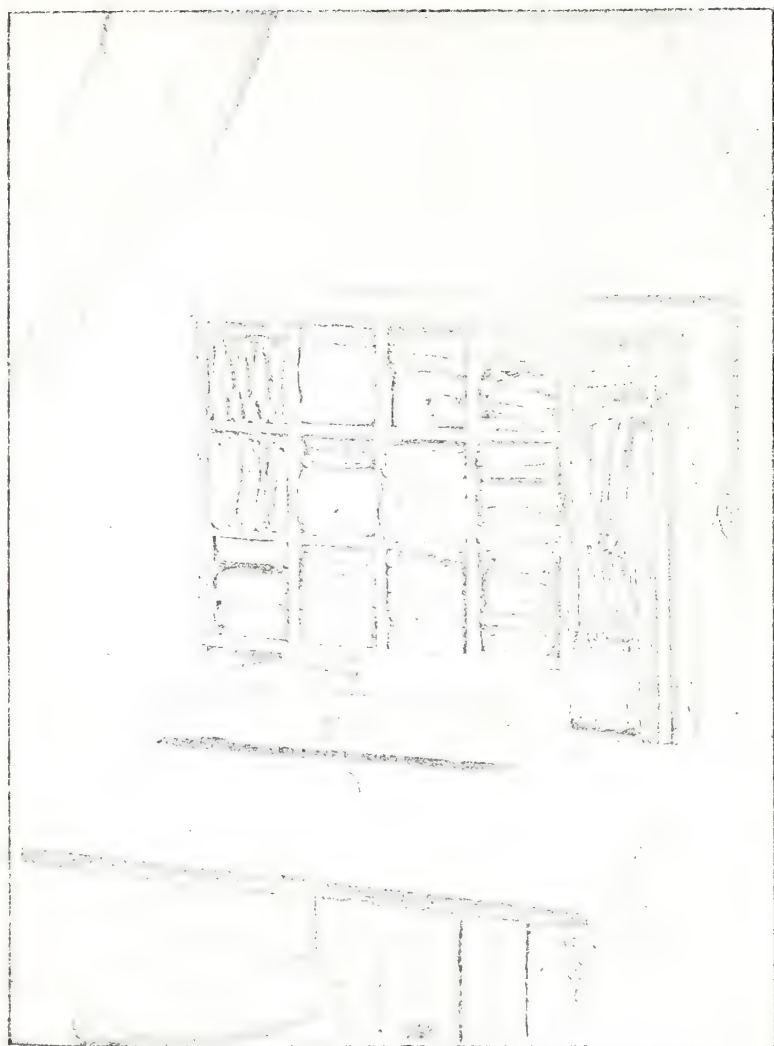
Morell's Division 6000 strong, which had camped one brigade on Upton's Hill, one at Hunter's Chapel, and the other at Fort Corcoran, had crossed the river and marched to Antietam.

The Fifth Corps had here been joined by the 20th Maine Infantry Lt. Col. Joshua L. Chamberlain [see p. 835 "Battle of the North Anna"] assigned to the 3d Brigade, 1st Division (Morell's) Fifth Corps, which it joined Sept. 12, 1862, and the 118th Pennsylvania,—commercial exchange of Philadelphia,—commanded by Colonel Charles M. Prevost.

As organized for the Maryland campaign from September 11th to 30th, 1862, the Artillery attached to the 3d Brigade, 1st Division, Fifth Army Corps, consisted of the Third Mass. Battery Captain A. P. Martin, Fourth Rhode Island, Captain Richard Waterman, 5th U. S. Battery D, Lt. Charles E. Hazlett.

The Fifth Mass. Battery remained in camp opposite Georgetown. After reuniting the men belonging to the Battery who were serving in the Third Mass. and Fourth R. I., Phillips needed 20 men. This he stated in a note to Governor Andrew. He could take 25, and he could not give the exact number of the men on the rolls, as men were sent to the hospitals and then discharged for disability and no notice given to their captains. In a letter he states that







he met Lieut. Batchelder, Division Ordnance officer, on the 13th. and asked him to tell General Morell that he should like a written order to remain till he got his guns, and then to rejoin the Division. "I have found" he wrote, "a commissary who will issue rations and a quartermaster who will supply forage, and am sure of getting my guns, so I am all right. Captain Waterman left a section here with his battery wagon and forge in charge of Lt. Buckley to obtain new gun carriages. Buckley (William W.) was in at the Arsenal changing his carriages on the 13th. He told Scott he was going to get some horses, and I do not think he has got his order filed, so I shouldn't wonder if he had to wait longer than we do. I expect an order to report to General (Amiel W.) Whipple. Lull got his commission the other day at the War Department, where it had been laying a month or more, so he is all right, though I do not understand why it is dated Aug. 1st *and all the rest July 13th.* In regard to recruits I cannot send for any definite number. I can only muster and draw pay for 151 enlisted men. On the muster roll of August 31st there are 134 enlisted men. This includes a large number who have been sent to hospitals at various times, but whether they are alive or dead, in the service or discharged from it, I do not know and cannot find out. I shall take all recruits that come, to the number of 30, say."

The picture here given of the Army Desk, was photographed November 4, 1899, by E. G. Merrill at Salem, Mass., as it now appears in the home of Captain Phillips. It is one of those furnished by Government for the use of Army officers, and was in use by Captain Phillips two years and a half. Its dimensions are, outside, breadth 24 in.: height 20 in.: depth 12 inches.

When opened after many years for the purpose of examining the papers relating to the history of the Battery, it



was found to contain records from 1861 to 1865, and the settlement of accounts.

After the papers were examined and extracts made, all the diaries, official papers and books, which had been taken out were carefully returned to their places, so that when the photograph was taken the desk held everything exactly as when first opened.

#### COMPANY ORDER NO. 1.

FORT COBCORAN, Sept. 13. 1862.

Company Orders.

No. 1.

The following appointments are announced:—

Charles A. Phillips Senior 1st Lieut.

Henry D. Scott Junior 1st Lieut.

Peleg W. Blake Senior 2d Lieut.

Frederick A. Lull Junior 2d Lieut.

Joseph E. Spear 1st Sergeant to date from August 1st.

Ephraim B. Nye Serg't., to date from July 13th.

William B. Pattison Corporal, to date from July 1st.

William G. Warren Corporal, to date from July 13th.

John W. Morrison Corporal, to date from August 1st.

(Signed) CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *Lieut.*

Com'd'g Battery E. Mass. Art'y.

From Lieut. Phillips under date Sept. 14, 1862:—"I received two letters today directed to men whom I never heard of, members of Mass. 5th Battery, Camp Day, Cambridge, and forwarded on here. I should judge by this that my recruits had started.

I am afraid, in that case, they will be forwarded to Morell's Division. The shoulder-straps have arrived, and have given universal satisfaction. I have the most cordial co-operation of all my officers and men. . . . Four recruits have arrived from Massachusetts named Bliss, Brand, D. Shackley, J. Shackley. They went up to Rockville hunting after Morell's Division. Two of my sick men have returned from hospital and I expect more every day. We live very independently. The men feel much





more cheerful than they have for some time, and so far all goes well. I am afraid at the present rate our Division will travel out of our reach. When last heard from they were *en route* for Harper's Ferry. Our return to Hall's Hill enabled me to regain possession of my old camp stools which I had at Lynnfield and Readville, so that [with the bedstead] our tent is about as comfortable as it was in those days. We have manufactured a dining-table out of harness boxes, and live in style. Some of us go into the city every day so that we have an opportunity to do our marketing. Things around here remain very quiet; once in a while we can hear a little firing up river, and a green regiment camped close by salutes us occasionally; today sending a whole volley of bullets into our camp under the impression that they were discharging their muskets into the side of the hill. Washington is quiet. Massachusetts must be getting very warlike. I see by an advertisement in the *Transcript* every citizen of Boston is called upon to keep a uniform and musket on hand to guard against contingencies."

With regard to General Burnside's influence in favor of the Battery, Lieut. Phillips wrote home from camp near Fort Corcoran, Sept. 14, 1862:—

"... Thanks, however, to my friends at home and out here,—among the latter particularly Gen. Burnside,—I have at last got an order to draw a new supply of guns, horses, &c., and have gone into camp here for that purpose. . . . Gen. Burnside whom I saw at Falmouth, wished to be remembered to you. After I saw him he had an interview with Gen. Porter, which probably helped me as much as anything. . . . We are camped just beyond Fort Corcoran, on the right hand side of the road going from Washington, in a very pleasant spot. On the whole our camp looks well. Horses and guns only are needed to complete the picture.

I met the 40th Mass. under Lt. Col. Dalton on the Avenue



the other day. They looked very well. I find my hands full of business just now, but I never felt better."

#### CORPORAL SHACKLEY'S NOTES.

"I enlisted as a recruit to the Battery after McClellan's campaign on the Peninsula, and went to Camp Day at Cambridge, Mass.

Daniel K. Shackley, Robert Brand, and Cornelius E. Bliss, also enlisted as recruits to the Battery, and early in September (1862) we four, with others, were ordered to join our respective commands. We were transported to Washington, D. C., and quartered in a barrack known as 'Soldiers' Retreat.' We were there while the Fifth or Porter's Corps were marching through Washington to South Mountain and Antietam. The next day, when a call was made for recruits for Porter's Corps to fall in, we were glad of the opportunity to get away from the 'Retreat,' and falling into line we marched just outside the District of Columbia and bivouacked for the night.

The next morning we proceeded on our march and passed through Rockville, where we found some men of the Third Mass. Battery, who told us the Fifth had been detached and left at Fort Corcoran to recruit and receive new guns and horses.

We four recruits for the Fifth Battery went to the Provost-guard of Rockville, and received some rations and a permit to return to Georgetown. We went towards Georgetown about three miles, and turning into a field spread our blankets under the branches of a large oak tree, and after eating some of our army rations, we lay down for our night's rest with the clouds for our canopy.

With our heads on the ground we could hear heavy cannonading, which we afterwards learned was the battle of South Mountain, Sept. 14, 1862.



Next morning we proceeded on our way, and were soon overtaken by an empty wagon train, and by the courtesy of the train master we put our knapsacks in the wagons and went over the rough macadamized road to Georgetown.

We reported to the Provost-guard, who after two or three hours, detailed a sergeant, a corporal and six men with the following prisoners, [the four recruits] who marched us over Aqueduct bridge and then told us to go where we pleased.

We climbed up the hill to Fort Corcoran, where we found the Battery and felt quite at home."

On Sept. 16, 1862, all the harnesses had been obtained, and on the 17th procured a little more ordnance.

#### BATTLE OF ANTIETAM.

This day, Wednesday the 17th, has been called the bloodiest day that America had ever known. When nearly two hundred thousand men for fourteen hours were engaged in mortal combat, witnessed by an army of spectators who observed the conflict from the surrounding hills.

Thursday the 18th the battery wagon and forge were hauled out, and it was ordered that the morning report should be made to Brigadier General Whipple commanding defences of Washington Southwest of the Potomac, which the enemy crossed that night, holding the right bank and defending the ford with his artillery. Portions of Morell's and Sykes' Divisions with a portion of the Divisional artillery were ordered to occupy the banks of the river, clear the fords, and capture if possible the enemy's guns, during which movement the enemy fell back in confusion, and two guns and several caissons were secured.

Lieut. Phillips wrote on this date:—"I have got under General Whipple's orders at last.

He rode into camp today, and after a few inquiries about



my guns, said that as his orders were to take command of all within his limits, he supposed I came under his command, and wished me to send my morning reports to him. I told him that this relieved me of some responsibility, as I was sometimes at a loss to get my requisitions approved, &c. &c. He said he would approve my requisitions if I would send them up to Head Quarters. I told him what my instructions were, and that I thought it exceedingly doubtful if I ever caught up with Morell's Division at the rate things were moving. He seemed to think so too, and said that he should like very much to have me in his Division but, of course, he should not like to interfere with General Morell in any way. I said it made very little difference to me what Division I was in &c. &c. So on the whole, it will not be the most surprising thing in the world if we end by being transferred to Whipple's Division. . . . What sort of red tape has prevented Terry [Serg't Terry desired the commission of quartermaster of the batteries] from being commissioned? As near as I can get at it, the Governor would not commission him till he was discharged, and the Department would not discharge him till he was commissioned, and there they stuck!

Friday (the 19th) General Whipple had his Division out for review, and having miscalculated the length of the line one regiment formed on our battery wagon and forge. The order was then given 'Form Squares' [and the regiment formed a square with them in the middle! As a drill for manœuvring on difficult ground it may have been excellent, but as a military exhibition it was rather a failure. Saturday (20th) he had a review, but, having grown wiser, this time he formed the line somewhere else, so as not to cross our parade."





## ON RECRUITING SERVICE.

HEAD QUARTERS ARMY  
OF THE POTOMAC,  
WASHINGTON.  
Sept. 20, 1862.

Special Orders.

Extract.

5. Quartermaster Sergeant T. W. Terry, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, is detached on the recruiting service, and will report for instructions to the superintendency of the recruiting service for the state of Massachusetts.

By command of Major General McClellan.

(Signed) RICHARD B. IRWIN,  
*Ass't Adj't. Gen'l.*

"Sunday, Sept. 21, 1862 (Phillips) General Whipple had an inspection of his cavalry, and by way of variety made me turn out my men for inspection. Without guns or horses I could not make much of a display, but I did my best.

Sept. 22d. I have just learned how the troops here are organized: General Heintzelman commands the corps here, composed of four Divisions of which Whipple is one. . . . I find I have quite a number of acquaintances round here: Drs. Hall, Dalton, Smith and Pope of the 14th, and through them I am getting acquainted with most of the officers of that regiment. Yesterday afternoon Lull and I rode up to the 40th Regt. encamped close by Fort Ethan Allen near Chain Bridge. We took tea with Captain Johnson and his lieutenants, then looked on at Dress Parade, and after that I called on Lt. Col. Dalton and Major Day, so, on the whole, I tumbled into quite a lot of acquaintances. The roads which last spring were regular mud holes, are now in excellent order and riding is very pleasant. Business in Washington gives us all plenty of opportunities to get into the city, and our present life is rather a relief from the barbarous way in which we have been living. Our men are recruiting upon a diet of soft bread, and our number is constantly on the increase from the hospitals. I have now 95 enlisted



men in camp; rather a small proportion of 150, but more than we have had for some time. We have five or ten on the sick list every day, but no serious cases. I have bread and milk every morning for breakfast. In regard to the negro question I have gained no new views. I do not think that emancipation would be a *direct military advantage* of any account, but I think it would be a great step towards the suppression of the rebellion. . . .

You don't think my picture looks military," he writes with reference to one sent home, "perhaps this is owing to the hat. I started out here with a small forage cap, but the heat on the Peninsula rendered this intolerable. At Gaines Mills I invested in a felt hat, which was my costume through the battle. By the time I reached Harrison's Landing this was pretty well played out, having served as a night cap pretty constantly. I next purchased a straw hat which showed very prettily at first, but rain and dust soon spoiled its looks. I wore this till we arrived here and had it on when my picture was taken. As it had become the laughing stock of the company I took the first opportunity to dispose of it. . . .

Sept. 24, 1862. General Whipple appears to take considerable interest in our getting our guns and horses, and his staff are congratulating themselves upon having gained an 'experienced' battery in the Division.

I have no doubt but that the 1st of January will see states enough in rebellion to make a very general emancipation. The rebellion will not be crushed at once, and the campaign in Maryland is not all rose colored. We have driven them out of Maryland, but it proved our weakness that they ever got there, and we did no more than they did when they drove us off the Peninsula. The fights at South Mountain were not decisive defeats, and the battle of Antietam Creek was almost a drawn game.



Richmond will not be taken this year unless it is done by gunboats.

General Whipple's Division is a great Division for drilling. We had two reviews last week, and day before yesterday he had the infantry of his Division form hollow squares, while four companies of cavalry charged all over the field sometimes in good order, but more frequently in disorder. Altogether it was a remarkable exhibition."

FROM A LETTER OF THOMAS E. CHASE.

"CAMP NEAR FORT CORCORAN,  
ARLINGTON HEIGHTS, VA.

Sept. 25, 1862.

When I last wrote you we were with the 3d Battery, with the pieces 'in Battery' at Upton's Hill, but on the 12th we received marching orders and started towards Washington. When we arrived at the bridge,—to Georgetown,—we were very agreeably surprised to see that our days with the 3d Battery, 4th Rhode Island and 5th Regulars were numbered. The scattered remains of the old Fifth gradually collected, and we are now in camp, waiting for recruits, guns, and horses. Many of our men who left us at Harrison's Landing, sick, have returned to us hale and hearty. We received our knapsacks when we arrived here, having been without them 33 days. Everything in mine was dry and as perfect as the day I packed it, but others had been rifled of their contents. . . . I do not want you to think that I am not willing to take my share of the hardships of the war, neither do we have an unusual dread of battles ahead when there is the least chance of accomplishing anything, but I must say that I am disgusted with the summer campaign in Virginia. There have been several 'loose screws,' in fact the only one that was fast and firm to one policy was McClellan, but the screw-drivers at Washington kept twisting him round until they nearly split his head, and



finally the only screw that held the machine together also became loose, his plans were abandoned and here we are just in sight of Abraham's house. Where the blame in the main rests I will not attempt to say, for I do not know. all I can account for is my own conduct. I have endeavored to do my humble part as well as I could. Let every one account for his own doings. You say you have been fighting for McClellan but some have been down on him. Well, no matter, let 'em croak. 'Truth crushed to earth will rise again,' so will George. Where's old Pope now? His 'Head Quarters are in his saddle,' but where's his saddle? Ask the breezes that ruffle the Potomac north of Bull Run.

We have received our battery wagon, forge, and harnesses, and our new sabres have come today."

#### FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS' LETTERS.

"Sept. 28, 1862. A week ago yesterday we were told that our guns would be ready for us at the Arsenal on Monday morning, so we went in on Monday morning to find that General Burnside had sent down on Sunday for six guns and off they had gone. However, unless some other general in the field wants some guns, we shall get ours by Tuesday. With horses the thing works the same way. Thursday night the numbers had been so reduced that there were orders for only 150 ahead of us. Friday morning down came an order from McClellan for 200, and this must be filled before anything else. It is rather discouraging, but we can wait. Scott and I have had a floor laid in our tent for the first time since leaving Massachusetts. Our men have built an oven and we can roast and bake at a great rate. Yesterday we had roast beef for dinner, and this morning we had baked beans for breakfast. One of our latest improvements is a rack to hang our clothes on. The men are living quite comfortably, having foraged a great many tents. In fact the camp has been gradually growing and now presents quite a respectable appearance.





One of General Whipple's brigades has gone to the front, to Miner's Hill, I believe. From this I infer that General (Franz) Sigel has moved off somewhere. The other day when I was up at Hall's Hill, I learned that General (R. H.) Milroy's brigade had gone off. Captain Martin's quartermaster sergeant was in Washington yesterday, and from him I learned that they had not been in any fight yet. He left the Division at Sharpsburg."

The rebel army had been driven back into Virginia, and under date of September 30, 1862, General Halleck thanked General McClellan and his army for hard fought battles, adding:—

"For the well earned and decided victories in Maryland, a grateful country, while mourning the lamented dead, will not be unmindful of the living."

On the 30th Lt. Phillips drew two guns and caissons, and on Oct. 1, 1862, Wednesday, Corporal Chase has recorded: "Received four new guns and 81 horses, again equipping us as a full battery."

Phillips himself says:—"The remainder of the horses I shall get early tomorrow (Oct. 2d) so that by tomorrow night I shall be fully equipped. As I understand it I cannot move from here without an order from General Whipple. I shall report myself to him tomorrow ready for service and tell him that I had rather stay where I am. If I stay in his Division I shall do it under favorable auspices. I have got a very good set of horses, good guns and carriages, and better ammunition than we had before. Altogether I am quite well satisfied with things."

Captain, then Lieut., Scott remembers a speech made about this time by Lieut. Phillips to the men "which was the only model speech" he "had heard in the Battery up to that time.—Lt. Phillips called the men into line and said:—

'Men, once more we have our guns and horses, and when they go to Richmond, we go with them.' "

"We had passed," Lt. Scott remarks, "through a varied



experience, but now we felt certainly a new future was before us. All were jubilant."

Nineteen more horses were obtained on Thursday (the 2d) and in the afternoon he reported to General Whipple that he was ready for service.

In the meantime he had received the following order from Captain Martin.

### GEN. FITZ JOHN PORTER DIRECTS.

On Sept. 27, 1862, the Fifth Corps went into camp in the vicinity of Sharpsburg, Md. directly north of Harper's Ferry and in the neighborhood of the battle grounds of Antietam Creek.

### ORDER FROM CAPT. MARTIN.

CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.  
September 27, 1862.

LIEUT. PHILLIPS

Commanding 5th Mass. Battery.  
Lieut.

General Porter directs me to say to you that he wishes you to rejoin the Division as soon as possible. He says if you have not obtained your full equipment, and there seems to be any unnecessary delay, to call on General Barry in Washington for assistance, or you can communicate with him by telegraph through General McClellan's Head Quarters.

Lt. Walcott will give you information about the road etc.

Very respectfully

Your ob't servant

A. P. MARTIN *Capt.*  
Commanding Division Artillery.

Forwarded with the following indorsement.

CAMP NEAR FORT CORCORAN.  
Oct. 6, 1862.

The within is respectfully referred to Brigd'r General Whipple Com'd'g Division.

I expect to be ready to move by the 8th of October.

(Signed) CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *1st Lt.*

When Lt. Phillips called upon General Whipple on Thursday, Oct. 2d, this order from Captain Martin was in



his possession, though of course without the indorsement at that time. "I had shown him" (Gen. Whipple), he says, "the order I had received from Captain Martin, but as General Barry told me that I was to receive orders from General Whipple only, and that General Porter had no power to order me away, I told him I was a little uncertain what I was going to do. He promised to give me proper orders, and said that he should like to keep me in his Division. I told him that would please me and my officers as we had no particular desire to rejoin Morell's. The Division (Whipple's) is not everything that could be desired. It is composed of two brigades, General Piatt's and another, made up mostly of green troops. There are two batteries: Battery H, 1st Ohio Art'y, under a major or Lt. Colonel, and the 11th N. Y. Battery, Captain something-or-other-hamer. The 11th N. Y. has been in one fight only, where they lost four guns, so that we have companions in misfortune. Still I think the Division will be a good one. . . . I have been to see the General several times, and I always meet with a cordial reception. His staff appears to be composed of very good officers. His ass't adj't general is Captain Henry Dalton, and one of his aides Lt. Eddy has been here frequently.

The trouble in Morell's Division was that we never had a fair start. Yesterday (Oct. 2d) we hitched up and had a drill, and found our horses work very well: there is not a balky one in the lot. One animal distinguished himself by jumping round when being harnessed, actually jumping square over one man, but after tying up his leg and giving him a short Rarey-izing, he came to."

Chase's Diary. "Oct. 2, 1862. On guard last night and today 2d relief. In camp near Georgetown. Company preparing to march all day.

Oct. 3d. Battery drilled by sections. Hitched up p. m. A perfect success. Sent my old memorandum book home



yesterday. Sent secesh cartridge box home today by express."

From the 1st to the 4th of October, President Lincoln was with the army in the different encampments and on the battlefields. He approved of what had been done, and promised supplies should be sent immediately.

The army was in need of everything, and McClellan dared not cross the Potomac, where the enemy was in strong force, with the river, which might rise above a fordable stage at any time, between him and his army and base of supplies.

On the 5th in the forenoon there was an inspection of the Fifth Mass. Battery. It took place at 9 o'clock and General Whipple sent two of his staff down to witness it, "though I wished," says Phillips, "they had stayed away till we had got our horses broken in, and our harnesses fitted. We had not got out of park when one trace unhooked, then another, and then another, causing a halt every dozen steps. Finally we got in line and prepared for inspection. I felt pretty grumpy as we rode round through the Battery. However, I got through with it, and then took the Battery out on a two hours' drill, and I think they will do better next time. This afternoon we took a ride out into the country. I have recitations in tactics every evening, and it is curious to see how some things strike the company officers. I never found the slightest difficulty in learning tactics from the book, and long before we ever hitched up, I could do any manœuvre in the book. Mere manual dexterity of course can be acquired only by practice."

October 6th, 1862, Captain Martin's order, indorsed by Lt. Phillips (see p. 452) was sent to General Whipple. Concerning this he wrote on the 7th:—"I have referred the order I received from Captain Martin to General Whipple, and he has ordered me to go ahead with my preparations and report when ready to him. Meanwhile he has made





application to have the Battery transferred to his Division."

McClellan had been ordered on the 6th by General Halleck to cross the Potomac at once, and "move now, while the roads are good." The cavalry had moved north and would intercept the rebel general Stuart's raid through Maryland and Pennsylvania. The army must move, although besides every other needful thing horses were scarce, and a new supply was indispensable.

Orders were received for the Fifth Mass. Battery to start Wednesday morning Oct. 8.

#### MARCHING ORDERS.

HEAD QUARTERS  
WHIPPLE'S DIVISION,  
3D ARMY CORPS,  
FORT CORCORAN, VA.  
Oct. 8, 1862.

Special Orders

No. 167.

The Fifth Mass. Battery Lt. Phillips commanding, is hereby relieved from duty with this Division, and will report as soon as practicable to the commanding officer of Morell's Division, Porter's Corps.

By command of Brig. Gen'l Whipple.

DANIEL HALL  
*Act'g Ass't Adj't. General.*

#### ON THE MARCH.

"On the 8th of October [1862, Scott's Notes] the Battery crossed the Potomac on the Aqueduct bridge, and followed the road taken by the army through Maryland to join the Fifth Corps at Sharpsburg. Phillips was in command.

The weather was dry and warm, and the dust that rose was stifling and blinding.

Passing through Urbana we found the rebel general Stuart in his raid in Maryland had crossed our line of march but an hour before. Had we been a little earlier we would likely have been captured, as we had no escort.

Arriving on the Monocacy River at night near Frederick



City, completely exhausted with the heat and dust of the day, the men at once went in bathing and got rid of some of the accumulated dust of our travel."

### CORPORAL CHASE'S ACCOUNT.

"Oct. 9, 1862, (Diary of Corporal Chase) Reveille at 4 a. m. Hitched up and left camp about half-past 5 a. m. Passed through several villages and halted for the night about 2 miles from Frederick City, Md. Bivouacked near the bridge over Monocacy River on the Baltimore and Ohio R. R. 10th: Reveille at 4 a. m. Broke camp and left about 6 a. m. Passed through Frederick, Md., and over the road around South Mountain, and halted about two miles from Boonsboro', Md. Marched again through Sharpsburg, about 3 p. m. and halted, and went into park just outside the town. Saw much evidence of the recent battle on the route, both at South Mountain and Sharpsburg: buildings shattered and trees scarred by shells and musketry gave proof of the bloody battle of Antietam. Visited some rebel prisoners in a hospital near Boonsboro', and found among them privates of the 5th and 6th Alabama regiments, who charged on our Battery at the Battle of Gaines Mills, June 27, 1862. They belonged to General Rhodes' Brigade, General Hill's Division, and were taken prisoners at the battle of Antietam.

The people along the route all seemed loyal and welcomed us heartily."

With respect to this assignment and the march back to the First Division Captain Phillips wrote:—

"General Whipple wished to keep us in his Division, but was hardly enterprising enough, so we got our orders to start Wednesday morning. At ten o'clock we started, crossed the Aqueduct, turned up the left by the reservoir and kept on through Tenallytown and Rockville. We



camped a mile beyond the latter place. The day was hot and dusty but the road good. Thursday morning we started at 5 o'clock. The road was excellent, macadamized, but the country very hilly. Leaving Sugar Loaf Mountain on our left, we pushed on through Clarksburg and Urbana for the Monocacy. About 5 o'clock we reached the Monocacy, crossed the turnpike bridge and camped on the banks between the two bridges. I availed myself of the opportunity to wash off the dust which had accumulated very thick, got a glass of ale, at the railroad saloon and went to sleep. The next morning we started at daybreak and passed through Frederick before the people were up. The day was cloudy, with a little sprinkle once in a while. Soon after leaving Frederick we crossed a range of hills, passing through the little village of Fairview. The valley in which Frederick is situated is a splendid farming country, and finely cultivated. The people appear to be very enterprising as they had already repaired their fences where they had been torn down. After crossing this range of hills we came to another valley of equal fertility and cultivation. In the centre was the town of Middletown: on the opposite side were South Mts. Passing across the valley and through Middletown, we began to ascend South Mountain Pass where one battle came off. Half way up the hill I halted in front of a little inn to rest the horses. On the descent we passed a long train of ambulances full of wounded Federal and Secesh; the Secesh being a better looking set than I have seen before. At the bottom of the hill we halted an hour to rest. In the house near by were several wounded Secesh, and our men strolling around, found one of them who had one of my men's blankets taken at Gaines Mills. I did not see the men myself, but they said their regiment suffered greatly in getting our guns, and would not believe our loss was so small. [See p. 351 Barnard.] We next passed through Boonsboro', turned to the left, and passed

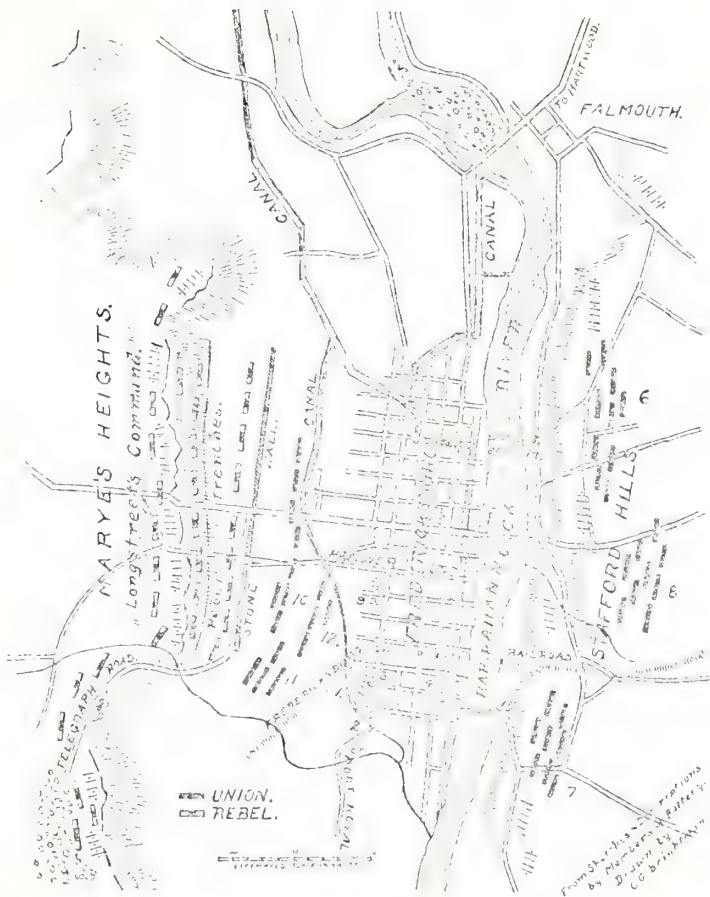


the village of Keedysville, crossed the little Antietam, and came to the hills occupied by our troops in the battle of Antietam. Across the creek the hill rose steeply, and just over the crest lay the village of Sharpsburg. Almost every house had a cannon ball through it; chimneys knocked off and the mischief played generally. At present the town presents quite a busy appearance. Churches and houses are turned into hospitals. The U. S. Sanitary Commission occupy a couple of stores, and the streets are quite crowded. Just beyond the town I halted the Battery, and rode ahead to report to General Morell."





# FREDERICKSBURG.



1. Position of 5th Mass. Battery during the battle. 2. The Poor House. 3. The Brick kiln. 4. Place where Corporal Platts was buried. 5. The building of the Young Men's Christian Association used as a hospital during the battle. 6. The Right Grand Division. 7. Left Grand Div. 8. Centre Grand Div. 9. Position of 3rd Mass. Battery. 10. Humphreys' Division. 11. Griffins Division. 12. Sykes' Division. 13. Upper Bridge. 14. Middle Bridge. 15. Lower Bridge.



## CHAPTER XV.

### THE BATTLE OF FREDERICKSBURG.

DECEMBER 13, 1862.

"The armies stand by to behold the dread meeting:

The work must be done by a desperate few,  
The black mouthéd guns on the height give them  
greeting—

From gun-mouth to plain every grass blade in view."

*At Fredericksburg.*—JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY.

Having seen the rebel army safely across the Potomac, it appeared to be the duty of the officials who were to formulate and regulate the campaign, to take into consideration the recuperation of the army, more especially as the Stuart dash into Maryland had resulted in a loss of horses, which it was absolutely necessary should be supplied at once, as well as the pressing demand for clothing, shoes and blankets, which it was impossible longer to ignore. Recruiting must also be strenuously urged in order to restore the diminished ranks. Regiments in some instances had no officer of higher rank than captain, and many companies were without any commissioned officers. All possible dispatch should be used in the forwarding of supplies.

While these most important objects were being accomplished, the Army waited and watched the banks and fords of the river, and the camp for a brief period fell into the familiar routine of constant drill and frequent inspections by day, and at night the suspended animation of a bivouac near battle grounds, which had been the scene of too much ruthless sacrifice of human life ever to be obliterated from the



memory, or to give unbroken rest to those who fell asleep in their neighborhood.

On the 27th of October, 1862, the Army of the Potomac commenced to cross into Virginia. General George Webb Morell was placed in command of all the Union forces remaining on the upper Potomac, from Antietam Creek to Cumberland, Md., and his place at the head of the 1st Division of the Fifth Corps was filled by General Charles Griffin.

General McClellan's plan was to follow the eastern slope of the Blue Ridge Mountains in a southern direction, occupying the various gaps, and, turning the tables on General Lee, to place the Army between him and Richmond. By the 2d of November, the Army had crossed either at Harper's Ferry or at Berlin, and the various corps had followed the various routes marked out for them. On Nov. 9, 1862, the disposition of the Army of the Potomac was as follows:—

The First, Second, and Fifth Corps, the Reserve Artillery and Army Head Quarters were at Warrenton, the Ninth Corps was at Waterloo, the Sixth Corps and the Eleventh Corps at New Baltimore with part of the Eleventh Corps at Gainesville and Thoroughfare Gap, part of the Third Corps posted along the Orange and Alexandria railroad from Manassas to Warrenton Junction. Part of the cavalry were confronting Longstreet at Hazel River six miles from Culpeper Court House, and Rappahannock Station was guarded. The rebel general Jackson was near Chester and Thornton Gaps, but the mass of the rebel army was west of the Blue Ridge.

At Warrenton, having relieved Washington from danger, with a successful campaign in prospect, and an Army full of enthusiasm and sublime faith in their leader, orders came on Nov. 7th to relieve General McClellan from the command of the Army and General Fitz John Porter from the command of the Fifth Corps. General Ambrose E. Burnside



assumed command of the Army of the Potomac, and General Joseph Hooker of the Fifth Corps.

General Burnside, on assuming the command substituted for the plan of campaign originated by McClellan a new one, which involved the seizure of the heights south of Fredericksburg after fording the Upper Rappahannock River; the railroad to Fredericksburg being reopened by sending a small force north of the Rappahannock for that purpose.

Previous to this movement Burnside reorganized the Army, by forming Three Grand Divisions, the Right, Centre, and Left. The Right was composed of the Second and Ninth Army Corps Major Gen. Edwin V. Sumner in command, the Centre consisted of the Third and Fifth Army Corps Major Gen. Joseph Hooker in command, and the Left, of the First and Sixth Army Corps, Major Gen. William B. Franklin, commanding.

The Fifth Corps was commanded by Brig. Gen. Daniel Butterfield, and the 1st Division to which the Artillery Brigade in which was the Fifth Mass. Battery was attached, was commanded by Brig. Gen. Charles Griffin.

General Burnside commenced his movement on the 15th of November, 1862, and instead of crossing the Rappahannock River, marched the entire Army down its north bank, the advance of the Right Grand Division arriving in the vicinity of Falmouth, Va. on the 17th but was unable to cross to Fredericksburg, on account of a rebel force on the other side of the river, sent for the purpose of obstructing the passage at this point. The bridge across the river to Fredericksburg had been destroyed.

A corps of the Confederate Army was awaiting developments in the vicinity of Orange Court House. In anticipation of our attempting to gain the heights near that city Longstreet was ordered to proceed to Fredericksburg. On the 19th the Fifth Corps was at Hartwood a few miles above Falmouth. On the 21st at 5 p. m. in the midst of a rain





storm, the Right Grand Division having arrived at a point where the Potomac Creek crossed the Acquia Creek and Fredericksburg railroad, General Sumner summoned the authorities of the city of Fredericksburg to surrender. In the event of their refusal, he threatened to bombard the place at 9 a. m. the next morning. The city then under the control of the confederate general Lee did not surrender, and was not bombarded. Longstreet established his command on Marye's Heights in the rear of Fredericksburg, and a part of Jackson's Corps was near Port Royal on the Rappahannock River, when on Nov. 26th our gunboats had arrived.

General Burnside ordered the construction of five bridges from the upper part of the town to the lower, within a distance of about two miles, and the artillery were employed not only to protect the building of the bridges, but to protect the Left flank of the Army from attack in the direction of the Massaponax River, and to control the enemy's movements on the plain between the ridges of hills on both sides of the river. To supply this unusual demand some of the artillery was withdrawn from the Grand Divisions, and temporarily added to the Artillery Reserve. The Reserve was then formed into four Divisions viz., the Right, the Right Centre, and the Left Centre, and the Left, numbering in all 147 Guns, and disposed along the north bank of the Rappahannock River. Battery C, 1st Rhode Island, and Battery D, 5th U. S. were detached from the Fifth Corps and placed in position to join in the general fire directed upon the town and hills beyond, but the Third and Fifth Massachusetts Batteries crossed the river and entered the city.

The Right Grand Division of the Army was concentrated near the upper and middle bridges; the Left Grand Division near the bridge below the town; and the Centre Grand Division near to and in the rear of the Right.

On December 11th the Fifth Corps marched three miles



to the bank of the Rappahannock, the artillery moving in the rear of the Division, and was massed on a level tract of land in the rear of the batteries on the ridge.

The pontoons for the bridges had to be taken down the Potomac and up the Rappahannock, and Burnside waited for them 12 days on the Stafford Hills all ready to cross. In the early morning of Dec. 11th the teams carried them down to the river banks.

Edwin Forbes in his description of "The Pontoon Train" attached to his picture, thus describes the train and the method of building a pontoon bridge:—

"One of the finest sights during the march of the great army was the pontoon train. The huge scows resting on their heavy wagons, went tossing over the rough roads pulled by six mule teams. . . . On nearing a stream, a road was chosen where the approach to cross would not be too steep. The wagons were drawn near the bank, and the pontoon boats were slid off from the rear of them into the water. This work was often accomplished under the enemy's fire from an opposite bank of the river; but our men worked with a will, loading the boats and pushing them off with a dash and a cheer to clear the enemy away. Then the real work of building a bridge would begin. Boats would be pushed out, turned lengthwise with the current, and placed at regular intervals across the stream, anchored at both ends. Then a set of men would quickly attach stringers from boat to boat, and another set would hurry forward with planks to place over them, thus forming a floor. In an incredibly short time the bridge would be completed, and the main body of the army would march across amid great cheers."

The engineers while laying the pontoon bridges on the 11th December, 1862, being continually harassed by the rebel sharpshooters, our batteries on the Heights commenced a terrific cannonading which was continued two hours, in order to drive them out of the house which concealed them; setting fire to the city in several places, and under cover of a movement of the Massachusetts and Michigan troops the pontoon bridges were completed. Three regiments of infantry crossed in boats, under fire, drove the enemy from their entrenchments and took possession of the town, fighting their way through. These were the Mass.



19th and 20th and the 7th Michigan. When these men of Massachusetts and Michigan crossed, in the words of the poet Baker:—

“Cheer after cheer we sent them  
As only armies can—  
Cheers for old Massachusetts,  
Cheers for young Michigan.”

Two distinct combats made up the Battle of Fredericksburg on the 13th. One the fight on the Federal Left wing with Jackson and Stuart's cavalry and horse artillery on the east, and the assault of the Federal Right and Centre directly upon the Heights, when our artillery from the Falmouth bank of the river, from 40 to 50 feet high and sloping, fired over the heads of our troops on the banks and in the city, when the shells did not fall short on account of defective ammunition, and the Confederate artillery from Marye's Heights fired over them and into them.

During the action the headquarters of Generals Burnside and Hooker were at the Phillips house, and of Sumner at the Lacey house. The latter stood on the north bank of the Rappahannock, directly opposite Fredericksburg.

They met the enemy first on the plain, then he withdrew to the Heights after the rifle pits had been taken by the regiments who volunteered to cross over in boats, while the bridge was being built. The turnpike to Fredericksburg crosses the plain half a mile from the river, and between it and the Heights extends the railroad. There was a canal in the rear of the town, which the troops must cross before making the attack on Marye's Heights, which conducted the waters of the Rappahannock River at Falmouth to the lower end of Fredericksburg for manufacturing purposes. At the base of the bluff was a sunken road which sheltered numbers of Confederates. Half way up the ridge they hid behind a trench, and on the crest were the breastworks and artillery. There was not the least chance of an attacking column car-



rying the position. While other attacks were in progress General Butterfield was ordered to attack and break the enemy's line and carry the Heights on his front.

The crowded streets of the city proved a great impediment to the passage of the artillery. Batteries were placed in position on the left side of Hanover Street on the right and left of the point of attack.

The historian of the Fifth Corps says of the Battery:—

"The 5th Mass. crossed the river at 4 p. m. on the 13th and was placed in an advanced position near the centre of the corps line between the poor house and some brick yards, and opened fire at about six hundred yards from the stone wall. After dark, having fired 107 rounds of shrapnell and shell, the Battery was withdrawn, under orders, to the city, but returned to the same position on the 14th, remaining until after dark on the 15th, when it was withdrawn, and early on the 16th recrossed the river and returned to its camp."

At the time of this attack at the stone wall, General Andrew A. Humphreys commanding the 3d Division Fifth Corps, describes its appearance as "a sheet of flame that enveloped the head and flanks of the column."

On the 15th the enemy still holding the Heights held the town. General Butterfield held the portion of Fredericksburg extending from the Rappahannock River on the right to Hanover Street, and was ordered to put it into a state of defense.

In the disposition of the troops General Griffin held the left to Fauquier Street. Captain Stephen H. Weed, Chief of Artillery of the Fifth Corps, was charged with the distribution of the batteries.

After dark of the 15th earthworks were constructed between the streets which were barricaded for artillery, but at 4 a. m. of the 16th General Burnside ordered the withdrawal of the Army from Fredericksburg. This was accomplished at 8 o'clock a. m., in a storm of hail and rain but in perfect order. When they removed the pontoons they did so as noiselessly as possible, and the enemy was surprised the next morning to find they had all crossed and the bridges were gone.





## THE MONUMENT.

At the Thirty-First Annual Reunion of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, held at Fredericksburg, Va. May 25th and 26th, 1900, General Daniel Butterfield announced his intention to erect in the National Cemetery on the field of Fredericksburg, a monument to the honor of the Fifth Army Corps, and in memory of the honored dead of that Corps.

In the afternoon of the 26th the corner-stone was laid by the Masonic Lodge of Fredericksburg in which George Washington was made a Mason. The act was performed with a silver trowel on which was engraved a representation of the proposed monument. Brevet Colonel Horatio C. King presided.

These ceremonies took place on Marye's Heights, in the presence of the Society, the President of the United States, his Cabinet, members of congress, heads of Departments and other guests.

The number of Union men engaged was 30,000. Of these over 16,000 are buried there, 14,000 in unknown graves, in the words of General Edward Hill who made the address, "buried where they fell. In time their honored bones found sepulture on these terraced heights." He quotes General Butterfield in his presence as saying:—

"I have always felt that the magnificent services of the Fifth Corps, on the occasion of the battle of Fredericksburg, as well as on other fields, deserve a lasting memorial. As I read the order issued by me after the battle, (see p. 519) I feel today the same heartfelt appreciation that it expresses, and it gives me great pleasure to place a lasting memorial of enduring granite, to record my feeling toward the Fifth Corps,—whom I had the great honor to command in that battle,—over the graves, not only of the many brave men of the corps who are buried there, but also in honor of all the gallant and splendid soldiers in that famous battle."

General Hill was an officer of the Fifth Corps who par-



ticipated in the battle. He closed his address with the following words:—

"This column of imperishable granite, bearing the insignia of the Fifth Army Corps, the Maltese Cross, garlanded with laurel and oaken wreaths, emblematic of fame and victory, crowned with the ball of infolding fire, will carry down the ages the story of Fredericksburg, and forever stand a monument to the lofty patriotism and military ardor of the founder, an incentive to noble deeds, a glorious tribute to the brave men of the Fifth Corps who fell in defense of the flag that from reveille to retreat bends above this consecrated ground."

The Monument was dedicated May 30, 1901, with appropriate ceremonies in which the Society of the Fifth Corps of the Army of the Potomac, as a body, participated.

### THE MEMBERS' STORY.

#### AFTER REPORTING TO GENERAL MORELL.

Notes of Lieut. Scott: "Reaching Sharpsburg on the 11th of October, 1862, we took our place with the Artillery Brigade of Morell's Division 5th Corps."

#### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, Md.

Oct. 11, 1862.

He (Gen. Morell) seemed glad we had got up, and told us to go into camp where we were, which we did. Last night it rained, and tomorrow when the ground gets dried I shall move ahead a mile, near the rest of the Division. Everything is very quiet, and no enemy around."

Phillips' Diary: "Sunday Oct. 12, 1862. Moved camp a mile to the front near Gen. Morell's Head Quarters."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 11. . . . Detailed for guard 3d relief p. m. Oct. 12. . . . Camped about a mile and a half from Sharpsburg, Md."

Phillips' Diary: "Tuesday, Oct. 14th. Sent Scott to Har-



per's Ferry after horses. Oct. 15: Scott returned with 11 horses. All quiet."

### FROM LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Thursday Evening, Oct. 16, 1862.

Griffin's Brigade, four of Hazlett's guns, and two of Martin's with considerable cavalry, went over the river to-day on a reconnoissance. We have heard more or less firing all day. The long expected event, the rising of the river, seems close at hand. We have got an oven built and had some baked beans this morning. We can get soft bread at Sharpsburg, but the meanest bread I ever tasted, dry and tasteless as sawdust."

On Friday the Reconnoissance, which was sent across the river the day before returned with no news of importance, and the commanding officer of the Battery received the following circular:--

### FROM CHIEF QUARTERMASTER CHARLES B. NORTON.

Circular.

HEAD QUARTERS 5TH ARMY CORPS.

NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Oct. 17, 1862.

It having been ascertained that Trains have gone to the various depots for supplies without a commissioned officer in charge, notice is again given that it is absolutely necessary that such an officer should accompany all Trains.

On the first day of each month Division Quartermasters will send to these Head Quarters a consolidated report of all Quartermasters' Stores and estimates of funds, in detail, required in their Divisions for the month then current. This report is necessary in order that the wants of the Corps may be known in sufficient time to be ordered to the nearest depot. Regimental and Brigade Head Quarters will inform the Division Quartermaster of their wants in season, so that the Division Quartermaster can send in his report on the day mentioned. Brigade Quartermasters will make requisitions on Capt. Alex. Bliss A. Q. M. at Harper's Ferry, Va., for one wagon in addition to the pres-



ent allowance, which will be used exclusively for the transportation of medical stores of the Brigade.

Hereafter supplies of all kinds can be obtained at Harper's Ferry, on requisitions properly approved. Brigade Quartermasters can inform themselves by telegraph as to what there is on hand at the Depot. But few stores will be sent to Frederick and Hagerstown. Transportation will be always kept in condition for an immediate move.

Division Quartermasters will send copies of this circular to Quartermasters of Brigades who will furnish each Regimental Quartermaster with a copy of the same.

By command of Major General Fitz John Porter.

(Signed) CHARLES B. NORTON,

*Lt. Col. Chief Quartermaster,*

*5th Army Corps.*

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 19, the Battery was inspected by Captain Martin."

#### SPECIAL ORDERS.

HEAD QUARTERS

MORRELL'S DIVISION, CAMP

NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Oct. 20, 1862.

Special Orders

No. 257.

In accordance with instructions from Head Quarters, Battery E, Mass. Artillery, Lieut. Phillips commanding, is hereby detailed to relieve Captain Dieckrich's Battery now on duty with 3d. Brigade.

Relief will be made by 9 a. m. tomorrow.

By command of Brig. General Griffin

FRANCIS S. EARLE,

*Ass't. Adj't. Gen'l.*

Capt. Martin. Lieut. Phillips.

---

#### PHILLIPS' COMPANY ORDER.

Lieut. Phillips, when he issued the following order must have been of the same mind as General, then Major, Thomas W. Hyde of the 7th Maine Infantry, who said that "the clean and careful soldier is also pretty sure to make a good officer."





CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

October 20, 1862.

## Company Orders.

No. 7.

The Battery will be formed in line for inspection tomorrow morning at 8 o'clock.

The drivers' valises will be strapped on the saddles. After the Battery is dismissed the men will remain in uniform, and keep round the quarters until the camp and quarters have been inspected. Everything is expected to remain neat and clean during the day. The men are expected to have as much anxiety as the commander that the Battery should obtain a good name.

CHARLES A. PHILLIPS *1st Lieut.*  
Com'd'g Battery E. Mass. Artillery.

## LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR SHARPSBURG, MD.

Evening Oct. 20, 1862.

I have received a copy of a Special Order from McClellan's Hd. Qrs. honorably discharging Captain Allen from the service, dated Oct. 17th. . . . The programme for tomorrow was an inspection of the Division Batteries, camps, company books, &c., &c., by Lieut Col. (Alex. S.) Webb to commence at 8 o'clock. I have just received orders, however, to relieve Captain Diedrichs' Battery (Otto Diedrichs, A, 1st Battalion N. Y.) Dutch, 20 pdr. Parrotts, now with the Third Brigade—Butterfield's—at the mouth of Antietam. Relief to be made at 9 o'clock. I shall start at 8. I am rather sorry to miss the inspection, as I can show the cleanest battery and the neatest camp, except, perhaps, Hazlett's, of all the Batteries.

I would recommend for Junior 2d Lieut. 1st Sergt. Joseph E. Spear of Quincy. He started as Corporal but his Serg't being sick, took entire charge of his piece at Gaines Mills and brought it off safely, entirely by his own efforts. Upon the reorganization of the Battery I made him 1st Sergt. He is only 19 years old, but I am not likely to blame any one for their youth."



Chase's Diary: "Oct. 20, 1862. Usual drill a. m. and drilled by sections: hitched up p. m. Broke the pole of our caisson 4th Detachment. A good, lively, drill. Official notice of the acceptance of Captain Allen's resignation read in line at Roll Call p. m."

Shackley's Notes: "On the 21st of October the Battery was ordered to Antietam, and placed in position to defend the neighborhood where the battle took place."

#### ACCOUNT OF OCT. 21ST IN LETTER OF

LIEUT. PHILLIPS OCT. 26TH.

"CAMP NEAR THE MOUTH OF THE  
ANTIETAM, Oct. 26, 1862.

On Tuesday morning agreeably to orders from General Griffin, commanding Division, General Morell being absent, we marched at 8 o'clock. We returned back to the centre of Sharpsburg and then turned to the right. At 9 we crossed the Antietam, near the mouth, on a stone bridge, and turned to the left. Just above the bridge there is a dam across the Antietam, making quite an extensive mill pond. Close by, on the left bank, are the ruins of the Antietam Iron Works. Some 8 or 10 houses are scattered round in the vicinity. Proceeding a short distance along the creek we found Captain Diedrichs' Battery on top of a hill on the right. I waited till he had hauled his guns down, and then put mine in their place, and pitched my camp. . . . The roads have so far been excellent, but let the mud once prevail, and then farewell to all hopes of an 'onward movement.' There are no signs of moving round here, everything is very quiet and has been so for the last month."

The same date account of Oct. 23d &c.: "Thursday afternoon, Capt. (Elijah D.) Taft of the 5th N. Y. Battery, arrived with four 20 pdr. Parrotts, which he placed on the hill with mine. On Friday forenoon we were inspected by



Lieut. Col. Webb, and after inspection I moved my guns farther down river, where I had a better command of the ford."

---

### LETTER OF SERG'T. PEACOCK.

"CAMP NEAR ANTIETAM, MD.

Oct. 23, '62.

We are on top of Antietam Hill, almost a mountain, our Guns in position all ready for action. The hill commands the Ford at this point of the river. We were up all last night by our Guns, but the Rebs gave up the attempt they made to cross. The weather is very cool up here, particularly when we have no regular tents to sleep under. There are only a few shanties and one large Iron Works in this place, and but few traces of the late battle to be seen. We are so short of men that it keeps us at work all the time running the machine. I have made up my mind to stop the remainder of my three years, for the War will not end sooner than that time."

---

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 23, 1862. Routed out with the 4th Detachment at 1 o'clock this morning to man the guns. Each Detachment stood guard an hour in turn through the night. Indications of the approach of the enemy caused the alarm. All quiet through the night. Oct. 24th. . . . Cannoneers removed their quarters nearer the guns in the p. m. Detailed for guard 2d Relief p. m."

Phillips' Letter of Oct. 26 continued: "Taft's guns are placed on a very high hill commanding a view for miles. The sides of the hill are as steep as the roof of a house. My tent is placed on a sort of terrace which runs round the hill, while Captain Taft had to dig out a place for his. My guns



are in a little hollow between two hills. In front of them the ground slopes gently for 100 yards, then tumbles into a stone quarry, and then comes a level meadow to the river. . . . No enemy in sight, not even any picket firing. One of the Batteries of the Divison has been firing a few shots this afternoon, but after looking on, I have come to the conclusion that they were firing at the other side of the river and succeeded in hitting it."

---

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 26, 1862. Sunday. No inspection today and guard mounting and roll call omitted this p. m. Orders to cook two days' rations late p. m. On fatigue duty about an hour bringing water, and hanging the baggage-wagon in the evening. Thoroughly drenched with rain."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR THE MOUTH OF THE ANTIETAM,  
Oct. 26, 1862.

Altogether the situation is a very pleasant one, and I am not sorry for the change. We have got a good oven, and have our baked beans regularly. As cold weather is coming on we have been trying various contrivances for warming up, but cannot get rid entirely of the smoke. At present we have a fireplace resembling very much a hole in the ground, from which the smoke is conducted by an underground railroad to a chimney outside. The chimney being as yet in an unfinished state, it does not draw to complete satisfaction but tomorrow we shall raise the chimney a few feet, when we expect the apparatus to be entirely successful."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 26, 1862, night cold and rainy and the tent leaky. Oct. 27th. Pleasant about 11 o'clock a. m. No drill today. Built a fireplace for my tent this p. m. Works to a charm. Oct. 29: Usual drill a. m. and a drill hitched up p. m. The 5th Detachment upset their caisson





while drilling, and practised dismounting the spare wheel. Righted the caisson and came to camp."

Phillips' Diary has it "At section drill the side of the caisson was broken and middle rails."

### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR ANTIETAM  
IRON WORKS, Oct. 29, 1862.

Our stove has at last been completed to our satisfaction. I deployed the contrabands on it and built a chimney 7 or 8 feet high, and it now draws hugely: in fact I do not think the contrabands appreciate it as much as we do, considering the amount of wood it consumes. The men are all pretty well supplied with fireplaces and chimneys of unique if not elegant pattern; chimneys of stones, bricks, mud, and iron pipes, one of them finished off with the bellows nozzle from the blast furnace near by; stoves of mud and sheet iron; stoves above ground and stoves below ground; stoves within doors, and stoves without doors; stoves that heat and stoves that don't; stoves that smoke and stoves that don't; and in short every variety of stoves. . . . Thinking that things looked like a permanent stay, I have had a chair made of a different pattern from the famous chair of Yorktown (see p. 228) but about as comfortable. The frame is of chestnut, the bottom and back of grain bags, and the whole arrangement is very luxurious. I have only one fault to find. When I put it in my tent there is no room for anything else. In the middle of the day it is quite warm and comfortable out of doors, but evenings I prefer to sit inside. Night before last it was quite cold, the water freezing in our wash bowls. We always have our tent pretty warm when we turn in, but it gets quite cold before morning. However, I take advantage of my position, and instead of turning out at reveille I lie abed till the contrabands have got the fire



going. The canal is now in operation to this point and we are in hopes of getting some hay for our horses, at present they have it about a third of the time. Artillery horses have a pretty hard time of it these cold nights. They have to stand out doors without any shelter, have a scant supply of food, and when on the march a large supply of work. They thin out under the treatment amazingly.

I hear that General Burnside has crossed the river below. This afternoon I thought I would have a drill, instead of keeping my guns idly staring at the opposite bank, and the exercises were varied by capsizing a caisson. They were on a side hill when the whole concern, horses and all, went over. The wheel driver executed some airy manœuvres not laid down in the book, but got off without any serious damage. The caisson was somewhat broken but will be repaired by morning. . . . Brig. Gen'l. Butterfield, it is said, has been appointed to the command of a Division under Burnside, and his Brigade is now commanded by Col. Stockton of the 16th Michigan."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 30, 1862. The 2d Mass. Regiment with Gordon's Brigade, Gen. Banks's Corps, bivouacked near our camp last night, having marched from Maryland Heights. Met H. Longfellow of the 2d Mass. Regt. Usual drill on piece a. m. Hitched up and drilled about 15 minutes. Indications of leaving here tomorrow. A liberal ration of potatoes for dinner today. Detailed for guard p. m."

## MARTIN'S ORDER.

CAMP NEAR HARPER'S FERRY, VA.

Oct. 30, 1862

LIEUT. C. A. PHILLIPS,  
Com'd'g 5th Mass. Battery.  
Lieut.

You will please march at 6 o'clock tomorrow morning and join the Division, which is now in camp near Harper's Ferry. I neglected to notify you of the march this evening, as I was informed



that you would be notified. The bearer of this will remain, and come with you as a guide.

Very Respectfully,

Your obt. serv't,

A. P. MARTIN, *Capt.*  
Com'd'g Div. Artillery.

On the 30th of October the Fifth Corps commenced its march from Sharpsburg to Harper's Ferry where it arrived on the 31st, and found there the supplies which were needed to render the campaign effective that McClellan had planned to intercept Lee. The entire Army crossed the Potomac at points convenient for the several Corps. McClellan sought by moving South and occupying the Gaps of the Blue Ridge to force Lee to fight him where he chose to give battle.

Scott's Notes: "October 31st the Army moved to Harper's Ferry and crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah Rivers and camped on Loudon Heights, Va."

Phillips' Diary: "Friday Oct. 31, 1862. The Division marched last night, General Griffin in command, General Morell having been relieved. Somehow no orders were sent to me. This morning received orders to join them. Started at 6 a. m. and after trying the shore road concluded to go round by Burkittsville to Berlin. Passed Brooks' Division, Franklin's Corps, and camped near Berlin. Sat. Nov. 1st. Marched to Harper's Ferry, crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah, and joined the Division about 4 miles from the river."

Chase's Diary: "Oct. 31, 1862. On guard last night 3d Relief. Drivers harnessed up about 9 o'clock last night, and awaited orders till 11 p. m., when they unharnessed and remained in camp all night. Reveille at 5 o'clock this morning. Hitched up and broke camp and marched about 6 o'clock a. m. Marched about a mile towards Harper's Ferry, then countermarched, halted, and watered the horses. The road ahead blocked up by baggage wagons. A bountiful breakfast of baked beans this morning. Delightful



morning. Battery took another road and continued the march over the mountains. Marched through Burkittsville and Petersboro' and camped about a mile from the latter. The 5th New York marched ahead of us all day. Saw large numbers of troops moving today. Camped opposite Maryland Heights and Harper's Ferry. Very pleasant march and the weather delightful."

#### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"Snickers Gap, Nov. 3, 1862. . . . Yesterday marched to this place and camped. Have not seen the rebels yet. Porter's Corps is all here. Breakfasted this morning on boiled goose and beefsteak.

#### REVIEW OF THE WEEK.

Nov. 4, 1862. Last Friday afternoon we received orders to be ready to march at short notice. I made all my preparations and waited. About 9 o'clock in the evening I found that Stockton's Brigade had left, and also that the rest of the Division was on the march down the river road. I sent Lull down to make observations, and he reported that the rear guard had just passed, going down to Harper's Ferry. So I went to bed. About midnight an orderly came back from Captain Martin, (see p. 475) stating they were in camp  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from Harper's Ferry, and ordering me to rejoin them in the morning. It seems General Morell had been relieved of his command and in the confusion they had forgotten to send me my orders. So the next morning I hitched up and started. About a mile down the road I ran into the tail end of the wagon train of the Division. They had been on the road all night with a prospect of waiting all day. Disgusted at this state of things I turned back and started on the river road. We passed through a





Gap in South Mts. where we found a beautiful prospect. The woods were colored up magnificently, and presented a splendid sight. About noon the road turned into another where we ran into Slocum's Division on the march. We contrived to get in ahead of their wagon train and pushed on. They soon stopped for dinner, and we passed them and kept on for Berlin, where I understood the Division had been ordered. We crossed another range of hills, and passed through Burkittsville at the foot. Here we made a short halt to allow the column to close up. The village was full of wounded soldiers. About 4 p. m. we passed through Petersville and camped about a mile from Berlin. I have learnt that the Division had crossed at Harper's Ferry. Sunday morning I struck across country for Harper's Ferry. Within a short distance of this place I ran into a wagon train which delayed us for some time. After a while we got by, crossed the Potomac and Shenandoah on pontoon bridges, passed around the base of Loudon Heights, and gradually getting up hill, pushed for the interior. About 4 miles from Harper's Ferry I found the Division and went into camp alongside Waterman. Rec'd an order from Gen. Butterfield assuming command of the Division. The next morning we marched in the following order:—

1st Sykes's Div'n. 2d Humphreys' Div'n. 3d Butterfield's Div'n. 4th Sykes's wagons. 5th Humphreys' wagons. 6th Butterfield's wagons. 7th Rear Guard, 2d Maine and Lieut. Scott's Section.

The Division in this order:—

1st Third Brigade. 2d Waterman's Battery. 3d First Brigade. 4th Martin's Battery. 5th U. S. Sharpshooters. 6th Phillips' Battery. 7th 2d Brigade. 8th Hazlett's Battery.

We marched off at a smart rate keeping the Blue Ridge on our right. By dusk we had made about 15 miles and



camped near Snicker's Gap. The country is very good for foraging, and most of the men have had plenty of goose, mutton, pork and chicken. Last night we got orders to have three days' rations in our haversacks, but have not moved yet. Sykes is up in the Gap, and yesterday Pleasanton drove the Rebs over the Shenandoah. A little cannonading, but nothing important."

#### NOTES OF LIEUT. SCOTT.

##### FROM HARPER'S FERRY TO WHITE PLAINS.

"On the 2d of November the 2d Maine Regt. acting as rear guard with my section of the 5th Battery, I had an all night's march to Snicker's Gap of the Blue Ridge Mountains. The night was fearfully cold, and we moved rapidly. Nothing occurred on our march from Snicker's Gap to White Plains, where we camped for the night in a raging snow storm. During the day the Battery halted in front of a fine country residence. The men ransacked the place. They found sweet potatoes covered up in the garden, overturned a bee-hive, and we saw the men with honey from the honey-comb running down their faces regardless of the stinging bees. A pig was chased and caught, but had to be given up. Rights must be respected. It was amusing to say the least."

#### THE BEES' BUSY DAY.

##### NOTES OF SERGT. WM. H. BAXTER.

Oct. 15, 1900.

"Time and place have passed from memory, but the scene is vivid before me.—A deserted farm house of the Old Virginia type, pleasantly situated on a knoll, rising gradually from the road, and surrounded by stately trees, with old



fashioned flowers growing along the path up to the front door.

The writer was not much interested in the surroundings, nor at that time much interested in the sentiment of the flowers. They looked pretty; still the attraction was at the rear of the house, where about 50 of the boys were assembled, all talking at once, trying to devise a plan to get the honey from 9 bee hives, which were ranged in a row across the front of the vegetable garden.

As the writer swung around the corner of the house, a shout went up,—‘Here comes Baxter!’

After viewing the situation a moment, we took two clothes poles, fastening one across the end of the other at right angles, giving us a battering ram covering, say, four of the hives. It was arranged that the writer should push the hives over, while the boys should jump in and get the honey, but at the moment of applying the battering ram, it occurred to the writer ‘where do I come in?’ so instead of pushing the hives over and waiting for some one to get the honey, I just pushed and jumped at the same time, landing squarely in the mess, and it did not take many seconds to fill my haversack with honey, bees, dirt, and beeswax. But, suffering humanity! I reached the conclusion as I crawled out of the mob, that what bees I did not sweep into my haversack with the honey, wax and dirt, had crawled into my hair and down my neck, and at every prod of a stinger I could see stars and black spots on the sun, and I ran up to Lieut. Spear, who came riding into the yard at that moment. He whacked me on the head, back, and everywhere I designated that a bee was getting his work in. It was laughable, his following me around that yard, giving me a whack here and there, but I couldn’t stand still, the bees were too busy. Upon getting shed of the bees and greasing the joints with my pork ration, we started along for the Battery, but on approaching the gate at the head of the lane in rear of



the house, there was old General Griffin, sitting stolidly on his horse, with the Provost Marshal beside him scooping in as they passed through the gate all who had taken part in the raid on the potato mines and bee hives. The writer put on a sweet Sunday school face and like 'Mary's little lamb' passed through in safety. That evening in camp we had a feast. Fried pork spread over with a mixture of honey and dirt, with a bee or two for fresh meat, and a little beeswax to make a good chew to the whole, was a feast fit for anybody when one could not get any better, and fully repaid all the suffering caused by meddling with the business end of those Virginia bees."

---

Chase notes in his Diary Nov. 8, 1862, on the march they passed some of General Sigel's troops in camp. On the 9th Serg't. Morgridge and other convalescents returned to the Battery.

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

Nov. 9, 1862.

Thursday morning Nov. 6th we left Snicker's Gap. In the order for marching it said no communication hereafter with Harper's Ferry. The Rebels followed our rear guard occupying the Gap after we left it. In the afternoon we passed through Middleburg and saw plenty of Secesh uniforms, wounded and paroled, about the streets. That night we camped in the fields. The weather was quite cold and raw. The next morning we marched a few miles, to Rectorville or White Plains, arriving about 9 o'clock. Before our tents were pitched it commenced to snow and continued through the day. It was quite warm and comfortable. The next morning we marched to New Baltimore. This





morning we started at six and arrived here at about 8. We have not yet seen any Rebels."

# THE COMMAND OF THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

HEAD QUARTERS  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
WARRENTON, VA. NOV. 9. 1862.

## General Orders

No. 1.

### Extracts.

In accordance with General Orders No. 182, issued by the President of the United States, I hereby assume command of the Army of the Potomac. . . . With diffidence for myself, but with a proud confidence in the unswervable loyalty and determination of the gallant Army now intrusted to my care. I accept its control with the steadfast assurance that the just cause must prevail.

A. E. BURNSIDE  
*Major General Commanding.*

Corporal Shackley in his Notes of the 9th observed that the removal of General McClellan "caused much dissatisfaction in men of Democratic sympathies."

(To be read to the Company before the Review.)

## MCCLELLAN'S FAREWELL TO THE ARMY OF THE POTOMAC.

HEAD QUARTERS,  
ARMY OF THE POTOMAC,  
CAMP NEAR RECTORTOWN, VA.

Nov. 7, 1862.

## Officers and Soldiers

of the Army of the Potomac:

An Order of the President devolves upon Major General Burnside the command of this Army.

In parting from you, I cannot express the love and gratitude I bear to you. As an army you have grown up under my care. In you I have never found doubt or coldness. The battles you have fought under my command will proudly live in our nation's history. The glory you have achieved, our mutual perils and fatigues the graves of our comrades fallen in battle, and by disease, the broken forms of those whom wounds and sickness have disabled,—the strongest associations which



can exist among men,—unite us still by an indissoluble tie. We shall ever be comrades in supporting the Constitution of our Country, and the nationality of its people.

GEO. B. McCLELLAN,  
*Maj. Gen'l. U. S. A.*

---

Chase's Diary: "Nov. 10, 1862. Camp in the direction of Warrenton. Reveille at half past 5 o'clock this morning. Delightful morning. General McClellan's farewell address to the Army read to us in line this morning. Company called in line with the other troops to give our old General a parting cheer as he passed us. McClellan with other generals passed us about 9 o'clock. Martin's Battery fired a salute as they approached. General Burnside takes command of the Army, and his address to the troops was read to us in line this p. m."

---

Nov. 11, 1862, under the cartel a large number of prisoners were exchanged, officers and privates: of the privates the balance due the United States was 6000.

Chase's Letter: "Camp near Warrenton, Va., Nov. 11, 1862: Ere this reaches you, you will know that General McClellan has been called from the field, and that General Burnside now has command of the Army. We regret to lose the leader who has taken us into so much danger and taken us out safely, but if he is to take new and increased responsibilities upon himself, then we are satisfied. McClellan has the confidence of the whole Army, and I think, with few exceptions, the love of the people. He has been kicked about more than any other man in the Army, yet he has always been ready to extricate the Army from the traps and snarls in which the ambitious generals have placed it. He has cleaned up all their bad work, and the Army is again in the field with solid ranks.

Our march here was a very pleasant one. We came via Harper's Ferry, a place I have always wanted to see, not on



account of its being the scene of John Brown's short campaign, but the sublimity of its natural scenery. It is an old proverb, 'See Naples, then die,' but I would say, see Harper's Ferry, then be willing to die, and if you can live yet longer then all the better. It is worth a year's service to visit that place. We halted there about two hours, which gave me a fine chance to look around. There seems to be no regularity about the mails of late, and when a mail leaves we generally have about half an hour's notice. . . . Please ask Mrs. T. if she will send me a darning-needle next letter, as I am greatly in need of one."

---

"I parted from my brave old corps; 'twere matter, lad, for tears."

JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY.—*Uncle Ned's Tale.*

#### PORTER'S FAREWELL ORDER.

HEAD QUARTERS

5TH ARMY CORPS.

CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

NOV. 12, 1862.

#### General Orders

No. 25.

By direction of the President of the United States, Major General Hooker has been assigned to the command of this Corps.

It has been my privilege to lead the little band of regulars, the permanent Army of the United States, inheriting the names, the records, and the traditions of regiments that have borne the banner of our country through all its wars.

It has been my privilege to lead noble regiments of volunteers, coming from different states, but becoming equally national through having the same purpose, the same dangers, and the same suffering.

Having shared their perils and privations in the camp, in the bivouac, on the march, and in half a score of bloody fields: to the officers and men of both classes I address myself.

The confidence, which if I may judge by your acts, you have reposed in me, it has been my earnest effort to meet and requite. The personal regard which I am proud to feel that you bear towards me, is reciprocated by an ardent affection and a deep respect, which time cannot efface. The personal good fortune of each of you will be always a matter of heartfelt interest to me. The professional successes you will attain will be doubly grateful to me, inasmuch as they will be identified with the success of our cause.



Among the most gratifying of my thoughts of you will be the assurance that your subordination and loyalty will remain in the future as in the past, firm and steadfast to our country and its authorities.

F. J. PORTER,  
*Major General.*

General Fitz John Porter took leave of the Fifth Corps at 4 p. m. and the same evening left for Washington.

At each leavetaking Martin's 3d Mass. Battery fired the national salute of 13 guns, a salute of honor for the retiring commander, as he rode past.

Chase's Diary: "Nov. 11, 1862. Eight hard crackers for a day's ration today.

Nov. 12. In camp all day. Battery called in line to bid farewell to Major General Fitz John Porter this p. m. . . . General Porter appeared to be much affected, and his farewell address was read to us by Captain Martin.

Weather mild and cloudy. Beef steak for dinner!! No meat served out to us except salt pork for the last ten days, until today. Short rations of bread again today. Bought bread for 5 cts. per lb. from commissary. Entered upon my arduous and responsible duties as 2d Corporal of the 2d Detachment this p. m. Nov. 13: Posted guard last night, last half. Morning cold and windy. Drilled on manual of the piece."

#### LETTER OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP NEAR WARRENTON, VA.

Nov. 13, 1862.

The events of the last few days have made quite an alteration in the appearance of things. On Monday we were astonished to hear that General McClellan had been relieved and General Burnside placed in command. At 9 o'clock in the forenoon Porter's Corps was drawn up on the eastern side of the Warrenton and Gainesville turnpike and Sumner's Corps on the other side, facing inward. Soon





after, General McClellan rode through, accompanied by General Burnside, General Porter and brigadiers and officers of lower grade innumerable. A major general's salute was fired, everybody cheered, and then we all went home. At 11 o'clock General McClellan held a levee at General Porter's Hd. Qrs., where the customary handshaking took place, and then he left.

So ended the second removal of General McClellan. Of course there is a diversity of opinion and feeling on the subject. . . . The siege of Yorktown I pronounced a failure at the time. After the battle of Williamsburg I thought, and still think, that McClellan could have followed the enemy into Richmond. . . . The Army was never in better health or condition than while we were lying idle on the Potomac; the roads were never better. Why we did not move I cannot say. . . . Following close, came the removal of General Porter. Everybody knew that he must follow General McClellan, but nobody knew exactly how it would be brought about. General Porter re-enacted General McClellan's departure in his own: the Corps was all drawn up, salute fired, and cheers given. As he passed the batteries he shook hands with Captain Martin and bade him good bye. General Hooker has assumed command. We now belong to Butterfield's Division, Hooker's 5th Army Corps."

GENERAL ORDER RESPECTING THE OBSERVANCE OF  
THE SABBATH DAY IN THE ARMY  
AND NAVY.

EXECUTIVE MANSION,

WASHINGTON, November 15, 1862.

The President, Commander-in-Chief of the Army and Navy, desires and enjoins the orderly observance of the Sabbath, by the officers and men in the military and naval service. The importance for man and beast of the prescribed weekly rest, the sacred rights of Christian soldiers and sailors, a becoming deference to the best sentiment of a Christian people, and a due regard for the Divine will, demand that Sunday labor in the Army and Navy be reduced to the measure of strict necessity.



The discipline and character of the national forces should not suffer, nor the cause they defend be imperilled, by the profanation of the day or name of the Most High.

"At this time of public distress"—adopting the words of Washington in 1776—"men may find enough to do in the service of God and their country without abandoning themselves to vice and immorality." The first General Order issued by the Father of his Country after the Declaration of Independence, indicates the spirit in which our institutions were founded, and should ever be defended: "*The General hopes and trusts that every officer and man will endeavor to live and act as becomes a Christian soldier defending the dearest rights and liberties of his country.*"

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

### FROM LETTERS OF LIEUT. PHILLIPS.

"CAMP IN THE FIELDS,  
Nov. 20, 1862.

Last Saturday General Hooker reviewed the Division. After it was through he had a reception at General Butterfield's Hd. Qrs. While Butterfield was in command of the Division he introduced a change in marching orders. He published a circular containing six forms for marching as follows:—"

#### COPIED FROM PHILLIPS' DIARY.

##### Form 1.

1st	First Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	1st U. S. S. S. Battery.	
5th	Ambulances.	

##### Form 2.

1st	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	1st U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
4th	1st Brigade Battery.	
5th	Ambulances.	



## Form 3.

1st	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
2d	First U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
3d	First Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	Second Brigade Battery.....	
5th	Ambulances.....	

---

## Form 4.

1st	1st U. S. S. S. Battery .....	10 minutes
2d	1st Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
3d	Second Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
4th	Third Brigade Battery.....	25 minutes
5th	Ambulances.....	

---

## Form 5.

1st	First Brigade .....	20 minutes
2d	1st U. S. S. S. ....	5 minutes
3d	All the Batteries .....	20 minutes
4th	Second Brigade .....	20 minutes
5th	Third Brigade .....	20 minutes
6th	Ambulances.....	

---

## Form 6.

1st	All the Batteries .....	20 minutes
2d	Third Brigade .....	20 minutes
3d	Second Brigade .....	20 minutes
4th	First Brigade .....	20 minutes
5th	1st U. S. S. S. ....	20 minutes
6th	Ambulances.....	

---

## FROM LIEUT. PHILLIPS' LETTER.

"So now it is only necessary to send an order 'The Division will march tomorrow at 6 a. m. in Form 1.' Then the First Brigade marches at 6 followed by a Battery, the Second Brigade at 6.25, Battery following. Third Brigade and a Battery at 6.50. Sharp Shooters at 7.15 &c &c. Captain Martin designates the batteries to follow the Brigades. Monday we marched at 6 in 'Form 1,' following the Sharp Shooters, and camped about four miles beyond Warrenton Junction, having turned off the railroad to the left. Tuesday we marched in 'Form 2,' following the Second Brigade, and yesterday we marched in 'Form 3' follow-

AE 30















